

Between the Testaments

Over 400 years separate the Old and New Testaments. The last book of the Old Testament is that of the prophet Malachi who lived about 440 BC.

In Malachi's day which was about a century after the exiles began returning from Babylonia, the Jews were settled in and around Jerusalem. They were governed by a high priest, an inherited Levite office, under the benign rule of the Persian empire.

After a further 100 years had passed, in 332 BC, Alexander the Great, a young Greek warrior-prince conquered the Persian empire and created the short lived Greek (or Hellenistic) empire. Nine years later he died at the age of 32 and his empire was divided into four large regions or kingdoms, Northern, Southern, Eastern, and Western, each ruled over by one of his four generals. Judea was part of the Northern kingdom also known as Syria and was ruled over by Alexander's former general Seleucus, now King Seleucus.

King Seleucus and his successors over the next 300 years strongly promoted Greek culture and idol worship throughout the Northern (Syrian) kingdom. This policy was remarkably successful, except among the Jews who had learnt their lesson regarding idolatry. Most resisted the policy and clung tightly to their own Jewish customs and worshipped Jehovah, especially the priests.

Things came to a head in 168 BC under the infamous rule of the Syrian king Antiochus IV who attempted to force Judea to give up her Jewish religion and submit to Greek idolatry, ie to worship the god Zeus.

Antiochus IV sent an army to plunder the Jerusalem Temple and to establish a garrison in the city. This army destroyed Jewish scriptures, forbade circumcision, forced the Jews to eat pork and built a pagan altar to the Greek god Zeus over the top of the Lord's altar and sacrificed a pig on it. Any Jew who resisted was put to death and many died.

Finally in desperation, an aged Jewish priest named Mattathias tore down a Greek altar in a small town of Judea and killed a fellow Jew who was encouraging other Jews to submit and adopt the Greek method of worship. Mattathias also killed one of the Syrian king's messengers then fled into the hills, taking with him his five sons.

Mattathias died soon afterward, but under the inspired leadership of his warrior son Judas, nick-named Maccabee ('the hammer') and two other surviving sons, plus the help of thousands of faithful Jews who gathered to them, they commenced guerrilla warfare against Syrian rule, and so began the famous Maccabean revolt.

Four years later, after much bloodshed, the Jews regained control of Jerusalem and re-consecrated the Temple. Twenty-two years later in 142 BC, after many battles Judea eventually gained their independence from Syrian rule.

Judas Maccabee and his two brothers, each in turn ruled Judea as governing high priests, expanding Jewish territory until eventually all of historic Israel (as in Solomon's day) was again under their control.^{F*}

Things deteriorated after the death of these three brothers and in 67 BC a Jewish monarchy was again set up. But it did not last long, the mighty Roman empire was on the rise and all the land of Israel fell to Rome four years later in 63 BC.

* This whole eventful period is covered by what are known as the apocryphal (meaning of doubtful authenticity) books 1st and 2nd Maccabees which are included in some Bibles, mostly Catholic translations. These two interesting books are independent accounts of the same events. However because of apparent exaggerations they are not regarded as inspired scripture by modern Bible scholars and are therefore excluded from most Protestant translations.

After some years of intrigue involving the Egyptian queen Cleopatra and the Roman emperor Julius Caesar, the skillful but ruthless Herod the Great (an Edomite not a Jew) was crowned vassal-king of Israel by Rome.

Herod the Great reigned as king for 37 years, erecting many magnificent buildings throughout Israel including a greatly enlarged Temple at Jerusalem. Unfortunately his mental health deteriorated in later years, leading to his tragic order to kill all the baby boys in the Bethlehem region at the time of the birth of Jesus in a vain attempt to destroy the long awaited Messiah-King.

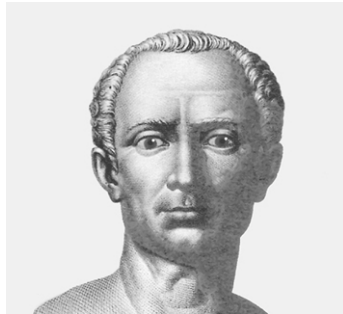
Herod died in 1 AD soon after the birth of Jesus Christ.^{F*} The land of Israel was then divided among Herod's three sons – Archelaus, Herod and Phillip.

Archelaus ruled over Judea in the south, Herod over Galilee in the north and Phillip over the region east of the Jordan river.

Like their father, all three kings were answerable to the Roman emperor who was now Caesar Augustus. Thus the scene is set for the notable events of the life of Jesus Christ, or more correctly Jesus the Christ, Christ being the Greek word for Messiah meaning '*the Anointed One*'.



Cleopatra queen of Egypt and lover of Julius Caesar.



Julius Caesar 102-44 BC, the most prominent of the Roman emperors.

* The best modern historical and astronomical research places the birth of Jesus in early April, 1 BC (there is no 0 BC). The account by Jewish historian Josephus of King Herod dying in 4 BC was evidently an error of calculation based on a misunderstanding of the historic documents he used as a resource.

MATTHEW-MARK-LUKE

The three gospels (gospel means 'good news') of Matthew, Mark and Luke, which are all similar, have been combined into one narrative in this Condensed Bible. However the gospel of John which is quite different has been left separate. Each of the four gospels gives an account of the life of Jesus Christ from a different man's viewpoint.

Mark's short account is widely believed to have been the first of the three Greek gospels written, but early traditions maintain that Matthew was the first to write a short gospel, in Aramaic (a sister language of Hebrew and the spoken language that Jesus used) as early as six years after the resurrection of Jesus. This gospel was said to contain much dialogue of Jesus and that many years later it was translated by an unknown writer into the Greek version we have today. At the same time it was enlarged by including many of the events from Mark's gospel.

If this tradition is correct, Mark borrowed from Matthew's original Aramaic version and used it as a resource for his own gospel, especially the dialogue of Jesus. Luke and the later translator of Matthew's Aramaic gospel into Greek in turn appear to have taken material from Mark and other sources. This was an acceptable custom of their day and also during Old Testament times. Today an author would feel obliged to completely rewrite any previously published material.

Matthew's intended readership is clearly Jewish. His main emphasis is on proving from the Old Testament which he quotes often, that Jesus was the promised Messiah (or Christ). His gospel includes many of the words Jesus spoke whereas Mark and Luke dwell more on what Jesus did.

Mark's intended readership appears to have been the Gentiles (non-Jews) as he takes time to explain Jewish customs. His account, though the shortest of all the gospels is full of action and contains vivid details that could only have come from an eye witness, ie *"Jesus was asleep on a cushion in the stern."* According to tradition his gospel was written ten years after the resurrection, the apostle Peter being his main source.

Luke's elegant and descriptive gospel, a companion book to Acts and according to tradition, written 24 years after the resurrection is addressed to Theophilus, a Greek or Roman individual of some importance. In the traditional Bible account Luke introduces his gospel with these words, *"Since many have set down an account of the events that have occurred among us, as they were handed on to us by those who were eyewitnesses from the beginning, I too have decided, having investigated everything carefully from the very first, to write an orderly account for you most excellent Theophilus, so that you may know the truth concerning the things about which you have been taught."*

Luke then proceeds to do exactly that, and the result is a literary masterpiece. Luke also appears to have been a very compassionate man, he exalts women in his writings and softens or omits the faults of the apostles that are found in the other gospels. He also emphasises the importance of prayer and of taking care of the poor.

AUTHOR

Matthew was primarily written by the apostle Matthew, a former tax collector.

Mark was written by John Mark, a close friend of the apostle Peter whom he used as a resource.

Luke was written by Luke, a Syrian of Antioch, a physician and missionary companion of Paul.

Also, demons came out of many people, shouting, "You are the Son of God!"
But Jesus rebuked them and forbade them to speak for they knew
he was the Christ. Matthew-Mark-Luke 5:24.

“If someone strikes you on the right cheek, turn to him the other also.”

Matthew-Mark-Luke 8:3.

“Come unto me all you who are weary and heavy laden, and I will give you rest.” Matthew-Mark-Luke 12:19.

CONTENTS

Chapter

Parents of John the Baptist	1	Jesus fasts for forty days	4
Angel appears to Zechariah in the Temple	1	Jesus tempted with fleshly desire	4
Zechariah's wife Elizabeth to bear him a son	1	Jesus tempted to proudly test God	4
Son to be named John	1	Jesus tempted with worldly power and wealth	4
John to avoid alcoholic drink	1	Angels visit Jesus	4
John to prepare Israel for coming of the Lord	1	Herod imprisons John the Baptist	5
Zechariah struck dumb for disbelieving the angel	1	Herod's wife Herodias wants John killed	5
Zechariah's wife Elizabeth conceives	1	Jesus returns to Galilee	5
Angel Gabriel sent to Mary a virgin in Nazareth	1	Jesus teaches in his home town synagogue	5
Mary to give birth to a son and name him Jesus	1	No prophet accepted in his home town	5
Jesus to reign as king over Israel forever	1	Elijah and Elisha of old sent to non-Israelites	5
Jesus to be conceived by the power of God	1	Men of Nazareth become enraged at Jesus	5
Nothing impossible with God	1	Try to push him over a cliff	5
Mary goes to visit Elizabeth	1	Jesus returns to Capernaum	5
Elizabeth and Mary prophesy	1	Demons recognise Jesus as the Holy One of God	5
Elizabeth's son is born	1	Jesus orders demons out of the man	5
The naming of John	1	People bring many sick and possessed people	5
Zechariah is able to speak again	1	Jesus heals them all	5
Zechariah prophesies about John and the Christ	1	Jesus teaches from Peter's fishing boat	5
Mary is found to be with child	2	Jesus tells Peter and Andrew to let down their nets	5
Joseph decides to divorce Mary	2	They catch so many fish their net begins to break	5
Angel instructs Joseph to take Mary as his wife	2	Peter humbles himself before Jesus	5
Joseph and Mary travel to Bethlehem	2	Jesus calls Peter to be a fisher of men	5
Jesus born in a stable at Bethlehem	2	Jesus also calls Andrew, James and John	5
Angel appears to shepherds in a nearby field	2	Jesus asked to heal a Roman centurion's servant	6
Great multitude of angels appear, praising God	2	Centurion asks Jesus to just say the word	6
Shepherds go into Bethlehem to find the child	2	Jesus marvels at the Roman centurion's faith	6
Jesus circumcised and named on eighth day	2	Many non-Israelites will enter the kingdom of God	6
Jesus redeemed at Temple in Jerusalem	2	The centurion's servant is healed	6
Simeon proclaims Jesus the long awaited Christ	2	Great crowds come to hear and be healed by Jesus	6
Simeon prophesies regarding Jesus and Mary	2	Jesus often withdrew to pray	6
Anna the prophetess also testifies of Jesus	2	Paralysed man lowered through the roof	6
Joseph and Mary return to Nazareth	2	Jesus forgives sins of the paralysed man	6
Wise men of the east come searching	3	Jesus thought guilty of blasphemy	6
Herod is disturbed and inquirers regarding the Christ	3	Jesus commands the paralysed man to walk home	6
Herod instructs the wise men to report back to him	3	Proof that Jesus can forgive sins	6
A star leads the wise men to Jesus	3	Matthew the tax collector called to be a disciple	6
Wise men worship Jesus and give gifts	3	Matthew holds a feast for Jesus and his disciples	6
Wise men warned not to return to Herod	3	Pharisees murmur at Jesus eating with sinners	6
Angel warns Joseph to flee to Egypt	3	Jesus came to call sinners to repentance	6
Herod orders all infant boys in Bethlehem area killed	3	Jesus is asked why his disciples do not fast	6
Herod dies and Joseph returns to Nazareth	3	Days of fasting will come	6
Jesus grows strong and is filled with wisdom	3	New wineskins needed for new wine	6
Jesus stays behind in Jerusalem after Passover	3	Jesus prays all night on a mountain	7
Jesus now twelve years old	3	Jesus chooses his twelve apostles	7
Joseph and Mary find Jesus in a Temple courtyard	3	Names of the Twelve	7
Jesus conversing with teachers of the Law	3	Jesus heals on the mountain	7
Jesus returns to Nazareth with his parents	3	Jesus begins his 'sermon on the mount'	7
John the Baptist begins his ministry	4	Love and pray for your enemies	7
John's clothes and food	4	Do not demand back what is taken from you	7
Many confess their sins and are baptised	4	The golden rule	7
John rebukes the Pharisees and Sadducees	4	Even sinners love those who love them	7
John teaches the people how to live righteously	4	Act with love and kindness	7
John preparing the way for one more powerful	4	Act without expecting a reward in this life	7
Jesus baptised by John	4	Be merciful and perfect as your Father in heaven	7
Spirit of God descends upon Jesus	4	You are the salt of the earth	7
The Spirit in likeness of a dove	4	Let your light shine before others	7
God the Father acknowledges Jesus as his Son	4	Your eye is the lamp of the body	7

Be not angry with another	7	Jesus goes to heal the daughter of Jairus	10
Reconcile your brother before offering a gift to God	7	A woman touches Jesus and is healed of bleeding ...	10
To look lustfully is adultery	7	Jesus asks who touched him	10
Remarrying after divorce is adultery	7	Woman's faith healed her	10
Unless divorced spouse was unfaithful	7	Jairus told that his daughter is dead	10
Do not swear oaths	8	Mourners laugh at words of Jesus	10
Turn the other cheek	8	Jesus raises daughter of Jairus to life	10
Give double if someone would sue you	8	Jesus heals two blind men	10
Go the extra mile	8	Mute demon driven out	10
Give to one who would beg or borrow from you	8	Jesus has compassion on the crowds	11
Do not do acts of kindness to be seen of others	8	Jesus gives apostles authority to preach and heal ..	11
Give to the needy in secret	8	Apostles to be sent to lost sheep of Israel	11
Pray in secret	8	Apostles to be cared for by the people	11
Do not repeat the same words when praying	8	To shake dust off their feet when not welcomed	11
The Lord's prayer	8	Apostles going out like sheep among wolves	11
Forgive others or your own sins will not be forgiven.....	8	Not a sparrow falls without the will of the Father	11
Ask and you shall receive	8	Jesus to acknowledge faithful before the Father	11
Fast in secret	8	Charitable believers will not lose their reward	11
Do not store up treasures on earth	8	Whoever loves family more is unworthy of Jesus ...	11
You cannot serve both God and wealth	8	Whoever loses his life for Jesus sake will find it	11
Do not worry about food or drink	8	The Twelve sent out on their missions two by two...11	
Do not worry about clothing	8	Jesus visits the town of Nain	11
First seek the kingdom of God	8	Jesus raises a widow's son to life	11
Then all these things will be yours	8	John the Baptist sends two disciples to Jesus	12
Do not worry about tomorrow	8	Jesus sends John's disciples back	12
Judge not others	9	John's disciples to report what they have seen	12
Forgive and you will be forgiven	9	Jesus speaks of John the Baptist	12
First remove the log from your own eye	9	Forceful men will grasp the kingdom of God	12
Then take the speck from another's eye	9	John the Baptist is the Elijah who was to come.....	12
Give generously to receive	9	Both John and Jesus criticised by this generation ..	12
Cast not pearls before swine	9	Jesus denounces three cities	12
Wide is the gate that leads to Death	9	Truth hidden from the self-wise and learned	12
Narrow the way that leads to Eternal Life	9	Truth revealed to the humble	12
Jesus came to fulfil the scriptures	9	Jesus truly knows the Father and can reveal him ...	12
Those who will be least in the kingdom of God	9	Come unto me all you weary and heavy laden.....	12
Those who will be great in the kingdom of God	9	Jesus goes to dine with a Pharisee	12
Your righteousness must exceed that of Pharisees ..	9	Sabbath made for man not man for the Sabbath	13
False prophets known by their fruits	9	Man with a shrivelled hand healed on the Sabbath ..	13
Out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaks ..	9	The Pharisees are incensed and plot to kill Jesus ..	13
Not all known to Lord who do miracles in his name ..	9	Jesus returns to Capernaum	13
Man who built his house upon the rock	9	Great crowds push to touch Jesus	13
Man who built his house upon the sand	9	Jesus unable to eat because of the crowds	13
Golden rule sums up the scriptures	9	Family of Jesus set out to take charge of him	13
Crowds amazed at the authority of Jesus	9	His family think Jesus out of his mind	13
Weeping sinful woman anoints feet of Jesus	9	Jesus said to be possessed by Satan	13
Pharisee critical of Jesus for allowing woman	9	Pharisees ask for a sign from heaven	13
Parable of the forgiving moneylender	9	Only the sign of the prophet Jonah to be given	13
Jesus forgives the woman her sins	9	Men of Nineveh will condemn this generation	13
Jesus heals Peter's mother-in-law of a high fever ..	10	Also the Queen of Sheba	13
Jesus arises while still dark to pray alone	10	How can Satan drive out Satan?.....	13
Jesus must preach the good news to other towns ..	10	Demons are driven out by the Holy Spirit	13
Jesus teaches and heals throughout Galilee	10	Blasphemy against Holy Spirit an eternal sin	13
Great crowds begin to follow Jesus everywhere	10	A tree known by its fruit	13
Jesus heals a leper	10	Every careless word to be accounted for	13
Healed leper spreads news of his healing	10	Final state of this generation worse than at first ..	13
Jesus has to stay mostly in the countryside	10	Blessed are they who obey the word of God	13
Jesus and his disciples try to escape the crowds ..	10	Mother and brothers of Jesus arrive	13
Son of Man has no place to lay his head	10	All who do will of the Father are family to Jesus....	13
Let the spiritually dead bury the dead	10	Jesus again teaches from a boat	14
Anyone who looks back is unfit for the kingdom	10	Parable of the sower	14
Jesus calms the storm	10	Why Jesus spoke in parables	14
Naked and demon possessed man	10	Many prophets longed to see what disciples see	14
Head demon recognises Jesus	10	Meaning of the parable of the sower	14
Jesus permits demons to enter a herd of pigs	10	Parable of the seeds and the grain harvest	14
Pigs drown in the lake	10	Parable of the wheat and the tares	14
Local people fear Jesus and beg him to leave	10	Parable of the mustard seed	14
Jesus sends delivered man home to tell others.....	10	Parable of the yeast and the dough	14
Jesus returns to Capernaum	10	Jesus always used parables	14

MATT-MARK-LUKE

Meaning of parable of wheat and tares	14	Peter will find the coin in a fish's mouth	18
Parable of treasure hidden in a field	14	Apostles argue as to which of them is greatest	18
Parable of the pearl of great price	14	Apostles must humble themselves as little children ...	18
Parable of the catch of all kinds of fish	14	Woe to whoever leads a little child into sin	18
Knowledge of the kingdom like a new treasure	14	Angels of little children behold the Father's face	18
Jesus again visits Nazareth	14	Parable of the lost sheep	18
Brothers of Jesus named	14	Try to reconcile with those who sin against you	18
Few miracles done in Nazareth due to lack of faith	14	Avoid a person who refuses to reconcile	18
Herodias has John the Baptist beheaded	15	Forgive seventy times seven	18
The Twelve return from their missions	15	Parable of the unmerciful servant	18
Jesus desires to take Twelve to a quiet place	15	Whoever is not against apostles is for them	18
A great crowd await their arrival	15	Jesus begins to journey toward Jerusalem	19
First miracle of the loaves and fishes	15	Samaritan village does not welcome him	19
5000 men plus women and children fed	15	James and John propose calling down fire	19
Apostles leave by boat without Jesus	15	Jesus rebukes James and John	19
Jesus dismisses crowd then prays alone	15	Ten lepers healed	19
Jesus walks on the water	15	Only one leper returns to thank Jesus	19
Peter also walks on water	15	Jesus sends seventy disciples out on missions	19
Sick healed at Bethesda by touching Jesus	15	Instructions to the seventy	19
Who is this man Jesus?	16	Jesus continues town by town toward Jerusalem	19
Pharisees critical of disciples of Jesus	16	Jesus asked what one must do to gain Eternal Life ...	19
They do not wash their hands before eating	16	Love God with all your heart	19
Jesus condemns traditions of the Pharisees	16	Love neighbour as yourself	19
What comes out of the mouth defiles	16	Parable of the good Samaritan	19
Pharisees are blind guides	16	The seventy return with great joy	19
Disciples not to be called Rabbi, Father, or Master	16	Jesus watched as Satan was cast out of heaven ...	19
Teaching on defilement explained	16	Jesus full of joy praises the Father	19
Sins that defile	16	Mary and Martha	19
Jesus visits region of Tyre	16	Jesus teaches in the towns around Jerusalem	20
A Greek woman comes to Jesus for help	16	Disciples ask Jesus to teach them to pray	20
Woman's daughter demon-possessed	16	Be persistent in prayer	20
Jesus sent only to the Israelites	16	Ask and you shall receive	20
Jesus commends Greek woman's great faith	16	Parable of the widow and unjust judge	20
Her daughter delivered from the demon	16	Jesus goes to eat at home of a Pharisee	20
Jesus visits the cities east of Lake Galilee	16	Jesus rebukes hypocrisy of the Pharisees	20
Jesus heals on the mountain side	16	Teachers of the Law also rebuked	20
Deaf man with a speech impediment healed	16	Pharisees and teachers of Law oppose Jesus	20
Second miracle of loaves and fishes	16	A great crowd of many thousands gather	21
4000 men plus women and children fed	16	Jesus warns his disciples against hypocrisy	21
Jesus visits Magdala	16	All hidden things will one day be revealed	21
Jesus again asked for a sign from heaven	16	Jesus warns crowd against greed	21
Disciples warned against false teaching	16	Parable of the foolish rich man	21
Hypocrisy of the Pharisees and Sadducees	16	Disciples told to sell their possessions	21
Blind man healed	17	Where your treasure is your heart will be also	21
Jesus goes north to Caesarea Philippi	17	Parable of the dishonest steward	21
Peter acknowledges Jesus is the Christ	17	Worldly people shrewder than those of kingdom	21
Peter given keys to seal on earth and in heaven	17	One honest with little can be trusted with much	21
Disciples not to reveal that Jesus is the Christ	17	Cannot serve both God and money	21
Jesus reveals that he must die at Jerusalem	17	Parable of Lazarus and the rich man	21
After three days he will rise again	17	Parable of the prepared and faithful servants	21
Never Lord says Peter	17	Son of Man to return unexpectedly	21
Jesus rebukes Peter	17	Parable of faithful and unfaithful servant	21
Whoever loses his life for Jesus sake will find it	17	Jesus anguished about his coming crucifixion	21
What does it profit a man to gain the whole world ..	17	Jesus to bring division on earth until he returns	21
Jesus to be ashamed of anyone ashamed of him ..	17	Those killed accidentally not worse sinners	22
Some present will soon see Jesus in his glory	17	Parable of fertilising a barren fig tree	22
Jesus transfigured before Peter, James and John ..	17	Bent over woman healed on Sabbath	22
Moses and Elijah appear	17	Synagogue ruler indignant	22
God the Father speaks from within a cloud	17	Jesus rebukes the synagogue ruler	22
Apostles not yet to reveal what they have seen	17	Jesus asked if only a few will be saved	22
John the Baptist a type of Elijah	17	Many non-Israelites will enter the kingdom	22
Disciples unable to drive out a demon	17	Many Israelites will be thrust out	22
All things can be done for one who believes	17	Jesus dines in house of a prominent Pharisee	22
Jesus drives out the demon	17	Jesus heals a man with dropsy on the Sabbath	22
Disciples ask why they could not drive it out	17	Take the lowest place at a feast	22
Faith can move a mountain	17	Invite the poor to your feasts	22
Prayer and fasting required to cast out that kind ..	17	Parable of the great feast	22
Jesus tells Peter to pay the annual Temple tax	18	Be prepared to give up all to follow Jesus	23

Two parables of counting the cost	23	Do what they teach but not what they do	27
Parable of the lost sheep	23	Hypocrites strongly rebuked	27
Joy in heaven when a sinner repents	23	Pharisee converts become twice as bad as before ...	27
Parable of the lost coin	23	Woe to you blind fools	27
Parable of the prodigal son	23	This generation to suffer for blood of prophets	27
Forgive seven times in one day if necessary	23	The poor widow's offering	27
Faith small as a mustard seed results in miracles ...	23	Jesus prophesies destruction of the Temple	28
Where two apostles agree it will be done for them ..	23	Apostles ask Jesus when this will happen	28
Necessary to do more than duty alone	23	What will be sign of his return	28
Kingdom of God is here among you now	24	Apostles to suffer	28
Jesus speaks of his second coming	24	Apostles to testify before leaders of nations	28
Second coming will be like the days of Noah	24	Holy Spirit to give apostles words to speak	28
One person will be taken and one left	24	Enduring to end will bring Eternal Life	28
Jesus wonders if he will then find faith on the earth ..	24	Destruction of Jerusalem during this generation	28
Parable of the Pharisee and the tax collector	24	Surviving Jews to be scattered to all nations	28
Why Moses allowed divorce	24	Jerusalem to be trampled on by Gentiles	28
Remarrying after divorce adultery	24	False Christs to arise	28
Jesus blesses the little children	24	Nation to war against nation	28
Jesus told that Herod wants to kill him	24	Earthquakes famines and plagues	28
Jesus mourns over the wickedness of Jerusalem ..	24	False prophets to arise	28
The wealthy young ruler	24	Family members to take one another's lives	28
Hard for rich to enter the kingdom of God	24	Wickedness to increase	28
What is impossible for men is possible with God ...	24	Love of most will grow cold	28
The Twelve to judge the twelve tribes of Israel ...	24	Gospel to again be preached in all the world	28
They who give up all will receive a hundred fold ...	24	Great tribulation to come in final days	28
The faithful to gain Eternal Life	24	Sun and moon will be darkened	28
Parable of paying workers in the vineyard	24	Great waves of the sea will roar	28
Jesus tells Twelve of his coming death	24	Distress and terror	28
Jesus to be resurrected	24	All nations will then see Son of Man coming	28
The request of mother of James and John	24	With power and great glory in clouds of heaven ...	28
To sit at his right or left not for Jesus to grant ...	24	Angels to gather elect with a loud trumpet call ...	28
Other apostles indignant with James and John	24	Parable of signs of the fig tree	28
Whoever would be great must serve	24	To occur in generation in which all signs seen	28
Zacchaeus the wealthy tax collector	25	No one knows the day only the Father	28
Jesus tells Zacchaeus he must stay at his house ...	25	One will be taken and the other left	28
Zacchaeus repents and gives to the poor	25	Parable of the thief in the night	28
Blind man named Bartimaeus healed	25	Parable of the wise and foolish virgins	29
Jesus sends two disciples to fetch a donkey	25	Parable of the talents	29
Jesus' triumphal entry into Jerusalem	25	The day of judgement	29
Jesus rode a donkey to fulfil scripture	25	People to be separated like sheep from goats	29
Jesus weeps over Jerusalem	25	Caring people will inherit the kingdom of God	29
Jesus prophesies the destruction of Jerusalem ...	25	Uncaring people will inherit Eternal Punishment ...	29
Jesus heals in the Temple	26	Jesus to be crucified during the Passover	30
Jewish leaders indignant at praising of Jesus	26	The leaders plot to arrest Jesus stealthily	30
Jesus and Twelve stay the night at Bethany	26	Jesus teaches daily at the Temple	30
Jesus curses a fig tree	26	Mary anoints Jesus with perfumed oil	30
Jesus drives merchants from the Temple courts ...	26	Judas critical of the waste of money	30
Jewish leaders look for way to kill Jesus	26	Jesus rebukes Judas for bothering the woman	30
Next morning the fig tree has withered	26	Judas goes to priests to betray Jesus	30
With faith a mountain can be ordered into the sea ..	26	Chief priests pay Judas thirty silver coins	30
When praying believe and it will be yours	26	Peter and John prepare the Passover supper	31
But first forgive all others	26	The last supper	31
City leaders and priests challenge Jesus' authority ...	26	Jesus tells the Twelve that one will betray him	31
Jesus questions them about John the Baptist	26	Judas goes out into the night	31
Parable of the two sons	26	Jesus gives bread and wine to his apostles	31
Parable of the unrighteous vineyard tenants	26	In remembrance of his body and blood	31
Priests want to arrest Jesus but fear the crowd	26	Jesus to drink new wine with apostles in kingdom ...	31
Parable of the wedding feast	26	The greatest to be one who serves	31
Pharisees plan to trap Jesus in his words	27	Apostles to sit on thrones	31
Jesus asked if it is right to pay taxes to Caesar	27	Peter to strengthen the other apostles	31
Give to Caesar the things that are Caesars	27	When he is truly converted	31
Sadducees question Jesus about the resurrection ..	27	Peter told he will deny Jesus three times that night ...	31
Jesus corrects false belief of the Sadducees	27	Protection to be withdrawn from apostles for a time..	31
The two most important commandments	27	Jesus and the apostles go out to Gethsemane	31
Jesus commends a teacher of the Law	27	Jesus is sorrowful and troubled	31
Jesus corrects a false belief of the Pharisees	27	Jesus prays that his Father remove the suffering ...	31
No one dares ask Jesus any more questions	27	Yet not my will but yours be done	31
Hypocritical teachers receive greater condemnation ..	27	An angel comes to strengthen Jesus	31

MATT-MARK-LUKE 1

Jesus in great anguish sweats blood	31
The apostles cannot remain awake	31
Judas arrives with an armed force to arrest Jesus	31
Judas identifies Jesus with a kiss	31
Peter attacks and cuts off ear of a servant	31
Jesus rebukes Peter and restores the ear	31
Darkness reigns that prophecy be fulfilled	31
Apostles flee	31
Jesus taken before the high priest and leaders	32
Peter follows at a distance	32
Jewish leaders look for testimony against Jesus	32
Jesus remains silent	32
Jesus ordered to reveal if he is the Christ	32
Jesus confirms that he is the Christ	32
High priest accuses Jesus of blasphemy	32
Leaders and guards mock and beat Jesus	32
Peter denies Jesus three times	32
Peter goes out and weeps bitterly	32
Jesus officially condemned to death	32
Judas is filled with remorse	32
Judas returns the silver coins then hangs himself ..	32
The priests use the money to buy a burial field	32
Jesus accused before Pilate the Roman governor ..	33
Jesus makes no reply to the charges	33
Pilate finds no basis for charges	33
Pilate sends Jesus to Herod	33
Jesus refuses to speak to Herod	33
Herod and his soldiers mock Jesus	33
Jesus returned to Pilate	33
Pilate tries to free Jesus	33
Dream of Pilate's wife	33
Pilate threatens to release Barabbas a criminal	33
Crowd chooses Barabbas over Jesus	33
Crucify him!	33
Pilate has Jesus flogged	33
Roman soldiers mock Jesus	33
Pilate tries again in vain to release Jesus	33
Pilate yields to demands of the people	33
Pilate washes his hands of innocent blood	33
Jesus handed over to soldiers to be crucified	33
Simon of Cyrene carries the cross	33
Weeping women follow Jesus	33
Jesus prophesies of troubled times to come	33
Two criminals also led out to be crucified	33
Jesus is crucified	34
Jesus prays that the Roman soldiers be forgiven ...	34
The soldiers divide up his clothes	34

Leaders, soldiers and passer-by's mock Jesus	34
One of the two criminals believes in Jesus	34
Jesus says 'Today you will be with me in Paradise' ...	34
Three hours of darkness	34
Jesus cries out to the Father	34
Jesus dies	34
Veil of the Temple split	34
An earthquake	34
Many holy saints resurrected	34
Resurrected saints later show themselves	34
Onlookers are awed	34
Followers of Jesus watch from a distance	34
Joseph a ruler asks Pilate for body of Jesus	34
Joseph takes down body of Jesus	34
Joseph wraps it and lays it in his own tomb	34
Women buy anointing spices	34
Women rest on the Sabbath day	34
Jewish leaders have tomb sealed and guarded	35
Women set out Sunday morning to embalm Jesus....	35
Jesus is resurrected	35
Roman guards run and report what happened	35
Chief priests bribe the guards to lie	35
Two angels speak to the women at the tomb	35
The women are filled with joy	35
They hurry back to tell the apostles	35
The women are not believed	35
Peter and John run out to the tomb	35
Mary Magdalene returns again to the tomb	35
Mary Magdalene sees the resurrected Jesus	35
Jesus appears and walks with two disciples	35
Jesus explains the scriptures concerning himself ...	35
The two disciples suddenly recognise Jesus	35
Jesus also appears to Peter	35
Jesus appears in the midst of all his disciples	35
Disciples think he is a spirit	35
Jesus eats in front of his disciples	35
Jesus explains scriptures about the Christ	35
Jesus sends his disciples to preach to all the world ...	35
Whoever believes and is baptised shall be saved	35
Miraculous signs to accompany those who believe...35	
Disciples to await the Holy Spirit in Jerusalem	35
Jesus taken up to God the Father	35
The disciples rejoice in the Temple daily	35
The apostles see and worship Jesus in Galilee	35
Apostles to baptise and teach all nations	35
Miraculous signs attend the apostles preaching	35

Bold The Lord or an angel speaking.
Bold italics A prophet speaking under inspiration.

1

The parents of John the Baptist

¹In the days of Herod^{F*} king of Israel there was a Levite priest named Zechariah. Both he and his wife Elizabeth were upright in the sight of God and kept his commandments blamelessly. ²But they had no children, for Elizabeth was barren and they were both advanced in years.

*1 Herod the Great, 73 BC - 4 BC. Not an anointed king as was David but an appointed vassal-king answerable to the Roman emperor. He was not a Jew but an Edomite.

An angel appears to Zechariah in the Temple

³Now it happened one day that Zechariah was chosen by lot to do his duty as priest and burn incense in the Temple, while the assembled worshipers prayed outside. ⁴As Zechariah did so, an angel of the Lord appeared to him, standing at the right hand side of the altar of incense.

Zechariah's wife Elizabeth to bear him a son and name him John

⁵Zechariah was afraid when he saw him, but the angel said, "**Fear not Zechariah, your**

prayer has been heard. Your wife Elizabeth will bear you a son and you are to name him John. ⁶He shall be a delight to you and many will rejoice because of his birth, for he shall be great in the sight of the Lord.”

John to avoid alcoholic drink

⁷“He is never to drink wine or strong drink.^{F*} And he shall be filled with the Holy Spirit, even from his mother’s womb.”

John to prepare Israel for the coming of the Lord

⁸“Many of Israel will he turn back to Jehovah their God.”

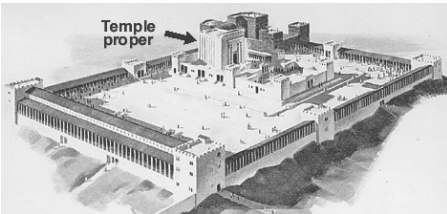
⁹“In the spirit and power of Elijah he shall go forth to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and sinners to righteousness to prepare the people for the coming of the Lord.”

Zechariah struck dumb for disbelieving the angel

¹⁰Zechariah said to the angel, “How can this be? I and my wife are well advanced in years.”

¹¹The angel answered, “**I am Gabriel^{F*} and stand in the presence of God. I have been sent to tell you this good news, but as you have disbelieved my words you shall be struck dumb until the day they are fulfilled.**”

¹²Meanwhile the worshippers outside were wondering why Zechariah was so long in the Temple. When at last he came out he could not speak, but made signs to them showing that he had seen a vision.



A model of Herod’s magnificent Temple complex in Jerusalem. The Temple proper where the angel Gabriel appeared to Zechariah, father of John the Baptist is the comparatively small building indicated by the arrow.

Zechariah’s wife Elizabeth conceives

¹³In due course Zechariah’s wife Elizabeth conceived. She said, “The Lord has taken away my disgrace.”

The angel Gabriel sent to Mary a virgin in Nazareth

¹⁴Six months later, God sent the angel Gabriel to Nazareth, a town in the district of Galilee to a virgin whose name was Mary.

¹⁵The angel said to her, “**Rejoice O highly favoured one, for the Lord is with you.**”

Mary to give birth to a son and name him Jesus

¹⁶Mary was troubled at his words but the angel said to her, “**Be not afraid Mary, for**

you have found favour with God and will become with child and give birth to a son. You are to name him Jesus.”

Jesus to reign as king over Israel forever

¹⁷“He will be great and will be called the Son of the Most High.”

¹⁸“The Lord God will give him the throne of your forefather David^{F*} and he will reign over the house of Israel for ever.”

Jesus to be conceived by the power of the Most High God

¹⁹Mary asked, “How can this be, since I have no husband?”

²⁰The angel answered, “**The Holy Spirit will come upon you and the power of the Most High shall overshadow you. Therefore the Holy One to be born of you will be called the Son of God.**”

Nothing is impossible with God

²²“**Know also that your relative Elizabeth has conceived a child in her old age. She who was barren is now in her sixth month.**”

²³Mary answered, “I am the Lord’s servant, may it be to me as you say.”

Mary goes to visit Elizabeth

²⁴Then Mary set out and travelled to the home of Zechariah and Elizabeth in Judea.

Elizabeth and Mary both prophesy

²⁵When Elizabeth heard Mary’s voice, her child leapt for joy in her womb and she was filled with the Holy Spirit.

²⁶In a loud voice she prophesied to Mary saying, “**Blessed are you among women, and blessed is the fruit of your womb.**”

²⁷Then she said, “Why am I so blessed that the mother of my Lord should come to me?”

²⁸Then Mary also prophesied saying, “**My spirit rejoices in God my Saviour, for he has been mindful of his humble servant. Surely all generations will call me blessed, for he who is mighty has done great things for me. Holy is his name.**”

²⁹Mary stayed with Elizabeth three months, then she returned home.

Elizabeth’s son is born

³⁰When Elizabeth’s time came to give birth, she bore a son. Her neighbours and relatives shared her joy and on the eighth day they gathered to name and circumcise the child.

The naming of John

³¹They were going to name him Zechariah after his father, but Elizabeth said to them, “He is to be called John.”

³²They said to her, “There is no one of that name in your family,” and they made signs to Zechariah to find out what he wished to name the child.^{F*}

*7 ie John was to be a Nazarite as was Samuel and Samson. See Judges 9:1-3 and Samuel 1:7 and accompanying notes.

*11 Gabriel also appeared to Daniel (Daniel 6:12 and 9:7).

*18 Mary was a descendant of King David.

*32 Zechariah was apparently struck deaf as well as dumb.

MATT-MARK-LUKE 2

Zechariah is able to speak again

³³Zechariah motioned for a writing tablet, and he wrote, "His name is John." Immediately his tongue was loosed and he began to speak and praise God.

Zechariah prophesies about his son John and the coming Christ

³⁴Then Zechariah, filled with the Holy Spirit prophesied saying, "**Praise be to Jehovah the God of Israel, for he has looked with favour upon his people, to redeem them as he promised by his holy prophets long ago.**"

³⁵"**He has raised up a Saviour for us in the house of David to save us from our enemies, that we may serve him without fear.**"

³⁶"**And you my son, will be called a prophet of the Most High, for you will go before the Lord and prepare the way for him, and teach his people the way of salvation through the forgiveness of their sins.**"

³⁷"**The day is dawning that shall give light to those living in the darkness of death and guide our feet to the way of peace.**"

³⁸All those present were filled with awe, and throughout the hill country of Judea all who heard these things wondered and asked, "What will this child be?"

³⁹John grew and became strong in spirit and lived in the desert until he appeared publicly in Judea.

2

Joseph decides to divorce Mary when she is found to be with child

¹Now Mary was betrothed to be married to a man named Joseph, a carpenter, and also a descendant of David, but before they came together she was found to be with child, through the Holy Spirit.

²Because Joseph was a righteous man and also because he did not want to expose her to public disgrace, he decided to divorce her quietly.^{F*}

An angel instructs Joseph to take Mary home as his wife

³But an angel appeared to him in a dream and said, "**Joseph, do not fear to take Mary as your wife, for what is conceived in her is of the Holy Spirit. She shall give birth to a son and you are to name him Jesus,^{F*} for he will save his people from their sins.**"

⁴So Joseph did as the angel commanded him and took Mary to his home as his wife. But he did not lie with her until after she had given birth.

Joseph and Mary travel to Bethlehem to register in a Roman census

⁵In those days, Caesar Augustus decreed that a census should be taken of the entire Roman

*2 A betrothal was more binding than a modern engagement and could only be broken by divorce.

*3 Jesus is the Greek version of the Hebrew name Joshua (usually pronounced 'Yehoshua') and means 'Jehovah saves.'

empire, therefore all the people went to their ancestral towns to register. ⁶Joseph and Mary went to Bethlehem^{F*} as they belonged to the house of David.



Caesar Augustus the Roman emperor who reigned when Jesus was born.

Jesus is born in a stable at Bethlehem

⁷While they were there, the time came for the child to be born, and Mary gave birth to her firstborn son. ⁸She wrapped him in swaddling cloth^{F*} and placed him in a manger,^{F*} for there was no room for them in the inn.



Stable in Israel showing a manger (animal feeding trough).

An angel appears to shepherds in a nearby field

⁹That same night there were shepherds staying out in the fields nearby, watching over their flocks. An angel of the Lord appeared to them and glory shone all around them and they were afraid.

*6 Bethlehem is approx 150 kms by road from Nazareth, about five day journey by foot.

*8 Long strips of linen cloth.

*8 A manger is a feeding trough for animals. Justin Martyr who lived in Israel about 100 AD wrote that the manger was located inside a cave which was used as the stable of an inn.

¹⁰But the angel said to them, “**Fear not, I bring you good news of great joy to all people. For this day in Bethlehem, a Saviour has been born to you.** ¹¹**He is the Christ,^{F*} the Lord. As a sign you will find the child wrapped in swaddling cloth and lying in a manger.**”

The shepherds see a great multitude of angels praising God

¹²Suddenly a great multitude of angels were seen, praising God and proclaiming, “**Glory to God in the highest heaven, and on earth peace to men of good will.**”

The shepherds go into Bethlehem to find the child

¹³When the angels left them, the shepherds said, “Let us go into Bethlehem and see this thing that has happened.”

¹⁴So they hastened into the town and found Mary and Joseph, and the baby lying in a manger just as the angel had said, and they went and told many others.

¹⁵All were amazed at what the shepherds told them. Then the shepherds returned to their fields, praising God for all the things they had heard and seen.



Shepherds watching their flocks by night in fields near Bethlehem.

Jesus is circumcised and named on the eighth day

¹⁶On the eighth day, the child was circumcised and given the name Jesus.

Jesus is redeemed at the Temple in Jerusalem

¹⁷A month later, when Mary’s purification had been completed, Joseph and Mary took the child Jesus to Jerusalem to present him at the Temple. ¹⁸For it is written in the Law, “**Every firstborn male is to be consecrated holy to Jehovah and is to be redeemed by sacrificing a pair of doves or two young pigeons.**”

Simeon proclaims Jesus to be the long awaited Christ the Saviour

¹⁹Now there was a devout man in Jerusalem named Simeon. He was looking for the Saviour of Israel to come. The Holy Spirit was with him

and had revealed to him that he would not die until he had seen the Christ.

²⁰When Joseph and Mary brought Jesus into the Temple court, Simeon took the child in his arms and praised God saying, “**Most High God, you have kept your promise. Now dismiss your servant in peace, for my eyes have seen your Saviour, a light for the Gentiles^{F*} and glory for your people Israel.**”

²¹The parents marvelled at what was said about Jesus.

Simeon prophesies regarding Jesus and Mary

²²Then Simeon blessed them and prophesied to Mary saying, “**This child is destined for the fall and rise of many in Israel, and will be spoken against.** ²³**Through him the inner thoughts of many hearts will be laid bare, and your own heart will be pierced by a sword of sorrow.**”

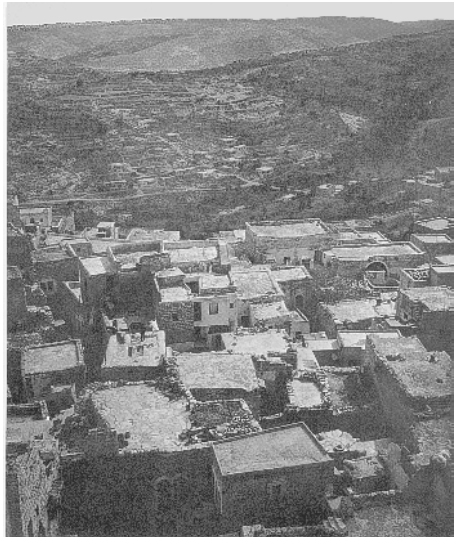
Anna the prophetess testifies of Jesus

²⁴There was also a prophetess in Jerusalem, Anna of the tribe of Asher. She was eighty-four years of age and never left the Temple courts, but worshipped day and night, fasting and praying.

²⁵She also came up to Joseph and Mary and after giving thanks to God she prophesied of the child Jesus to all who were looking forward to the deliverance of Jerusalem.

Joseph and Mary return to Nazareth

²⁶When Joseph and Mary had done all that was required by the Law, they left Jerusalem and returned to Galilee, to their home town of Nazareth.



Bethlehem where Jesus was born.

*11 Christ is the Greek equivalent of the Hebrew ‘Messiah’ meaning ‘Anointed one.’ The Jews had long awaited his coming.

*20 A Gentile was any non-Israelite. In biblical times the term was normally applied to those of non-Semite stock who did not practise circumcision. Nowadays the Jews define a Gentile as any person not born of a Jewish mother.

Wise men of the east come searching for the new-born king of the Jews

¹Soon afterward, certain wise men of the east^{F*} came to Jerusalem and asked, “Where is he who has been born king of the Jews? For we saw his star^{F*} in the east and have come to worship him.”



Travellers from the east near Jerusalem.

King Herod is disturbed and enquires regarding the Christ

²When Herod the king heard this, he was disturbed,^{F*} and calling together the chief priests and teachers of the Law he enquired of them as to where the Christ was to be born.

³They replied, “At Bethlehem in Judea, for the prophet Micah has written, “**And you Bethlehem, though you are little among the towns of Judah, out of you will come the one who is to rule over Israel, whose origins are from the very beginning, from ancient times.**”

Herod instructs the wise men to report back to him when they find the Christ

⁴So Herod summoned the wise men secretly to discover the exact date the star had appeared. Then he sent them to Bethlehem saying, “Make a careful search for the child. When you find him, report back to me so that I too may worship him.”

The star reappears and leads the wise men to Jesus

⁵The wise men went on their way and were overjoyed when the star they had seen in the east appeared again and went ahead of them, leading them to the place where the child was.^{F*}

The wise men worship the child Jesus and give him gifts

⁶On entering the house they saw Jesus with his mother Mary, and bowed down and

*1 The wise men are traditionally believed to have come from Babylonia.

*1 Modern astronomy has calculated that there was a rare unusually bright conjunction (only once in 4000 years) of Venus and Jupiter in the constellation of Leo (the Lion), traditionally associated with Judah (Genesis 31:21, Revelation 3:15). This occurred both about the conception and the birth of Jesus.

*2 At this time, in the last years of his reign Herod the Great was suffering from mental instability.

*5 Unless this incident occurred before verse 26 of the previous chapter, the town would be Nazareth not Bethlehem.

worshipped him. Then they opened their treasures and presented the child with gifts of gold, incense, and myrrh.^{F*}

The wise men warned not to return to Herod

⁷The wise men were then warned in a dream not to return to Herod, so they went back to their own land.

An angel warns Joseph to flee to Egypt

⁸When they had gone, an angel appeared to Joseph in a dream and said, “**Take the child and his mother and flee to Egypt. Remain there until I give you word, for Herod is about to search for the child to kill him.**”

⁹So Joseph arose during the night and taking Jesus and his mother Mary he departed for Egypt.



A donkey was often taken along when Israelite women travelled.

Herod orders all the infant boys in the Bethlehem district killed

¹⁰When Herod realised that the wise men had deceived him, he was enraged and gave orders to kill all the infant boys in Bethlehem and the surrounding district who were two years old and under.

King Herod dies and Joseph is told to return his family to Israel

¹¹After Herod died the angel again appeared in a dream to Joseph in Egypt and said, “**Return to the land of Israel for he who was trying to take the life of the child is dead.**” So Joseph arose and returned with his family to Nazareth.^{F*}

Jesus grows strong and is filled with wisdom

¹²Jesus grew and became strong and was filled with wisdom, for the grace of God was upon him.

*6 Myrrh was a solidified, dark red aromatic gum used as a spice and a medicine.

*11 Herod the Great died about a year after Jesus' birth, in 4 BC. Israel was then split into three regions, north, south, and east and ruled over by his three sons Archelaus, Herod, and Phillip. All were answerable to Rome.

Jesus stays behind in Jerusalem after the Passover when twelve years old

¹³Now every year Joseph and Mary would go to Jerusalem for the Feast of the Passover. When Jesus was twelve years old they again went to the Feast as was their custom. ^{F*}

¹⁴After the Feast was over, the boy Jesus stayed behind in Jerusalem and his parents, unaware of it, started for home thinking he was in their company. ¹⁵After travelling for a day they began looking for him among their relatives and friends.

Joseph and Mary find Jesus in a Temple courtyard conversing with the teachers of the Law

¹⁶When they did not find him they returned to Jerusalem. On the third day they found him in a courtyard of the Temple, sitting among the teachers of the Law, listening to them and asking them questions. ¹⁷All who heard him were amazed at his understanding and answers.

¹⁸Joseph and Mary were astonished. His mother said to him, "My son, why have you treated us like this? Your father and I have been searching for you with great anxiety."

¹⁹Jesus replied, "**Why did you search? Did you not know that I would be in my Father's house?**" But they did not comprehend what he was saying to them.

Jesus returns to Nazareth with his parents

²⁰Jesus returned to Nazareth with his parents and was obedient to them. He continued to grow in wisdom and stature and in favour with God and man.

4

John the Baptist begins his ministry

¹Now the word of God came to John^{F*} the son of Zechariah, in the desert. He began going throughout the countryside along the Jordan river preaching a baptism of repentance for the forgiveness of sins. ²For it is written by Isaiah the prophet, "**A voice will cry out in the desert, 'Prepare the way of the Lord. Make straight the way of our God.'**"

John's clothes and food

³John's clothes were made of camel hair cloth and he wore a leather belt around his waist. His food was locusts and wild honey.

Many confess their sins and are baptised

⁴People went out to John from Jerusalem, Judea and the region along the river, confessing their sins and being baptised^{F*} by him in the Jordan.

John rebukes the Pharisees and Sadducees for failing to repent

⁵But when John saw many Pharisees and

^{*13} Jerusalem was about 135 kms from Nazareth, about a four day journey by foot.

^{*1} John was now about 30 years old, the age at which a Levite priest begins to serve

^{*4} Baptism (immersion in water) was not a new rite, it had been practiced by Jews in past ages. It is still a requirement today, along with male circumcision for converts to traditional Judaism.

Sadducees^{F*} coming out to be baptised he said to them, "**You brood of vipers. Who warned you to flee from the coming wrath? First bear fruit worthy of repentance.**"

⁶"**Think not to yourselves, 'We have Abraham as our father.' Truly I say to you, out of these very stones God can raise up children of Abraham.**"

Parable of the axe at the foot of the tree

⁷"**The axe lies at the root of the tree. Every tree that bears not good fruit will be cut down and thrown into the fire.**"

John teaches the people how to live righteously

⁸The crowd said to John, "What then should we do?"

⁹John answered, "**He who has two coats should share with him who has none, and whoever has food should do the same.**"

¹⁰Even tax collectors came out to be baptised and asked, "Teacher, what should we do?"

¹¹He answered, "**Collect no more tax than you are required to.**"

¹²Soldiers also asked him, "And what should we do?"

¹³John replied, "**Do not extort money, and be content with your pay.**"



Baptising in the river Jordan.

John preparing the way for one more powerful

¹⁴The people all wondered if John might be the Christ, but John answered them saying, "**I baptise you with water, but one more powerful than I is coming whose sandals I am not worthy to untie.**" ¹⁵**He will baptise you with the Holy Spirit and with fire.**"

¹⁶**"He shall thresh the grain and gather the wheat into his barn, but will burn the husks with unquenchable fire."**

¹⁷And with many other words John exhorted

^{*5} The Pharisees and Sadducees were priestly sects noted for living the letter of the Law of Moses rather than the spirit of the Law. The Pharisees were stricter than the more worldly, ruling-class Sadducees.

MATT-MARK-LUKE 5

the people and preached the good news to them.

Jesus is baptised by John

¹⁸When Jesus was about thirty years of age, he came from Galilee to the Jordan to be baptised by John. But John protested saying, "***I have need to be baptised by you, why do you come to me?***"

¹⁹Jesus replied, "**Let it be so, for it is proper for us to do this to fulfil the Law.**" So John baptised Jesus.

The Spirit of God in the likeness of a dove descends upon Jesus when he prays

²⁰When Jesus came up out of the water he prayed and John saw the heavens open and the Spirit of God descend upon Jesus, in the likeness of a dove.

God the Father acknowledges Jesus as his Son

²¹And a voice was heard from heaven saying, "**This is my beloved Son in whom I am well pleased.**"

Jesus fasts for forty days

²²Then Jesus, full of the Holy Spirit was led by the Spirit into the desert, to be tempted by the devil. For forty days Jesus fasted, eating nothing at all.

Jesus tempted with fleshly desire

²³At the end of this time he was very hungry, and the tempter came and said to him, "If you are the Son of God, command these stones to become bread."

²⁴Jesus answered him, "**It is written, 'Man does not live by bread alone but by every word that comes from the mouth of God.'**"

Jesus tempted to proudly test God

²⁵Then the devil took Jesus to Jerusalem and set him upon the highest point of the Temple and said to him, "If you are the Son of God, throw yourself down. For it is written, '**He will command his angels to guard you, lest you as much as strike your foot against a stone.**'"

²⁶Jesus answered, "**It is also written, 'Do not try Jehovah your God.'**"

Jesus tempted with worldly power and wealth

²⁷Again the devil took Jesus to a very high mountain and showed him all the kingdoms of the world and their splendour and said, "All these shall I give to you if you will bow down and worship me."

²⁸Jesus said to him, "**Away from me Satan. For it is written, 'Worship Jehovah your God and serve him only.'**"

Angels visit Jesus

²⁹Then the devil left him, and angels visited Jesus. ³⁰News about Jesus now began to spread throughout the whole countryside.

Herod the king of Galilee^{F*} because of Herodias his brother's wife whom he had unlawfully married. He said to him, "***It is not lawful for you to have Herodias your brother's wife.***"

²So adding to all the other evil things Herod had done, he locked John in prison.

Herod's wife Herodias wants to kill John

³Herodias was furious with John and looked for a way to kill him, but she was unable to do so for Herod feared John and protected him knowing him to be a righteous and holy man.

⁴Whenever Herod heard John speak he would become greatly disturbed, yet he continued to listen to him.

Jesus returns to Galilee

⁵When Jesus heard that John had been imprisoned, he returned to Galilee, with the power of the Holy Spirit. ⁶He stayed in the city of Capernaum^{F*} which was by the lake of Galilee and taught in the synagogues,^{F*} and everybody praised him.

Jesus teaches in his home town synagogue

⁷Then Jesus returned to his home town Nazareth. On the Sabbath day he went into the synagogue as was his custom. ⁸He stood to read and the scroll of the prophet Isaiah was handed to him.

⁹Jesus unrolled it and read where it is written, "**The Spirit of the Lord God is upon me, for he has anointed me to preach good news to the poor, to heal the broken hearted, to proclaim release for the prisoners and to declare the year of Jehovah's favour.**"

¹⁰Then he rolled up the scroll and handed it back to the attendant and sat down. The eyes of all in the synagogue were upon him. ¹¹He said to them, "**Today this scripture is fulfilled in your hearing.**"

¹²All spoke well of him and wondered at the gracious words that fell from his lips and said, "Is not this Joseph's son?"

No prophet accepted in his home town

¹³Jesus continued, "**No doubt you will quote this proverb to me, 'Physician heal your own.' Do here in your home town the miracles we have heard that you do in Capernaum. But truly I say to you, no prophet is accepted in his home town.**"

Elijah and Elisha of old sent to non-Israelites

¹⁵"There were many widows in Israel during the days of Elijah when the severe famine shut the heavens for three and a half years. Yet Elijah was not sent to any of them, but to a widow in Zarephath in the land of the Sidonians."

¹⁶"And there were many lepers in Israel in

*1 Herod was one of the three sons of the now dead king Herod the Great.

*6 Jesus used the lakeside city of Capernaum as his base throughout his ministry in Galilee.

*6 Synagogues were Jewish places of worship, similar to churches.

the days of Elisha the prophet, yet not one of them was cleansed, only Naaman the Syrian.”

The men of Nazareth became enraged and try to push Jesus over a cliff

¹⁷At these words the men in the synagogue became enraged with anger. Arising they thrust Jesus before them and pushed him to the cliff edge of the hill on which the town was built to cast him over. But he passed through them and went his way.



Nazareth where Jesus was raised and then rejected.

Jesus returns to Capernaum

¹⁸Jesus returned to Capernaum and on the following Sabbath went into a synagogue there to teach the people. ¹⁹They were amazed at his teaching for his words had authority.

Demons recognise Jesus as the Holy One of God

²⁰In the synagogue was a man possessed by demons. These unclean spirits caused him to shout loudly saying, “What do you want with us Jesus of Nazareth? Have you come to destroy us? We know who you are, the Holy One of God.”

Jesus orders the demons out of the possessed man

²¹But Jesus commanded them saying, “**Be silent and come out of him!**” At these words the demons threw the man on the floor and came out without harming him.

²²All the people were amazed and said to one other, “What power there is in his words. He commands unclean spirits and they come out.”

That evening people bring many sick and possessed people to be healed

²³Later that day as the sun was setting,^{F*} the people of the town brought to Jesus all who had various kinds of sickness and he laid his hands on each one and healed them all. ²⁴For as it was spoken by the prophet Isaiah, “**He will heal our sicknesses and remove our pains.**”

²⁵Demons also came out of many people shouting, “You are the Son of God!” But Jesus

rebuked them and forbade them to speak for they knew he was the Christ.

Jesus teaches the people from Peter’s fishing boat

²⁶One day, as Jesus was standing by the lake with the people crowding around him to hear the word of God, he saw at the water’s edge two boats, left there by fishermen who were cleaning their nets.

²⁷He stepped into a boat belonging to a fisherman named Simon, whom Jesus had surnamed Peter.^{F*} He then asked Peter to push the boat out a little from shore and Jesus sat and taught the people from the boat.

Jesus tells Peter and Andrew to let down their nets

²⁸When Jesus had finished speaking he said to Peter and his brother Andrew, “**Put out into deep water and let down your net for a catch.**”

²⁹Peter said, “Master, we fished all night and took nothing, but we will do as you say.”



Fishermen on the lake of Galilee.

They catch so many fish their net begins to break

³⁰When they let down the net they caught such a large number of fish that the net began to break. So they signalled their partners in the other boat to come out and help them.

³¹They filled both boats so full that they almost sank.

Peter humbles himself before Jesus

³²Peter came ashore and fell down at the knees of Jesus and said to him, “Depart from me Lord, for I am a sinful man.”

Jesus calls Peter to be a fisher of men

³³Jesus said to Peter, “**Fear not, from now on you will be a fisher of men.**”

Jesus also calls Peter’s brother Andrew and the two brothers James and John

³³When Peter’s brother Andrew and James and his brother John had pulled their boats up on the shore, Jesus said to them all, “**Come follow me.**”

³⁴So they left everything and followed Jesus.

*23 The Jewish Sabbath ended at sunset.

*27 Peter means ‘a large rock.’

6

Jesus asked to heal the servant of a Roman centurion

¹Now in Capernaum there was a Roman centurion^{F*} who had a servant whom he valued highly. But he was paralysed and suffering terribly and was about to die. The centurion heard of Jesus and sent some elders of the Jews to him asking him to heal his servant.

²When the elders came to Jesus they pleaded with him saying, "He is worthy of having you do this for him, for he loves our people and it was he who built our synagogue for us." So Jesus went with them.

The centurion asks Jesus to just say the word and his servant will be healed

³He was not far from the centurion's house when the centurion sent friends to Jesus with this message: "Lord, do not trouble yourself to come for I feel unworthy to have you under my roof, or even to come to you, but just say the word and my servant will be healed." ⁴For I am a man under authority, and with soldiers under me. I need only say to one, 'Do this,' and he does it."

Jesus marvels at the Roman centurion's faith

⁵When Jesus heard these words he was amazed. Turning to the crowd following him he said, "Never have I found such great faith, not even among the Israelites."

Many non-Israelites will enter the kingdom of God

⁶"Truly I say to you, many will come from other nations and find a place at the feast in the kingdom of God with Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, while the sons of the kingdom will be thrown outside in outer darkness where they will weep and grind their teeth."

The centurion's servant is healed

⁷Jesus said to the messengers, "Say to him, 'It is done according to your faith.'" And the centurion's servant was healed at that very moment.

Great crowds of people come to hear and to be healed by Jesus

⁸News about Jesus spread further and further and soon great crowds of people came to hear him and to be healed of their sicknesses.

Jesus often withdrew to pray

⁹But Jesus often withdrew to lonely places and prayed.

A paralysed man lowered through the roof

¹⁰One day Jesus was teaching in a crowded house in Capernaum. Sitting with him were Pharisees^{F*} and teachers of the Law who had come from Jerusalem, Judea and from all over Galilee, and the power of God was present for

him to heal the sick.

¹¹Some men arrived carrying a paralysed man on a bed and tried to take him into the house to lay him before Jesus, but they could not enter because of the crowd. ¹²So they went up on the roof and removed tiles and lowered him down through the roof, right in front of Jesus.

Jesus forgives the sins of the paralysed man

¹³When Jesus saw their faith he said to the paralysed man, "My friend, your sins are forgiven you."

Jesus thought guilty of blasphemy

¹⁴When the Pharisees and the teachers of the Law heard these words they thought to themselves, "This man speaks blasphemy. Only God can forgive sins."

As proof that he can forgive sins Jesus commands the paralysed man to walk home

¹⁵Jesus knew what they were thinking and said to them, "Which is easier to say, 'Your sins are forgiven you,' or 'Take up your bed and walk?'"

¹⁶"That you may know the Son of Man^{F*} has authority on earth to forgive sins," he said to the paralysed man, "Arise, take up your bed and walk home."

¹⁷Immediately the man stood up in front of them, picked up the bed he had been lying on, and walked home, praising God.

¹⁸Everyone was amazed and glorified God. Filled with awe they said, "We have seen great things this day."

Matthew the tax collector called to be a disciple

¹⁹After this, Jesus saw a tax collector by the name of Matthew sitting at his tax booth. He said to him, "Follow me," and Matthew left everything and followed Jesus.

Matthew holds a feast for Jesus and his disciples

²⁰Then Matthew held a feast at his house for Jesus and his disciples.^{F*} A large crowd of tax collectors^{F*} and others ate with them.

The Pharisees murmur at Jesus and his disciples eating with sinners

²¹The Pharisees murmured at this and said to the disciples of Jesus, "Why do you eat and drink with tax collectors and sinners?"

Jesus came to call sinners to repentance

²²Jesus answered them saying, "It is not the well who need a physician but the sick. I have not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance."

*16 Jesus often referred to himself as the 'Son of Man.' Daniel used the same description in one of his visions (Daniel 5:16). Ezekiel also received this title from the Lord during his revelations and visions (Ezekiel 1:20).

*20 A disciple is a dedicated follower and learner of a noted person. In the New Testament the term is sometimes applied to the twelve apostles and other times to the other followers of Jesus numbering well over 100 who constantly accompanied him.

*20 Tax collectors, also known as publicans were highly paid Jews who collected taxes imposed by the Romans. They were despised and considered traitors by most of their fellow Jews.

*1 A centurion was a Roman army officer in command of 100 soldiers.

*10 The Pharisees were the predominant religious sect of the day. See also note on Matt-Mark-Luke 4:5.

Jesus asked why his disciples do not fast

23The Pharisees also said to Jesus, “The disciples of John often fast and pray and so do our followers, but your disciples carry on eating and drinking.”

Days of fasting will come

24Jesus answered, “Do the guests of the bridegroom fast while he is with them? Nevertheless the days are coming when the bridegroom will be taken from them. In those days they will fast.”

New wineskins needed for new wine

25“**No one tears a patch from a new garment and sews it on an old one. If he does he will have ruined the new garment, and the patch from the new will not match the old.**”

26“**And no one pours new wine into old wineskins, for the new wine will burst the old skins. New wine must be poured into new wineskins.**”



Capernaum on the shores of Lake Galilee was the base town of Jesus during his ministry in Galilee.

7

Jesus prays all night on a mountain then chooses his twelve apostles

1Then Jesus went up a mountain and spent the whole night praying to God.

2When morning came, he called his disciples to him and chose twelve of them whom he designated apostles.^{F*}

The names of the Twelve

3They were Simon (whom Jesus renamed Peter), his brother Andrew, James and his brother John (whom Jesus named Sons of Thunder), Philip, Nathanael, Matthew, Thomas, James (son of Alphaeus), Simon, Thaddeus, and Judas Iscariot.

Jesus heals on the mountain

4Then they went a little way down the mountain, to a level place where a large crowd of people had gathered from as far away as Judea, Tyre, Sidon and beyond the Jordan.

5They had come to hear Jesus and be healed of their diseases. For news about him had spread

*2 The term apostle means ‘one chosen and sent forth with a message.’

all over and people brought to him all who were ill with various diseases, also those suffering severe pain, the demon-possessed, those having seizures and the paralysed, and he healed them all.

6Many people tried to touch Jesus, for power was coming from him and healing them all.

Jesus begins his sermon on the mount

7Then Jesus sat down and began to teach them saying:

8“**Blessed are the poor in spirit,^{F*} for theirs is the kingdom of God.**”

9“**Blessed are those who are full of sorrow, for they shall be comforted.**”

10“**Blessed are the humble, for they shall inherit the earth.**”

11“**Blessed are those who hunger and thirst after righteousness, for they shall be filled.**”

12“**Blessed are the merciful, for they shall obtain mercy.**”

13“**Blessed are the pure in heart, for they shall see God.**”

14“**Blessed are the peacemakers, for they shall be called sons of God.**”

15“**Blessed are they who are persecuted because of righteousness, for theirs is the kingdom of God.**”

16“**Blessed are you when people insult you, persecute you, and falsely speak evil of you, because of me. Rejoice and be glad, for great is your reward in the kingdom of God, for so persecuted they the prophets before you.**”

Love and pray for your enemies

17“**You have heard it said, ‘Love your neighbour and hate your enemy.’ But I say to you, ‘Love your enemies. Do good to those who hate you. Bless those who curse you, and pray for those who mistreat you.’**”

Do not demand back what is taken from you

18“**And if anyone takes what belongs to you, do not demand it back.**”

The golden rule

19“**Do unto others as you would have others do unto you.**”

Even sinners love those who love them

20“**For if you love those who love you, what credit is that to you? Even sinners love those who love them.**”

21“**And if you do good to those who do good to you, what credit is that to you? Even sinners do the same.**”

22“**And if you lend to those from whom you expect to be repaid, what credit is that to you? Even sinners lend to sinners, expecting to be repaid in full.**”

Act with love and kindness without expecting a reward in this life

23“**But I say to you, ‘Love your enemies**

*8 Generally understood to be those who are naturally shy and lacking in confidence.

MATT-MARK-LUKE 8

and be kind to them. Lend to them without expecting anything in return.”

²⁴“Then your reward shall be great, and you will be sons of the Most High God. For he also is kind to the ungrateful and the wicked, for he causes the sun to rise and the rain to fall on both the wicked and the good.”

Be merciful and perfect as your Father in heaven

²⁵“So be merciful, as your Father in heaven is merciful. ²⁶Be perfect, as your Father in heaven is perfect.” F*

You are the salt of the earth

²⁷“You are the salt of the earth, F* but if salt has lost its taste how can it be made salty again? It is no longer good for anything, except to be thrown out and trampled on.”

Let your light shine before others

²⁸“You are the light of the world. A city on a hill cannot be hidden. Neither do people light a lamp and put it under a bowl, instead they put it up on a lampstand to give light to all the household.”

²⁹“In the same way let your light so shine before others, that they may see your goodness in the way you act, and praise your Father in heaven.”

Your eye is the lamp of the body

³⁰“Your eye is the lamp of the body. If your eye is healthy your whole body is full of light, but if your eye is unhealthy, your body is full of darkness.”

³¹“See to it then, that there is light within you and not darkness.”

Be not angry with another

³²“You have heard it said, ‘Do not murder. Anyone who murders will be subject to judgement.’ But I say to you, Anyone who is angry with another is subject to judgement, and he who says, ‘You fool!’ is in danger of the fires of Gehenna.” F*

Reconcile unkind feelings before offering a gift to God

³³“Therefore if you are offering a gift at the altar and know that your brother has something against you, first go and be reconciled to your brother and then come and offer your gift.”

³⁴“For do you not settle matters quickly with him to whom you owe a debt and who is about to take you to court? For the judge

may hand you over to be thrown into prison and you will not get out until the last copper coin has been paid.”



The valley of Hinnom below the city of Jerusalem also known as Gehenna. Because of its gruesome history Jesus used it as a symbol of the future emotional torment of the wicked.

To look lustfully is adultery

³⁵“You have heard it said, ‘Do not commit adultery.’ But I say to you, He who looks upon a woman lustfully has already committed adultery with her in his heart.”

³⁶“Therefore if your right eye causes you to sin, pluck it out and throw it away, or if your right hand causes you to sin, cut it off. It is better for you to lose one part of your body than for your whole body to be thrown into Gehenna.”

Remarrying after divorce is adultery unless divorced spouse was unfaithful

³⁷“It has been said, ‘He who divorces his wife must give her a certificate of divorce.’ But I say to you, ‘He who divorces his wife, except on the grounds of unchastity, causes her to commit adultery. ³⁸And whoever marries the divorced woman commits adultery.”

8

Do not swear oaths

¹“Again you have heard it said, ‘Keep the oaths you have sworn to Jehovah.’ But I say to you, Do not swear at all, neither by heaven for it is God’s throne, nor by the earth for it is his footstool, nor by Jerusalem for it is the city of the Great King.”

²“And do not swear by your head, for you cannot turn one hair white or black. Simply let your yes be yes and your no be no. Anything more than this comes from the evil one.”

Turn the other cheek

³“You have heard it said, ‘An eye for eye and a tooth for a tooth.’ But I say to you, Resist not a violent person. If someone strikes you on the right cheek, turn to him the other also.”

Give double if someone would sue you

⁴“And if one would sue you and take your coat, let him have your cloak also.”

*25 The word ‘perfect’ is from the Greek word ‘*te leios*’ meaning to be complete in every way attainable.

*27 In the sense that, just as a sprinkling of salt can enhance the taste of food, so too can a sprinkling of loving and caring people enhance a community.

*32 The word Gehenna is translated Hell in some Bibles. Gehenna was the Greek name for the valley of Hinnom outside the city of Jerusalem. This valley was earlier notorious for idolatrous child sacrifice and as a mass burial place for thousands of inhabitants of Jerusalem who died during the Babylonian siege. In the days of Jesus it was the site of a continuously burning rubbish dump, and along with its gruesome history was an apt symbol for Jesus to use in describing the future emotional torment of the wicked.

Go the extra mile

⁵“If someone forces you to go one mile^{F*}, go with him two miles.”

Give to one who would beg or borrow from you

⁶“Give to one who begs of you and turn not away him who would borrow from you.”



The Mount of Beatitudes, rising up from the shore of Lake Galilee, traditional site of the Sermon on the Mount.

Do not do acts of kindness just to be seen of others

⁷“Do not do your acts of kindness before men to be praised by them, for you will have no reward from your Father in heaven.”

⁸“And when you give to the needy do not announce it with trumpets as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and on the streets to be honoured of men. Truly they have received their reward.”

Give to the needy in secret

⁹“Rather, when you give to the needy let not your left hand know what your right hand is doing. ¹⁰Let your giving be in secret, then your Father who sees what is done in secret will reward you openly.”

Pray in secret

¹¹“And when you pray, be not like the hypocrites, for they love to pray standing in the synagogues and on the street corners, to be seen of men. Truly they have had their reward.”

¹²“But when you pray, go into your room and close the door and pray to your Father in secret. Then your Father who sees what is done in secret will reward you openly.”

Do not repeat the same words over and over when praying

¹³“And when you pray, repeat not the same words over and over as the Gentiles do, for they think they will be heard because of their many words. ¹⁴Be not like them, for your Father in heaven knows what you need before you ask him.”

The Lord's prayer

¹⁵“After this manner then, should you pray, ‘Our Father in heaven, hallowed be your name. Your kingdom come, and your

will be done on earth as it is in heaven.

¹⁶Give us this day our daily bread, and forgive us our sins as we forgive those who sin against us. ¹⁷Let us not be led into temptation but deliver us from all evil.” ^{F*}

Forgive others and your own sins will be forgiven

¹⁸“If you forgive others when they sin against you, your heavenly Father will also forgive you. But if you do not forgive others their sins, your Father will not forgive you your sins.”

Ask and you shall receive

¹⁹“Ask and you shall receive, seek and you will find, knock and the door shall be opened. For he who asks, receives, and he who seeks finds, and to him who knocks, the door is opened.”

²⁰“For which one of you if his son asks him for bread, will give him a stone? Or if he asks for a fish, will give him a snake?”

²¹“If you then, though you sin, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your Father in heaven give good gifts to those who ask him?”

Fast in secret

²²“And when you fast, do not look dismal as the hypocrites do, for they put on a mournful face to show others they are fasting. Truly they have had their reward.”

²³“But I say to you, When you fast, groom your hair and wash your face so that you will not be seen by men to be fasting, only by your Father in heaven. Then your Father who sees what is done in secret will reward you openly.”

Do not store up treasures on earth

²⁴“Store not up for yourselves treasures on earth, where moth and rust destroy and where thieves break in and steal.”

²⁵“But store up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where moth and rust do not destroy and where thieves do not break in and steal.”

²⁶“For where your treasure is there will your heart be also.”

You cannot serve both God and wealth

²⁷“No man can serve two masters, for you will be devoted to one and despise the other. ²⁸You cannot serve both God and wealth.” ^{F*}

Do not worry about food and drink

²⁹“Therefore do not be anxious about your life, and worry about how you will eat or drink. Is not life more than food?”

³⁰“Behold the birds of the air, they do not sow, neither do they reap or store away in barns, yet your heavenly Father feeds them. Are you not of more value than they?”

³¹“And who of you by worrying can add a single hour to your span of life?”

*¹⁷ Later manuscripts add: “For yours is the kingdom, the power and the glory forever.”

*²⁸ Wealth, literally ‘*mammon*,’ an Aramaic word personifying riches and greed.

*⁵ The word used here for mile (*Million*) was a thousand paces.

MATT-MARK-LUKE 9

Do not worry about clothing

32“**And why worry about how you will clothe yourself? Is not your body more than clothing?**”

33“**Behold the flowers of the field, how they grow, and they neither labour nor spin yet not even Solomon in all his glory was arrayed like one of these.**”

34“**If God so clothes the grass of the field which is here today and tomorrow burned in the fire^{F*} will he not much more clothe you, O you of little faith?**”

35“**So do not be anxious saying, ‘What are we to eat?’ or ‘What are we to drink?’ or ‘What are we to wear?’ for the Gentiles strive after all these things. Your heavenly Father knows that you need them.**”

First seek the kingdom of God and all these things will be yours

36“**Rather, seek first the kingdom of God and his righteousness, and all these things shall be yours as well.**”

Do not worry about tomorrow

37“**Therefore do not worry about tomorrow for tomorrow will take care of itself. Each day has sufficient trouble of its own.**”

9

Judge not others

1“**Judge not others and you will not be judged. For with the same judgement you judge others, you also will be judged.**”

Forgive and you will be forgiven

2“**Therefore forgive, and you too will be forgiven.**”



“...here today and tomorrow burned in the fire” (Matt-Mark-Luke 8:34). Dry grass being burnt as fuel in an oven.

First remove the log from your own eye then take the speck from another's eye

3“**Why do you see the speck in another's eye and not see the log in your own eye?**”

Why do you say to your neighbour, ‘Let me take the speck out of your eye?’”

4“**You hypocrite, first take the log out of your own eye then you will see clearly to remove the speck from your neighbour's eye.**”

Give generously to receive

5“**Give and it will be given you, good measure, pressed down, shaken, and running over will be poured into your lap.**”

6“**For the measure you give will be the measure you get, and still more will be given you. For to those that have, more shall be given.**”

7“**But from those who have not, even the little they have shall be taken away.**”

Do not cast pearls before swine

8“**Give not that which is sacred to dogs, nor cast your pearls before swine, for they may trample them under their feet and then turn on you.**”

Wide is the gate that leads to Death

9“**Enter through the narrow gate, for wide is the gate and broad the way that leads to Death,^{F*} and many enter through it.**”

Narrow the way that leads to Eternal Life

10“**But small is the gate and narrow the way that leads to Eternal Life, and few there be that find it.**”

Jesus came to fulfil the scriptures

11“**Think not that I have come to abolish the Law and the Prophets.^{F*} I have not come to abolish the scriptures but to fulfil them.**”

12“**Truly I say to you, Until the heavens and earth pass away, not one dot will disappear from the scriptures until all is fulfilled.**”

Those who will be least in the kingdom of God

13“**Therefore whoever breaks one of the least of these commandments and teaches others to do the same, will be called least in the kingdom of God.**”

Those who will be great in the kingdom of God

14“**But whoever keeps and teaches these commandments will be called great in the kingdom of God.**”

Righteousness must exceed that of the Pharisees to enter the kingdom of God

15“**For unless your righteousness exceeds that of the Pharisees and the teachers of the Law, you will not enter the kingdom of God.**”

False prophets known by their fruits

16“**Beware of false prophets who come to you in sheep's clothing but inwardly are hungry wolves. By their fruits you shall know them.**”

17“**Are grapes picked from thorns or figs**

*9 ie The Second Death or Eternal Death (in contrast to Eternal Life) which is to be cut off forever from the presence of God. See note on Revelation 16:19.

*11 The Law and the Prophets are the Jewish scriptures, ie the Old Testament.

*34 Dry grass was used to fuel cooking fires.

from thistles? A good tree bears good fruit but a bad tree bears bad fruit. ¹⁸Every tree that bears not good fruit will be cut down and thrown into the fire."

Out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaks

¹⁹"For a righteous man brings forth good from the good stored in his heart, but a wicked man brings forth evil from the evil stored in his heart."

²⁰"Out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaks."

Not all who do miracles in the name of Jesus are known to the Lord

²¹"Not everyone who says to me, 'Lord, Lord,' will enter the kingdom of God, but only they who do the will of my Father in heaven."

²²"Many shall say to me on the day of judgement, 'Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy in your name and drive out demons in your name and do many miracles?'"

²³Then will I declare to them, 'I never knew you. Away from me you evil doers.'

²⁴"Why call me 'Lord, Lord,' and yet not do what I say?"

Parable of man who built his house upon the rock

²⁵"Everyone who hears my words and puts them into practice, is like the wise man who built his house upon the rock."

²⁶"The rains came down and the floods rose up and the winds beat against that house, yet it did not fall, for its foundation was on the rock."

The man who built his house upon the sand

²⁷"But everyone who hears my words and does them not, is like the foolish man who built his house upon the sand."

²⁸"The rains came down and the floods rose up and the winds beat against that house and it fell, and great was its fall."

The golden rule sums up the scriptures

²⁹"So in all things, do unto others what you would have others do unto you, for this sums up the scriptures."

The crowds amazed at the authority of Jesus

³⁰When Jesus had finished his teaching the crowds were amazed, for he taught as one who had authority and not as their teachers of the Law.

Weeping repentant sinful woman anoints feet of Jesus with perfumed oil

³¹One of the Pharisees invited Jesus to eat in his home. As Jesus reclined at the table, a woman who had lived a sinful life in the town came in to him. She brought with her an alabaster jar of perfumed oil.

³²She stood behind Jesus at his feet, weeping and wetting his feet with her tears. Then she wiped his feet with her hair and kissed them and anointed them with the perfumed oil.

The Pharisee critical of Jesus for allowing such a woman to touch him

³³Now the Pharisee who had invited Jesus to his home saw what the woman was doing and thought to himself, "If this man were a prophet he would know what kind of woman is touching him."

Parable of the forgiving moneylender

³⁴Jesus said to him, "Simon, I have something to say to you."

He said, "Speak teacher."

³⁵Jesus said, "Two men owed money to a certain money lender. One owed him 500 denarii^F and the other 50 denarii. Neither of them had the money to pay him back so he cancelled the debts of both of them. Now which of the two do you think will love him more?"

³⁶Simon replied, "I suppose the one who had the greater debt cancelled."

³⁷Jesus said, "You have judged correctly."

Then turning toward the woman he said to him, "Behold this woman, when I came into your house you did not give me water for my feet, but she has washed my feet with her tears and wiped them with her hair."

³⁸"You did not give me a kiss, but she has not stopped kissing my feet. You did not give me oil for my head, but she has anointed my feet and head with perfumed oil."

³⁹"Therefore I say to you her sins which are many have been forgiven, for she has shown great love. But one to whom little is forgiven, loves little."

Jesus forgives the woman her sins

⁴⁰Then Jesus said to the woman, "Your sins are forgiven. Your faith has saved you. Go in peace."

⁴¹The other guests said among themselves, "Who is this who even forgives sins?"

10

Jesus heals Peter's mother-in-law of a high fever

¹Jesus then went to the home of Peter. Now Peter's mother-in-law was suffering from a high fever and they told Jesus about her. ²Jesus stood over her and rebuked the fever and it left her, then Jesus took her by the hand and she arose at once and began to serve them.

Jesus arises while still dark to pray in a solitary place

³Very early the next morning, while it was still dark Jesus arose and left the house and went off to a solitary place where he prayed.

⁴Later Peter and his companions went looking for him. When they found him they said, "Everybody is looking for you."

Jesus to preach the good news in other towns

⁵They tried to prevent Jesus from leaving

*17 A denarius (denarii is plural) was a Roman silver coin worth about a day's wage.

MATT-MARK-LUKE 10

Capernaum but he said to them, **“I must preach the good news of the kingdom of God to the other towns also, for that is why I was sent.”**

Jesus travels throughout Galilee teaching and healing

⁶So Jesus went throughout Galilee, preaching the good news of the kingdom, teaching in the synagogues and healing every disease and sickness among the people.

Vast crowds begin to follow Jesus

⁷Soon vast crowds, from Galilee, Jerusalem, Judea and from across the Jordan began to follow Jesus wherever he went.

Jesus heals a leper

⁸While Jesus was teaching in one of the towns, there came a man who was covered with leprosy. He fell with his face to the ground and pleaded with Jesus saying, “Lord, if you are willing, you can make me clean.”

⁹Jesus said, **“I am willing,”** and he reached out his hand and touched the man saying, **“Be clean.”** And immediately the leprosy left him.

The healed leper disobeys Jesus and spreads news of his healing

¹⁰Jesus then commanded him saying, **“Tell nobody, but go up to Jerusalem and show yourself to the priests. Then offer the sacrifice that Moses commanded for your cleansing, as a testimony to them.”**

¹¹But the man went about speaking freely of his healing.

Jesus has to stay mostly in the countryside because of the crowds

¹²Because of this, Jesus could no longer openly enter a town. So he stayed mostly out in the countryside.

Jesus and his disciples try to escape the crowds

¹³Jesus returned to Capernaum, but because of the crowds around him he said to his disciples, **“Let us cross to the other side of the lake.”**

The Son of Man has no place to lay his head

¹⁴A teacher of the Law came up to Jesus and said, “Teacher, I will follow you wherever you go.”

¹⁵Jesus replied, **“Foxes have holes and birds have nests, but the Son of Man has no place to lay his head.”**

Let the spiritually dead bury the dead

¹⁶One of his disciples said to him, “Lord, first let me go and bury my father.”

¹⁷Jesus replied, **“Follow me. Let the dead bury the dead.”** ^{F*}

Anyone who looks back is unfit to serve in the kingdom of God

¹⁸Another disciple said, “I will follow you Lord, but first let me go back and say goodbye to my family.”

¹⁹Jesus replied, **“Any man who puts his hand to the plow and looks back is not fit**

for service in the kingdom of God.”

Jesus calms the storm

²⁰When evening came, Jesus got into a boat with his disciples. Other boats also followed. As they were crossing the lake a furious storm arose without warning and waves began to break over the boat so that it was almost swamped. They were in great danger.

²¹But Jesus was asleep on a cushion in the stern. The disciples awoke him crying out, “Master save us! Do you not care that we perish!”

²²Jesus replied, **“O you of little faith, why do you fear?”** Then rising up he rebuked the wind and the waves saying, **“Peace! Be still!”** And the lake became completely calm.

²³The disciples were awed and said, “What kind of man is this, who even the wind and waves obey?”

A naked and demon possessed man

²⁴When they arrived at the other side of the lake, as Jesus stepped out of the boat, a naked man possessed by an unclean spirit came running from the tombs and fell on his knees in front of Jesus.



A sudden storm on the Lake of Galilee.

²⁵This man lived in the tombs and was so violent that no one could pass that way, nor could they bind him any more, not even with chains, for he had been chained hand and foot, but had torn the chains apart and broken the irons on his feet.

²⁶No one was strong enough to subdue this man and for a long time he had gone naked and lived in the tombs. Night and day he would cry out and cut himself with stones.

The head demon recognises Jesus

²⁷Now as he knelt before Jesus the demon shouted at the top of his voice, “What do you want with me Jesus son of the Most High God? Have you come here to torment me before the appointed time?”

²⁸For Jesus had said to him, **“Come out of this man you unclean spirit.”**

²⁹Jesus said to him, **“What is your name?”** He replied, “My name is Legion, for we are

*17 In the sense of ‘Let the spiritually dead bury the physically dead.’

many.^{F*} ³⁰Then he begged Jesus over and over not to send them to the Pit.^{F*}

Jesus permits demons to enter a large herd of pigs

³¹Now a large herd of pigs was feeding on the hillside nearby. So the demon begged Jesus saying, "Allow us to go into the pigs."

³²Jesus gave them permission and the spirits came out and entered the pigs.

The pigs drown in the lake

³³Immediately the herd of pigs, about 2000 in number, rushed down the steep bank into the lake and were drowned.

The local people fear Jesus and plead with him to leave their region

³⁴Those tending the pigs ran off and reported what had happened in the town and countryside and the people came out to see for themselves.

³⁵They saw the man who had been possessed, sitting at the feet of Jesus, dressed and in his right mind. But they were fearful and pleaded with Jesus to leave their region.

Jesus sends the delivered man back home to tell others what happened

³⁶As Jesus was getting back into the boat the man who had been delivered^{F*} begged to go with him. But Jesus said, "**Return home to your family and friends and tell them how the Lord has had mercy on you.**"

³⁷So the man went away and began to tell the people in the towns round about what Jesus had done for him, and all the people were amazed.

Jesus returns to Capernaum

³⁸When Jesus returned by boat to Capernaum, a huge crowd gathered around him while he was still by the lake edge.

Jesus goes to heal the daughter of Jairus

³⁹Then one of the synagogue rulers named Jairus fell at his feet and pleaded earnestly with him saying, "My young daughter is dying. Please come and lay your hands on her so she will be healed and live."

⁴⁰She was his only daughter, aged about twelve years. So Jesus went with Jairus and the huge crowd followed and pressed around him.

A woman touches cloak of Jesus and is healed of her bleeding

⁴¹There was a woman in the crowd who had been suffering from bleeding for twelve years. She had endured much under the care of many doctors and had spent all her money, yet instead of getting better she had got worse.

⁴²She came up behind Jesus in the crowd and touched his cloak, for she thought, "If I just touch him I will be healed." Immediately her bleeding stopped and she knew within her body

*29 A legion was an army division of approx 6000 soldiers.

*30 The Pit was believed to be the darkest region of the spirit world of the dead as opposed to Paradise, the most glorious region.

*18 Delivered means to have cast out an unclean spirit.

that she had been healed.

Jesus asks who touched him

⁴³Jesus felt power go out from him and turned around in the crowd and said, "**Who touched me?**"

⁴⁴His disciples replied, "The crowd presses against you and you ask, 'Who touched me?'"

⁴⁵Jesus said, "**Power has gone out from me,**" and he kept looking around to see who had done it.

The woman's faith healed her

⁴⁶The woman came and fell down at his feet, trembling with fear, and told him what she had done.

⁴⁷Jesus said to her, "**Courage daughter, your faith has healed you. Go in peace and be freed from your suffering.**"

Jairus told his daughter is dead

⁴⁸While Jesus was still speaking, some men came and said to Jairus, "Your daughter has died. Do not bother the teacher any more."

⁴⁹But Jesus said to Jarius, "**Fear not, just believe.**" And he did not let anyone else follow him except Peter, James and John.

The mourners laugh at the words of Jesus

⁵⁰When they came to the house of Jairus there was a noisy crowd outside with flute players and people crying and wailing loudly.

⁵¹Jesus entered the house and said, "**Why all this noise and wailing? The girl is not dead, she is sleeping.**" But they laughed at him.

Jesus raises the daughter of Jairus to life

⁵²Jesus sent them all outside, and taking the girl's father and mother and the three apostles who were with him, he went in to where the girl lay. Then he took her by the hand and said to her, "**Young women, I say to you, arise.**"

⁵³Immediately the girl stood on her feet and began to walk around. At this they were astonished.

⁵⁴Jesus gave strict orders not to let anyone know about this, and told them to give her something to eat.

Jesus heals two blind men

⁵⁵As Jesus went on from there, two blind men followed him calling out, "Have mercy on us Son of David!"^{F*}

⁵⁶When Jesus reached the house where he stayed, the blind men followed him in. Jesus said to them, "**Do you believe I am able to do this?**"

⁵⁷They replied, "Yes Lord."

⁵⁸So he touched their eyes and said, "**According to your faith it will be done to you,**" and their sight was restored.

⁵⁹Then Jesus warned them sternly, "**See that no one hears about this.**" (But they later spread the news over all that region.)

A mute demon driven out

⁶⁰As the two men were leaving, a man who

*55 'Son of David' was another title among the Jews for the Christ or Messiah.

MATT-MARK-LUKE 11

was demon-possessed and could not speak, was brought into Jesus. When the unclean spirit was driven out, the man who had been dumb spoke.

⁶¹All were amazed and said, "Nothing like this has ever been seen in Israel."

11

Jesus has compassion on the crowds

¹Jesus continued going through all the towns and villages of Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, preaching the good news of the kingdom and healing every disease and sickness.

²When he saw the crowds he had compassion on them for they were harassed and helpless, like sheep without a shepherd.

Jesus gives his twelve apostles authority to preach and heal also

³Jesus said to his disciples, "The harvest is great but the workers are few. Therefore ask the Lord of the harvest to send more workers into the field." ⁴And calling his twelve apostles to him, he gave them authority to drive out unclean spirits, and to heal every disease and sickness.

The twelve apostles sent out to the lost sheep of Israel

⁵Then he commanded them to go out two by two and instructed them saying, "Go not among the Gentiles, nor enter any town of the Samaritans. Go rather to the lost sheep of Israel and preach this message, 'The kingdom of God is near you.'"

Apostles given power

⁶"Heal the sick, raise the dead, cleanse those who have leprosy, drive out demons. Freely you have received, freely give."

The Twelve to be cared for by the people

⁷"Take no money with you, or bag for your journey, nor spare tunic or sandals. Only a staff, for the labourer is worthy of his keep."

⁸"In whatever town or village you enter search for a worthy person and stay at his home until you leave. ⁹As you enter his home give it your blessing. If the home is deserving, your peace will descend upon it. If it is not your peace will return to you."

Apostles to shake the dust off their feet when not welcomed

¹⁰"If any will not welcome you or hear your words, shake the dust off your feet when you leave that home or town. I say to you, it will be more bearable for Sodom and Gomorrah on the day of judgement than for that town."

The twelve apostles going out like sheep among wolves

¹¹"I am sending you out like sheep among wolves. Be as wise as serpents and innocent as doves."

¹²"A servant is not superior to his master, but a servant who is perfect can become

like his master. ¹³However the master of the house has been called Satan, therefore how much more those of his household."

¹⁴"But fear not those who can only destroy the body. Rather fear the One who is able to destroy both body and soul in Gehenna." ^{F*}

Not a sparrow falls to the ground without the will of the Father

¹⁵"Are not two sparrows sold for a copper coin? Yet not one of them falls to the ground without the will of your Father."

¹⁶"So fear not, you are of more value than many sparrows. Even the very hairs of your head are numbered."

Jesus will acknowledge before the Father all who acknowledge him before men

¹⁷"Whoever acknowledges me before men, I will acknowledge also before my Father in heaven. But whoever disowns me before men, I too will disown them before my Father in heaven."

¹⁸"He who receives you receives me, and he who receives me, receives the one who sent me."

Charitable believers will not lose their reward

¹⁹"Truly I say to you, anyone who believes in me, who gives even a cup of cold water to a little child in your name, shall not lose his reward."

Whoever loves his family more than Jesus is not worthy of him

²⁰"But anyone who loves his father, mother, son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me. And anyone who does not take up his cross^{F*} and follow me is not worthy of me."

Whoever loses his life for Jesus sake will find it

²¹"Whoever seeks to save his life will lose it, but whoever loses his life for my sake will find it."

The twelve apostles sent out on their missions two by two

²²Then Jesus sent out the Twelve two by two on their missions. They preached repentance, cast out many demons and anointed many sick people with oil and healed them.

Jesus visits the town of Nain

²³Soon afterward Jesus went to a town called Nain.^{F*} His remaining disciples and a great crowd went with him.

Jesus raises a widow's son to life

²⁴As Jesus approached the town gate the body of a young man who had died was being carried out. He was the only son of his mother who was a widow. A large crowd from the town was with her.

²⁵When Jesus saw the widow his heart went

*13 See note regarding Gehenna, Matt-Mark-Luke 7:32.

*20 To 'carry ones cross' was a figure of speech even in the days of Jesus. It means to willingly shoulder a burden. See also (Matt-Mark-Luke 17:18.)

*23 Nain was about 35 km south of Capernaum.

out to her and he said, **“Weep not.”** Then he touched the bier and those carrying it stood still. He said, **“Young man, I say to you arise.”**

²⁶The young man sat up and began to speak and Jesus gave him back to his mother.

²⁷All were filled with awe and praised God saying, **“A mighty prophet has come among us.”** Some said, **“God himself has come among his people.”**

12

John the Baptist sends disciples to Jesus

¹News about Jesus had now spread throughout Judea. The disciples of John the Baptist's also told him about these things in prison. So John sent two of them to enquire of Jesus.

²When John's disciples came to Jesus they said, **“John the Baptist sent us to say to you, ‘Are you the one who was to come or should we look for another?’”**

Jesus sends John's disciples back to John to report what they have seen

³Now that day in the presence of John's two disciples Jesus had healed many who had sicknesses and unclean spirits and had given sight to many who were blind.

⁴So he said to them, **“Return and report to John what you have seen and heard. The blind receive sight, the lame walk, they who have leprosy are cleansed, the deaf hear, the dead are raised and the good news is preached to the poor.”**

⁵**“Blessed is he who believes in me.”**

Jesus speaks of John the Baptist

⁶After John's messengers left, Jesus spoke to the crowd about John the Baptist saying, **“What did you go out into the desert to see? A reed swayed by the wind? A man dressed in fine clothes? Those who wear fine clothes and live in luxury are found in palaces.”**

⁷**“What then did you go out to see? A prophet? Yes, and I say to you he is more than a prophet. He is the one about whom it is written, ‘I will send my messenger who will prepare the way before me.’”** ^{F*}

⁸**“Truly I say to you, among those born of women there has not risen one greater than John, yet he who is meekest in the kingdom of God is greater than him.”** ^{F*}

Forceful men will grasp the kingdom of God

⁹**“From the early days of John until now, men have been crowding toward the kingdom of God, and forceful ones will grasp hold of it.”**

John the Baptist is the Elijah who was to come

¹⁰**“The prophets prophesied of John, and if**

you are willing to accept it, he is the who was to come. ^{F*} **He who has ears let him hear.”**

Both John the Baptist and Jesus criticised by this generation

¹¹**“But the people of this generation are like children in the marketplace who say to one another, ‘We played the flute and you did not dance,’ or ‘we wailed and you did not weep.’”**

¹²**“For John the Baptist came neither eating bread nor drinking wine and they said, ‘He has a demon.’ The Son of Man came eating and drinking and they say, ‘Here is a glutton and a drunkard, a friend of tax collectors and sinners.’”**

¹³**“But truth is proved by her fruits in time.”**

Jesus denounces the cities of Chorazin, Bethsaida and Capernaum

¹⁴Then Jesus began to denounce the cities in which most of his miracles had been done, for they had not repented.

¹⁵**“Woe to you Chorazin. Woe to you Bethsaida. If the miracles performed in you had been done in Tyre and Sidon they would have repented long ago. It will be more bearable for Tyre and Sidon on the day of judgement than for you.”**

¹⁶**“And you Capernaum, will you be lifted up to the skies? No, you will go down to Hades.”** ^{F*} **For if the miracles performed in you had been performed in Sodom, it would have remained to this day. It will be more bearable for Sodom on the day of judgement than for you.”**

Truth hidden from the self-wise and learned but revealed to the humble

¹⁷At that time Jesus prayed saying, **“I praise you Father, Lord of heaven and earth, for you have hidden these things from the self-wise and the learned, and revealed them to the humble in heart. Yes Father for such was your gracious will.”**

Jesus truly knows the Father and can reveal him

¹⁸Then Jesus said to the people, **“All things have been entrusted to me by my Father. No one truly knows the Son except the Father, and no one truly knows the Father except the Son, and anyone to whom the Son chooses to reveal him.”**

Come unto me all you weary and heavy laden

¹⁹**“Come unto me all you who are weary and heavy laden, and I will give you rest.”**

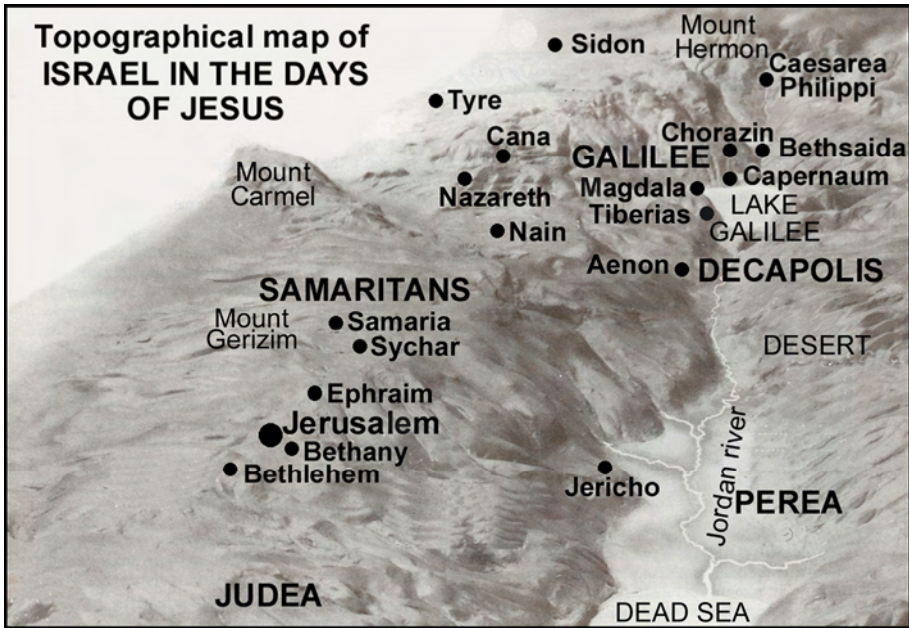
²⁰**“Take my yoke upon you and learn from me, for I am meek and humble in heart and you will find rest for your souls. For my yoke is easy and my burden is light.”**

^{*10} John denied that he was the literal Elijah. See explanatory note on Matt-Mark-Luke 17:37.

^{*16} Hades was the Greek term for the spirit world of the dead which was believed to be located inside the earth. It was equivalent to the Hebrew term ‘Sheol’ of the Old Testament (Ecclesiastes 4:18).

^{*7} This prophecy is found in Malachi 3:1.

^{*8} Jesus was most likely referring to himself. See verse 20 of this chapter and also verses 24-25 in the following chapter.



Topographical map of Israel showing the great variation in elevation of the land.

13

The Sabbath made for man not man for the Sabbath

¹One Sabbath day Jesus and his disciples passed through some grain fields. The disciples were hungry and began to pluck some of the heads of grain and eat them.

²When the Pharisees saw this they said to Jesus, “Look your disciples are doing what is unlawful on the Sabbath.” ^{F*}

³Jesus answered, “**Have you not read what David did when he was hungry? How he entered the Tabernacle and gave his men consecrated bread which was not lawful for them to eat, only for the priests.**”

⁴“**Or have you not read in the Law how on the Sabbath the priests in the Temple break the Sabbath rest, yet are innocent before God?** ⁵I tell you, one greater than the Temple is here.”

⁶“**If you had known what these words mean, ‘I desire mercy, not sacrifice,’ you would not have condemned the innocent.**”

⁷“**The Sabbath is made for man, not man for the Sabbath. The Son of Man is Lord of the Sabbath.**”

A man with a shrivelled hand healed on the Sabbath

⁸That same day Jesus went into their synagogue and a man with a shrivelled hand was there. Looking for a reason to accuse Jesus the Pharisees said to him, “Is it lawful to

heal on the Sabbath?”

⁹Jesus said to the man, “**Stand up here in front of everybody.**” The man did so, then Jesus said to them, “**What is lawful on the Sabbath, to do good or to do evil, to save life or to destroy it?**”

¹⁰“**If any of you had a sheep and it fell into a pit on the Sabbath day would you not lift it out? How much more valuable is a man than a sheep? Therefore it is lawful to do good on the Sabbath.**”

¹¹And he looked around at them indignantly, grieved at the hardness of their hearts. ¹²Then he said to the man, “**Stretch out your hand.**” The man stretched it out and it became perfectly restored, as sound as the other.

Pharisees incensed, plot to kill Jesus

¹³The Pharisees were incensed at this and went out and plotted with the Herodians as to how they might kill Jesus.

Jesus returns to Capernaum

¹⁴Aware of this, Jesus withdrew from that place and returned to Capernaum. Many followed him there and he healed all their sick.

Great crowds push to touch Jesus

¹⁵Because of the crowds, Jesus asked his disciples to have a small boat ready for him to prevent the people from crowding him. For he had healed so many that those with diseases kept pushing forward to touch him.

Jesus and his disciples unable to eat because of the crowds

¹⁶Then Jesus entered a house, but again

*2 ie Harvesting grain.

such a great crowd gathered that he and his disciples were not even able to eat.

The family of Jesus set out to take charge of him thinking he is out of his mind

¹⁷When the family of Jesus heard about all these things they set out to take charge of him saying, "He is out of his mind."

Jesus said to be possessed by Satan

¹⁸About that time Jesus delivered and healed a demon-possessed man who was blind and dumb so that he could both see and speak. The people were astonished and said, "Could this be the Christ?"



Jesus sometimes taught large crowds while sitting in a fishing boat like these on Lake Galilee.

¹⁹Now whenever a possessed person saw Jesus they would fall down before him and the demons would cry out, "You are the Son of God." But always Jesus gave them strict orders to be silent and not reveal who he was.

²⁰But the teachers of the Law who had come from Jerusalem said of Jesus, "He is possessed by Satan. It is by the prince of demons that he drives out demons."

The Pharisees ask for a sign from heaven

²¹Some Pharisees said to him, "Teacher, show us a sign from heaven."

²²Jesus answered, "A wicked and adulterous generation ask for a sign."

Only the sign of the prophet Jonah to be given

²³"But none will be given, except the sign of the prophet Jonah. For as Jonah was three days and nights in the belly of a huge fish, so the Son of Man will be three days and nights in the heart of the earth."

The men of Nineveh will condemn this generation

²⁴"The men of Nineveh will rise on the day of judgement and condemn this generation, for they repented at the preaching of Jonah, and now one greater than Jonah is here."

The queen of Sheba will also condemn this generation

²⁵"The queen of Sheba will also condemn this generation. For she came from the ends of the earth to hear Solomon's wisdom and now one greater than Solomon is here."

How can Satan drive out Satan?

²⁶Then Jesus called the teachers of the Law to him and said, "How can Satan drive out Satan? A kingdom divided against itself cannot stand. If Satan opposes himself he is divided and his end has come."

²⁷"And if I drive out demons by Satan, by whom do your own people drive them out? Let them be your judges."

Demons are driven out by the power of the Holy Spirit

²⁸"No one can enter a strong man's house and carry off his goods unless he first ties up the strong man. Then he can rob his house."

²⁹"But if I drive out demons by the power of the Holy Spirit, then the kingdom of God has come among you."

Blasphemy against the Holy Spirit an eternal sin

³⁰"Truly I say to you, all sins and blasphemies of men will be forgiven, but whoever blasphemes against the Holy Spirit will never be forgiven, neither in this age nor in the age to come. ³¹He has committed an eternal sin."

³²Jesus said this because they had said, "He has an unclean spirit."

A tree is known by its fruit

³³"A tree is known by its fruit. A good tree brings forth good fruit, and a bad tree bad fruit."

³⁴"You brood of vipers, how can you who are evil say anything good? For out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaks."

Every careless word to be accounted for on the day of judgement

³⁵"On the day of judgement men will give an account for every careless word they have uttered. By your words you will be either justified or condemned."

The final state of this generation who reject Jesus will be worse than at first

³⁶"When an unclean spirit is driven out of a man it goes through arid places seeking rest, but does not find it. Then it says, 'I will return to my house which I left.'"

³⁷"When it arrives it finds the house unoccupied, swept clean, and put in order. Then it goes and brings along seven other spirits more evil than itself and they go in and live there. ³⁸Therefore the final state of that man is worse than the first. That is how it will be with this wicked generation."

Blessed are they who obey the word of God

³⁹As Jesus was saying these things a woman in the crowd called out, "Blessed is the mother who gave you birth and the breast you sucked."

⁴⁰Jesus replied, "Blessed rather are those who hear the word of God and obey it."

The mother and brothers of Jesus arrive

⁴¹Then the mother of Jesus and his brothers

MATT-MARK-LUKE 14

arrived. But they were unable to get near him because of the crowd. So they stood outside the house and sent someone to call him out.

⁴²A crowd was sitting around Jesus when they told him, "Your mother and brothers are outside wanting to speak to you."

All who do the will of the Father are family to Jesus

⁴³Jesus said, "Who is my mother? Who are my brothers?" Then pointing to his disciples sitting around him he said, "Here are my mother and my brothers. ⁴³For whoever does the will of my Father in heaven is my brother and sister and mother."

14

Jesus again teaches from a boat

¹That same day Jesus left the house and sat by the lake. But again such a vast crowd gathered around him that he got into a boat and sat there to teach, while the people stood on the beach.

²Jesus taught them many things in parables.

The parable of the sower

³"A sower went out to sow seed. As he scattered the seed, some fell along the pathway and the birds came and ate it up."

⁴"Some fell on rocky places where there was little soil. It sprang up quickly, but when the sun became hot the seedlings withered, for they had no root in the shallow soil."

⁵"Other seed fell among thorns, which grew up and choked the plants."

⁶"Still other seed fell on good soil where it produced thirty, sixty, or a hundred times what was sown."

⁷"He who has ears let him hear."



A sower sowing seed.

Why Jesus spoke in parables

⁸The disciples said to Jesus, "Why do you speak to the crowd in parables?"

⁹Jesus answered, "It is given to you to

understand the secrets of the kingdom of God, but not to them. For whoever has, will be given more, but to whoever has not, even what he has will be taken from him. That is why I speak to them in parables."

¹⁰"In them is fulfilled the prophecy of Isaiah, 'You will hear but never understand. You will see but never perceive. For the hearts of this people are hardened, and their ears dull, and their eyes unseeing, otherwise they would understand, and repent and be healed.'"

Many prophets and righteous men longed to see what the disciples see

¹¹"But blessed are your eyes and ears, for they see and hear. ¹²Many prophets and righteous men have longed to see what you see and hear, but did not."

The meaning of the parable of the sower

¹³"Did you not understand this parable? How then will you understand any parable?"

¹⁴"This is the meaning of the parable. The sower is sowing the word of God. The seed that fell on the path and was eaten by birds represents those who hear but do not understand. ¹⁵Then the devil comes and snatches away the word from their hearts so they might not believe and be saved."

¹⁶"The seed that fell on rocky places represents those who receive the word with joy when they first hear it, but because they are shallow and have no root, when temptation comes they fall away."

¹⁷"The seed that fell among thorns represents those who hear, but their progress is choked by the worries, riches, and pleasures of life, therefore they do not mature."

¹⁸"But the seed on good soil represents those with honest and good hearts, who hearing the word, hold it fast and by enduring produce a crop. Some thirty-fold, some sixty-fold, and some a hundred fold."

The parable of the seeds and the grain harvest

¹⁹Jesus again spoke to the people in parables. ²⁰"This is what the kingdom of God is like: A man sows grain in the ground and the seed sprouts and grows all by itself, though the man does not know how."

²¹"As soon as the grain is ripe the man puts the sickle to it, for the harvest has come."

The parable of the wheat and the tares

²²"Again, the kingdom of God is like a man who sowed good seed in his field, but while he was sleeping an enemy came and sowed tares^{F*} among the wheat. When the wheat sprouted the tares also appeared."

²³"The man's servants came to him and said, 'Sir did you not sow good seed in your field? Where then did these weeds come from?'"

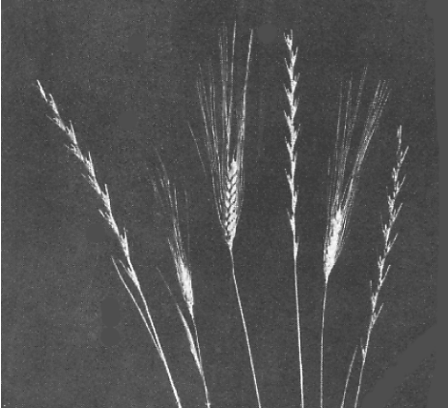
*22 Tares are a type of rye grass called Darnel that resembles wheat when growing.

²⁴“He replied, ‘An enemy has done this.’”

²⁵“The servants said, ‘Shall we go and pull up the weeds?’”

²⁶“He answered, ‘No, for while you are pulling up the tares you may pull up the wheat with them.’”

²⁷“Let them both grow together until the day of harvest. At that time I will order the harvesters to first collect the tares and tie them in bundles to be burned. Then they will gather the wheat into my barn.”



Fully grown tares and wheat (with grain heads). Both look similar as young seedlings.

The parable of the mustard seed

²⁸Jesus told them another parable. “The kingdom of God is like a mustard seed which a man took and planted in his field. ²⁹Though it is the smallest of all your seeds, when it grows it is the largest of garden plants and becomes a tree, so that the birds of the air come and perch in its branches.”

The parable of the yeast and the dough

³⁰He told them still another parable: “The kingdom of God is like yeast that a woman took and mixed into a large amount of dough, until it worked all the way through.”

Jesus always used parables

³¹With many similar parables Jesus taught the people as much as they could understand. He did not teach anything to them without also using a parable. ³²But when he was alone with his disciples he explained everything fully.

The meaning of the parable of the wheat and the tares

³³Then Jesus left the crowd and went back into the house. His disciples came to him and said, “Explain to us the parable of the tares in the field.”

³⁴Jesus answered, “The one who sowed the good seed is the Son of Man, and the field is the world.”

³⁵“The good seed represents the sons of the kingdom, and the weeds are the sons of



The mustard tree of Israel.

the evil one and the enemy who sows them is the devil. ³⁶The harvest is the end of the age, and the harvesters are the angels.”

³⁷“Just as the tares are pulled up and burned in the fire, so will it be at the end of the age. ³⁸The Son of Man will send out his angels and they will weed out of his kingdom all who cause sin and do evil, and will throw them into the furnace of fire where they will weep and grind their teeth.”

³⁹“Then the righteous will shine like the sun in the kingdom of their Father.”

⁴⁰“He who has ears let him hear.”

The parable of treasure hidden in a field

⁴¹“The kingdom of God is like treasure hidden in a field. When a man found the treasure, he hid it again. Then in his joy he went and sold all that he had and bought the field.”

The parable of the pearl of great price

⁴²“Again, the kingdom of God is like a merchant searching for fine pearls. When he found one of great price he went away and sold all that he had and bought it.”

The parable of the catch of all kinds of fish

⁴³“Once again, the kingdom of God is like a net that is let down into the lake and catches all kinds of fish. When it is full the fishermen drag it up on the shore then sit down and sort the good fish into baskets, but throw the worthless fish away.”

⁴⁴“So will it be at the end of the age. The angels will come and separate the wicked

MATT-MARK-LUKE 15

from the righteous, and cast the wicked into the furnace of fire where they will weep and grind their teeth.”

Knowledge of the kingdom of God like new treasure added to old

⁴⁵Jesus said to his disciples, “Have you understood all these things?”

They replied, “We have.”

⁴⁶So he said to them, “Every teacher of the Law who becomes instructed regarding the kingdom of God is like the owner of a house who can bring out of his storeroom new treasures as well as old.”

Jesus again visits Nazareth

⁴⁷When Jesus had finished these parables he returned again to his home town of Nazareth and went to teach the people in their synagogue.

The brothers of Jesus named

⁴⁸The people of Nazareth were astonished and asked, “Where did this man get his wisdom and these miraculous powers? ⁴⁹Is not this the carpenter, the son of Mary,^{F*} and are not his brothers James, Joseph, Simon and Jude? And are not all his sisters with us? ⁵⁰Where then did he get all these powers?” And they took offence at him.

Few miracles done in Nazareth due to lack of faith

⁵¹Jesus said to them, “Only in his home town and in his own house is a prophet without honour.”

⁵²Jesus did few miracles in Nazareth because of their lack of faith except to lay his hands on a few who were sick and heal them.

15

Herodias has John the Baptist beheaded

¹Now an opportune time arose for Herodias, the wife of Herod to carry out her desire to kill John the Baptist.

²Herod gave a feast on his birthday for his officials and commanders and the leading men of Galilee. The daughter of Herodias came in and danced for them.

³She so pleased the king and his guests that Herod said to her, “Ask me for anything you want and I will give it to you, up to half my kingdom.”

⁴She went out and said to her mother, “What shall I ask for?”

⁵Herodius said to her, “Ask for the head of John the Baptist.”

⁶She returned to the king and said, “I want the head of John the Baptist, on a plate right now.”

⁷The king was greatly distressed at this but because of his promise before his guests he did not refuse her. ⁸An executioner went and beheaded John in the prison and brought back

his head on a plate. He presented it to the daughter of Herodias and she took it to her mother.

⁹When John’s disciples heard what had happened they came and took his body and laid it in a tomb.

The Twelve return from their missions

¹⁰About this time, the Twelve returned from their missions. They reported to Jesus all that they had done and taught, and also what had happened to John.

Jesus desires to take the Twelve to a quiet place by boat for rest

¹¹Because so many people were coming and going and they did not even have a chance to eat, Jesus said to his apostles, “Come with me to a quiet place and get some rest.”

¹²So they went away by themselves in a boat to a solitary place.

A great crowd await their arrival

¹³But many saw them depart, and ran on foot around the lake to where they were headed, gathering others from towns as they went, and they got there ahead of them. ¹⁴When Jesus and his apostles landed they saw a great crowd waiting for them.

¹⁵Jesus had compassion on them, for they were like sheep without a shepherd. So he began to teach them many things.

The first miracle of the loaves and fishes

¹⁶When it was late in the day the apostles said to Jesus, “This is a remote place and it is already very late. Send the people away now so they can go to the villages and buy themselves food to eat.”

¹⁷Jesus said, “You give them something to eat.”

¹⁸They said, “It would cost about 200 denarii^{F*} to feed all these! Are we to go and spend that much on bread for them to eat?”

¹⁹Jesus asked, “How many loaves have you? Go and see.”

²⁰They came back and said, “We have five loaves of bread, and two fishes.”

²¹Jesus directed the Twelve to have all the people sit in groups on the green grass. So the people sat down in groups of hundreds and fifties. ²²Then taking the five loaves and the two fishes, Jesus looked up to heaven, gave thanks, and broke the loaves. He then gave them to his apostles to hand out to the people. He also divided the two fish among them all.

²³All the people ate and were satisfied, and afterward the apostles picked up twelve basketfuls of broken pieces of bread and fish.

5000 men, plus women and children fed

²⁴The number of men who had eaten was about 5000, besides women and children.

The apostles leave by boat while Jesus dismisses the crowd and then prays alone

²⁵Then Jesus told his apostles to get into the

*49 It is believed that Joseph had died by this time.

*18 About eight months wages for a labourer.

boat and go on ahead of him to Bethsaida while he dismissed the crowd.

²⁶After the crowd had departed, Jesus went up into the hills alone to pray.

Jesus walks on the water

²⁷After darkness had fallen, Jesus was alone on the land and the boat was far out on the lake, battered by waves. ²⁸The apostles were straining at the oars, for the wind was against them.

²⁹About the fourth watch of the night,^{F*} Jesus went out to them, walking on the lake and made as if to pass by them.

³⁰When the apostles saw him walking on the water they were terrified and cried out in fear saying, "It is a spirit!" But Jesus called to them and said, "**Take courage. It is I. Fear not.**"



Artist's view of Jesus walking on the water.

Peter also walks on the water

³¹Peter called back, "Lord, if it be you, command me to come to you on the water!"

³²Jesus replied, "**Come!**"

³³So Peter stepped out of the boat and began to walk upon the water toward Jesus. But when he felt the strong wind he feared and began to sink and cried out, "Lord save me!"

³⁴Immediately Jesus reached out his hand and caught him, saying, "**O you of little faith, why did you doubt?**"

³⁵As soon as they got into the boat the wind ceased. Then those in the boat worshipped

Jesus saying, "Truly you are the Son of God."

All the sick are healed at Bethsaida even by touching his garment

³⁶When they had crossed over they landed near Bethsaida. The men of that place recognised Jesus and sent word to all the surrounding countryside.

³⁷The people carried all their sick to Jesus on beds and begged him to let the sick just touch the edge of his garment. And all who touched him were healed.

16

Who is this man Jesus?

¹Jesus was now well known in Galilee, but some were saying, "He is Elijah," others claimed, "He is a prophet, like one of the prophets of old." ²Still others said, "John the Baptist has been raised from the dead, that is why miraculous powers are at work in him."

³When Herod heard these things he said, "John I beheaded, who then is this man," and tried to see him.

The Pharisees ask Jesus why his disciples break tradition by not washing their hands before eating

⁴Now some Pharisees and teachers of the Law who had come from Jerusalem saw disciples of Jesus eating food without first washing their hands.

⁵The Pharisees never eat without first washing their hands, holding to the tradition of the elders. They also observe many other traditions.

⁶So they said to Jesus, "Why do your disciples break the tradition of the elders by eating food with defiled hands?"

Jesus condemns traditions of the Pharisees

⁷Jesus replied, "Why do you break the commandments of God for the sake of your traditions? ⁸For God said 'Honour your father and your mother' and 'Anyone who curses his father or mother must be put to death.'

⁹"But you teach, if a man says to his father or mother 'Whatever help you might have received from me is now a gift devoted to God' he need no longer do anything more for his parents."

¹⁰"Therefore you nullify the word of God for the sake of your traditions, and you teach many other things like that."

¹¹"You hypocrites, Isaiah was right when he prophesied about you 'This people draw near to me with their lips but their hearts are far from me. Their fear toward me is taught by the traditions of men.'

¹²"You have let go of the commandments of God, and are holding on to the commandments of men."

What comes out of the mouth defiles

¹³Jesus called the crowd to him and said, "Hear and understand. It is not what goes into the mouth that defiles a person, but what comes out of the mouth."

*29 The fourth watch began at 3am.

Pharisees are blind guides

¹⁴Afterward the disciples said to Jesus, “The Pharisees were offended by your words.”

¹⁵Jesus replied, “Every plant that my Father has not planted will be pulled up by the roots. Let them be. Everything they do is done for men to see. ¹⁶They are blind guides. If one blind man leads another blind man both will fall into a pit.”

Disciples of Jesus not to be called Rabbi, Father or Master

¹⁷“They love being called Rabbi,^{F*} but you are not to be called Rabbi, for you have only one teacher, and you are all brothers.”

¹⁸“And do not call anyone on earth Father, for you have only one Father and he is in heaven.”

¹⁹“Nor are you to be called Master, for you have but one Master, the Christ.”

The teaching on defilement explained

²⁰When Jesus had left the crowd and entered the house, Peter said to him, “Explain the teaching on defilement to us.”

²¹Jesus said to them, “Are you still without understanding? Do you not see that whatever enters the mouth goes into the stomach and then passes out of the body?

²²But the things that come out of the mouth come from the heart, and these are what make a person unclean.”

Sins that defile

²³“For out of the heart come evil thoughts, murder, adultery, fornication, lewdness, theft, false witness, slander, greed, malice, deceit, pride, and envy. These are what defile a person, not eating with unwashed hands.”

Jesus visits the region of Tyre

²⁴Leaving Galilee, Jesus withdrew to the region of Tyre. He did not want anyone to know he was there and stayed in a house. Yet he could not keep his presence secret.

A Greek woman asks Jesus to deliver her demon-possessed daughter

²⁵A Greek woman born in Phoenicia^{F*} heard that Jesus was there and she came to him. Falling at his feet she cried out, “O Lord, Son of David, have mercy on me! My little daughter is being tormented terribly by a demon!”

²⁶Jesus would not answer her. Then his disciples came to him and said, “Send her away for she keeps crying after us.”

Jesus explains that he was sent only to the Israelites

²⁷The woman came again to Jesus, and kneeling before him pleaded saying, “Lord, please help me.”

²⁸Jesus said to her, “I was sent only to the lost sheep of Israel. It is not right to take the children’s bread and toss it to the dogs.”

Jesus commends the great faith of the Greek woman and delivers her daughter

²⁹She answered, “Yes Lord, but even the dogs eat the scraps that fall from their masters’ table.”

³⁰Jesus said, “O woman, great is your faith. Your request is granted.” And she went home and found her daughter lying on the bed and the demon gone.

Jesus visits the cities east of Lake Galilee

³¹Jesus left Tyre and went up through Sidon and then down around the lake of Galilee into the eastern region, the Decapolis.^{F*}



Tyre, in the region where the Greek woman pleaded with Jesus to heal her demon-possessed daughter.

Jesus heals on the mountain side

³²There he sat down on a mountain side and great crowds came to him bringing their lame, blind, crippled, dumb, and many others and laid them at his feet. And Jesus healed them.

A deaf man with a speech impediment healed

³³A man was brought to him who was deaf and had a speech impediment. They begged Jesus to lay his hands on the man.

³⁴Jesus took the man aside, away from the crowd and put his fingers into the man’s ears. Then he spat and touched the man’s tongue. He looked up to heaven and with a deep sigh said, “Be opened.”

³⁵The man’s ears were opened, his tongue was loosened, and he began to speak plainly.

³⁶Jesus ordered the people not to tell anyone of these things, but the more he ordered them not to speak, the more they talked about it.

³⁷The crowd was overwhelmed with amazement. “He can do anything!” they said. “He even makes the deaf hear and the dumb speak,” and they praised the God of Israel.

The second miracle of the loaves and fishes

³⁸Now the great crowd that had gathered had nothing to eat so Jesus called his disciples to him and said, “I have compassion for these people. They have been with me three days now and have nothing left to eat. ³⁹If I send them home hungry they may faint on the way, for some have come long distances.”

⁴⁰His disciples answered, “There is nowhere in this remote place where we can buy enough bread to feed all these.”

*17 Rabbi means ‘teacher.’

* 25 ie She was not an Israelite.

*31 The Decapolis was a region of ten cities east of Lake Galilee.

⁴¹Jesus said, “How many loaves have you?”

They replied, “Seven loaves and a few small fishes.”

⁴²So Jesus told the crowd to sit down on the ground. Then he took the seven loaves and fishes and after giving thanks he broke them and gave them to his disciples to hand out to the people.

⁴³The people ate and were satisfied and afterward the disciples picked up seven basketfuls of broken pieces that were left over.

4000 men, plus women and children fed

⁴⁴About 4000 men were present, besides women and children.

Jesus visits Magdala

⁴⁵After he had sent them away Jesus got into a boat with his disciples and landed at the town of Magdala.^{F*}

Jesus is again asked for a sign from heaven

⁴⁶While he was there some Pharisees and Sadducees^{F*} came to Jesus and tested him by asking him to show them a sign.

⁴⁷Jesus replied, “When evening comes you say, ‘Tomorrow will be fair weather for the sky is red,’ and in the morning, ‘Today it will be stormy for the sky is red and overcast.’
⁴⁸You know how to read the signs of the sky but you cannot read the signs of the times.”

⁴⁹“A wicked and adulterous generation asks for a miraculous sign but none will be given it except the sign of Jonah.”

⁵⁰Then Jesus left them and departed from that place.

Disciples warned against the false teaching and hypocrisy of the Pharisees and Sadducees

⁵¹As they were crossing the lake Jesus said to his disciples, “Beware the yeast of the Pharisees and Sadducees.”

⁵²They did not understand what he meant and discussed it among themselves saying, “Is it because we brought no bread except this one loaf in the boat.”

⁵³Aware of their discussion Jesus said, “O you of little understanding, why do you speak about having no bread? Do you not remember the five loaves for the 5000 and the seven loaves for the 4000? Why is it that you do not understand that I am not speaking to you about bread?”

⁵⁴“Are your hearts still hardened? Do you also have eyes that fail to see and ears that fail to hear?”

⁵⁵Then they understood that he was not referring to yeast used in bread but warning them against the false teaching and hypocrisy of the Pharisees and Sadducees.

*45 Magdala was the home town of Mary Magdalene, the first person Jesus showed himself to after his resurrection.

*46 The Sadducees were a priestly, religious sect, predominantly of the wealthy ruling class. They did not believe in a life immediately following death, nor were they as zealous in obeying the letter of the Law as were the Pharisees.

A blind man healed

¹When they came to Bethsaida, some people brought a blind man to Jesus and begged him to heal him. Jesus took the blind man by the hand and led him outside the town. ²Then he spat on the man’s eyes and laid his hands on him and asked, “Do you see anything?”

³The man said, “I see people, but they look like trees walking around.”

⁴Once more Jesus put his hands on the man’s eyes and then the man’s sight was fully restored and he saw everything clearly. ⁵Jesus sent him home saying, “Go not back into the town nor tell anybody what happened.”

Jesus goes north to Caesarea Philippi

⁶Jesus and his disciples then journeyed to the towns around Caesarea Philippi.^{F*}

Peter acknowledges that Jesus is the Christ

⁷On the way Jesus said to his disciples, “Who do people say that I am?”

⁸They replied, “Some say you are John the Baptist, others say Elijah. Still others say Jeremiah or one of the prophets.”

⁹Jesus asked them, “But what about all of you? Who do you say I am?”



The town of Caesarea Philippi on the lower slopes of Mount Hermon.

¹⁰Peter answered, “You are the Christ, the Son of the living God.”

¹¹Jesus replied, “Blessed are you Peter, for this was not revealed to you by man but by my Father in heaven.”

Peter given keys to seal and to dissolve both on earth and in heaven

¹²“And I say to you, that you are Peter,^{F*} and upon this rock I will build my church and the gates of Hades^{F*} shall not overcome it.”

*6 Caesarea Philippi was about 50 kms north of Lake Galilee.

*12 In Greek, the language in which the gospels have come down to us, Peter (or Petros) means ‘a large rock.’ The actual name that Jesus gave Peter was Cephas, which in the everyday Aramaic language that Jesus spoke also means ‘a large rock.’ Aramaic (or Syrian) was a common spoken language of the day in Israel and was similar to the Old Testament Hebrew.

*12 Hades was the Greek word for the spirit world of the dead, and the term ‘gates of Hades’ was a figure of speech for death of the body in general. The coming resurrection of Jesus would make possible the future resurrection of all the dead and overcome the power of death over the body.

MATT-MARK-LUKE 17

13“**To you I will give the keys of the kingdom of God. Whatever you seal on earth shall be sealed in heaven, and whatever you dissolve on earth shall be dissolved in heaven.**”

Disciples not to reveal that Jesus is the Christ

14Jesus warned his disciples not to tell anyone that he was the Christ.

Jesus reveals that he must die at Jerusalem and after three days rise again

15Then Jesus revealed to them that he must go to Jerusalem and suffer many things, and be rejected by the elders, chief priests and teachers of the Law. Also that he must be put to death and after three days rise again.

Never Lord, says Peter

16He spoke plainly about this, but Peter took Jesus aside and said, “Never Lord! This shall never happen to you!”

Jesus rebukes Peter

17Jesus rebuked Peter saying, “Get behind me Satan. You are a stumbling block to me. Your thinking is that of man, not of God.”

Jesus tells the crowd that whoever loses their life for his sake will find Eternal Life

18Then Jesus called the crowd to him along with his disciples and said to them, “**If any of you would be my follower, you must deny yourself, take up your cross and follow me.**”

19“**Whoever tries to save his life in this world will lose it in the world to come, but whoever loses his life in this world, for my sake and for the gospel will find Eternal Life in the world to come.**”

What does it profit a man to gain the whole world yet lose his own soul

20“**For what does it profit a man if he gains the whole world, yet loses his own soul? What can a man give in exchange for his soul?**”

When he comes again, Jesus will be ashamed of anyone who is ashamed of him

21“**If anyone be ashamed of me and my words in this adulterous and sinful generation, so will the Son of Man be ashamed of him when he comes in his Father’s glory with the holy angels, to reward each person according to his works.**”

Some present will soon see Jesus as he will come in his glory

22Then he said to them, “**There are some standing here who will not taste of death before they see the Son of Man as he will come in the glory of the kingdom of God.**”^{F*}

Jesus is transfigured before Peter, James and John

23Six days later Jesus took Peter, James and John and led them up a high mountain.^{F*} When they were all alone, as Jesus was praying, he became transfigured before them.

*22 Peter, James and John would witness the glorious transfiguration of Jesus six days later (see following verses).

*23 Believed to be Mount Hermon which was close by.

24His face shone like the sun and his garments became dazzling white.

Moses and Elijah appear

25Then appeared Moses and Elijah^{F*} in glorious splendour, and they spoke with Jesus about his death and resurrection which he was to bring to fulfilment in Jerusalem.

26Peter, James and John were heavy with sleep at first, but when they became fully awake they saw the glory of Jesus and the two prophets standing with him.

27As the prophets were about to depart, Peter said, “Master it is good for us to be here. Let us build three shelters, one for you, one for Moses, and one for Elijah.”

28Peter did not know what else to say for they were overcome with awe.

God the Father speaks from within a cloud

29Then a bright cloud appeared and enveloped them, and a voice from within the cloud spoke saying, “**This is my beloved Son whom I have chosen and with whom I am well pleased. Hear him.**”

30When the apostles heard this they fell face down to the ground, overcome with fear. Then Jesus touched them and said “**Arise. Be not afraid.**”

31When they looked up they saw no one except Jesus.



Mount Hermon across Lake Galilee, the ‘high mountain’ of the transfiguration (Matt-Mark-Luke 17:23).

Apostles not to reveal what they have seen until Jesus is risen from the dead

32As they were coming back down the mountain Jesus ordered them not to tell anyone what they had seen, until he had risen from the dead. ³³So they kept the matter to themselves but discussed as to what rising from the dead might mean.

*25 Both Moses and Elijah had been translated, ie taken bodily from the earth without dying a mortal death (see Deuteronomy 10:30 and Elijah 8:33).

John the Baptist a type of Elijah

³⁴They said to Jesus, "Why do the teachers of the Law say that Elijah must come before the Christ?"

³⁵Jesus replied, "It is true that Elijah does come first, to prepare all things. But I say to you Elijah has come, and they did to him what they pleased, just as is written about him."

³⁶"In the same way the Son of Man will suffer at their hands."

³⁷Then the three apostles understood that he was talking to them of John the Baptist.^{F*}

Disciples unable to drive out a demon

³⁸When they came to the other disciples they saw a large crowd gathered and the teachers of the Law arguing with them. As soon as the people saw Jesus they ran to greet him.

³⁹He said to them, "What are you arguing about?"

⁴⁰A man in the crowd answered, "Teacher, I brought you my son who is possessed of a demon that has robbed him of speech. Whenever it seizes him it throws him to the ground and he foams at the mouth and grinds his teeth and becomes rigid. ⁴¹I asked your disciples to drive out the spirit but they could not."

⁴²Jesus replied, "O you faithless generation. How much longer must I be with you? How much longer must I put up with you? Bring the boy to me."

⁴³So they brought the boy to Jesus. When the spirit saw Jesus, it immediately threw the boy into a convulsion. He fell to the ground and rolled around, foaming at the mouth.

All things can be done for one who believes

⁴⁴Jesus said to the boy's father, "How long has this been happening to him?"

⁴⁵He answered, "From childhood. It has often thrown him into fire or water to destroy him. If you are able to do anything, take pity on us and help us."

⁴⁶Jesus replied, "If you are able.^{F*} All things can be done for him who believes."

⁴⁷The boy's father cried out in tears, "I do believe! Help me in my unbelief!"

Jesus drives out the demon

⁴⁸When Jesus saw that an even larger crowd was gathering around, he rebuked the unclean spirit saying, "You deaf and dumb spirit, I command you, come out of him and never enter him again!"

*³⁷ John the Baptist denied that he was the reincarnated Elijah (John 1:11-12) besides which, Elijah had been translated, ie taken alive from the earth (Elijah 8:33). Also Elijah had recently appeared with Moses to Jesus and three apostles on the high mountain (Matt-Mark-Luke 17:23-25). However some scholars have pointed out the unusual personality strength of both John and Elijah, the similar garb and the roles played in their lives by evil women (Jezebel and Herodias) and believe that John came as a 'type' of Elijah. Also supporting this view are the words of the angel Gabriel to Zechariah the father of John the Baptist informing him that his son would go forth in the 'spirit and power of Elijah' (Matt-Mark-Luke 1:9).

*⁴⁶ In other words, "The deliverance of your son is in your hands. If you believe that I can heal him, it can be done."

⁴⁹The spirit shrieked and convulsed the boy violently and came out. The boy lay so still that many said, "He is dead." But Jesus took him by the hand and lifted him up and he stood on his feet.

The disciples ask Jesus why they could not drive out the unclean spirit

⁵⁰After Jesus had gone indoors, his disciples said to him privately, "Why could we not drive it out?"

Faith can move a mountain

⁵¹Jesus replied, "Because you have so little faith. Truly I say to you, if you have faith, though it be small as a mustard seed, you can say to this mountain, 'Move from here to there' and it will move. Nothing will be impossible for you."

Prayer and fasting also required to drive out that kind of demon

⁵²"But this kind does not come out, except by prayer and fasting."

18

Jesus tells Peter to pay the annual Temple tax with a coin he will find in mouth of fish

¹When Jesus and his disciples arrived back in Capernaum, the collectors of the annual half shekel Temple tax came up to Peter and said, "Does your teacher not pay the Temple tax?" He replied, "He does."

²When Peter entered the house Jesus was the first to speak. He said, "What do you think Peter? From whom do the kings of the earth collect taxes, from their own sons or from others?"

Peter answered, "From others."

³Jesus said to him, "Then the sons are exempt. But that we not offend them, go to the lake and cast a line. Take the first fish you catch and in its mouth you will find a shekel coin.^{F*} Take it and give it to them for my tax and for yours."

The apostles argue over which of them is the greatest

⁴Peter did so and afterward returned. Jesus then said to the Twelve, "What were you arguing about on the road earlier today?" But the apostles remained silent, for they had been arguing about which of them was the greatest.

Apostles must humble themselves as little children

⁵Jesus sat down, and calling the Twelve around him said, "He who would be first must be the very last, and a servant of all."

⁶And calling to a little child Jesus had him come and stand in the midst of them. Then taking the child in his arms Jesus said to them, "Truly I say to you, unless you repent and become like little children you will never enter the kingdom of God. ⁷Therefore,

*³ A shekel in new Testament times was a silver coin also called a drachma and worth about a days wages.

MATT-MARK-LUKE 18

whoever humbles himself and becomes like this little child, the same is great in the kingdom of God.”



“Go to the lake and cast a line,” Lake Galilee where Peter caught a fish with a shekel coin in its mouth.

Woe to whoever leads a little child into sin

8“And whoever welcomes a little child like this in my name welcomes me, and whoever welcomes me welcomes him who sent me.”

9“**But anyone who leads one of these little ones who believe in me, to sin, it would be better for that person to have a great millstone fastened around his neck and be drowned in the depths of the sea.**”

10“**Woe to the world for temptations that lead people to sin. Such things must be, but woe to the person by whom they come.**”

The angels of little children always behold the face of the Father

11“**Therefore see that you respect these little ones. For truly I say to you that in heaven their angels^{F*} always behold the face of my Father.**”



“Unless you repent and become like little children you will never enter the kingdom of God” (Matt-Mark-Luke 18:6). Jesus used a little child to illustrate the humility that is pleasing to God.

The parable of the lost sheep

12“**The Son of Man came to save the lost. What do you think? If a shepherd has a hundred sheep and one of them wanders away, will he not leave the ninety-nine and go to look for the one that is lost?**”

13“**And when he finds it, is he not happier about that one sheep than the ninety-nine that did not wander away?**”

14“**In the same way your Father in heaven is not willing that one of these little ones should be lost.**”

Try and reconcile with those who sin against you

15“**If your brother sins against you, go to him alone and show him his fault. If he hears you then you have won your brother over.**”

16“**But if he will not listen to you, take one or two witnesses along, so that every word may be confirmed by the testimony of two or three witnesses.**”

Avoid a person who refuses to reconcile

17“**If he still refuses to listen, tell it to the church. If he refuses to listen even to the church, treat him as you would a Gentile or a tax collector.**”

Forgive seventy times seven

18Peter said to Jesus, “Lord, how many times should I forgive my brother when he sins against me? Up to seven times?”

19Jesus answered, “I say to you, not seven times, but seventy times seven.”

The parable of the unmerciful servant

20Then he told this parable. “The kingdom of God is like a master who wanted to settle accounts with his servants. A servant who owed him 10,000 talents of silver^{F*} was brought to him. 21Since he was unable to pay, his master ordered that he and his wife and his children, and all that he had be sold to help repay the debt.”

22“**However the servant fell on his knees before the master and begged him saying, ‘Be patient with me and I will repay everything.’ The master took pity on him and cancelled the debt and let him go.**”

23“**But when that servant went out, he found one of his fellow servants who owed him a 100 denarii.^{F*} He seized him by the throat and demanded, ‘Pay back what you owe me!’**”

24“**His fellow servant fell to his knees and begged him saying, ‘Be patient with me and I will pay you back.’ But he refused and had the man thrown into prison until the debt was paid.**”

25“**When the other servants saw what had happened they were indignant and went and told their master. The master called the servant in and said, ‘You wicked servant, I cancelled that great debt of yours because you begged me. Should you not therefore have had mercy on your fellow servant?’** 26**And in anger he turned him over to the**

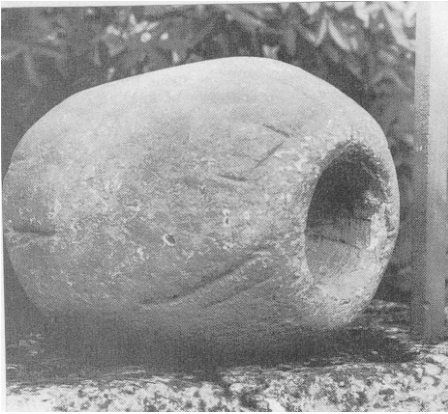
*20 This debt of 10,000 talents of silver (about 340 tonnes) was enormous, equivalent to millions of dollars.

*23 About three months wages or 1/30th of a talent, a tiny debt in comparison to the first which was 300,000 times larger.

*11 Generally understood to mean guardian angels.

jailers until he should pay back all that he owed.”

²⁷“So too will my heavenly Father treat each one of you, unless you forgive your brother from your heart.”



A talent measuring weight (34kg).

Whoever is not against apostles is for them

²⁸Then John said, “Master we saw a man driving out demons in your name, and we tried to stop him for he is not one of us.”

²⁹Jesus said, “Do not stop him, for whoever does a miracle in my name will not afterward be able to speak evil of me. Whoever is not against us is for us.”

³⁰“Truly I say to you, whoever gives you a cup of water to drink because you belong to Christ, shall not fail to be rewarded.”

19

Jesus begins his journey toward Jerusalem

¹At this time Jesus began to make his way toward Jerusalem.

A Samaritan town does not welcome him

²He sent messengers ahead of him into a Samaritan town to obtain shelter for himself and his disciples. But the Samaritans there did not welcome him because he was headed towards Jerusalem.^{F*}

James and John propose calling down fire from heaven to destroy the town

³When the apostles James and John heard this they said, “Lord, do you want us to call down fire from heaven to destroy them?”

Jesus rebukes James and John

⁴But Jesus rebuked them saying, “You do not understand the Spirit you share, for the Son of Man came to save lives not to

*2 There was much ill feeling between the Samaritans and the Jews, especially over the temple in Jerusalem from which they were barred as unclean. The Samaritans were of mixed blood, descendants of non-Israelites who had been exiled to Israel from their native lands by the Assyrians 800 years ago and who had over the years interbred with the remnant Israelites of the former northern kingdom of Israel.

destroy them.” So they went to another town.

Ten lepers healed

⁵On his way to Jerusalem, Jesus travelled along the border between Samaria and Galilee. As he was entering a town, ten lepers came to him and stood at a distance. They called out in a loud voice, “Jesus, Lord, have pity on us!”

⁶When Jesus saw them he said, “Go show yourselves to the priests.” And as they went they were cleansed.

Only one leper returns to thank Jesus

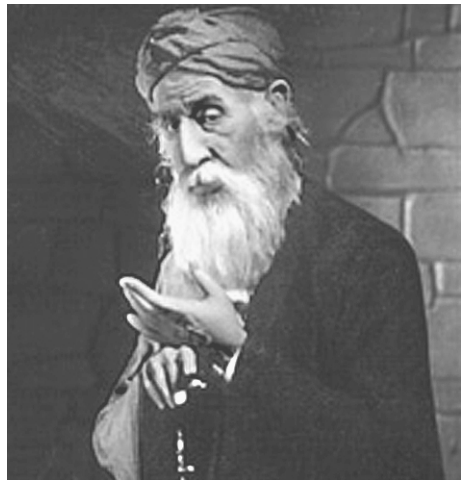
⁷One of them, a Samaritan, when he saw he was healed returned to Jesus praising God in a loud voice. He threw himself down at his feet and thanked him.

⁸Jesus said, “Were not all ten cleansed? Where are the other nine? Was no one found to return and give praise to God except this Samaritan?”

⁹Then he said to him, “Arise and depart. Your faith has healed you.”

Jesus sends seventy more disciples out on missions

¹⁰Then Jesus appointed seventy disciples, and sent them on ahead of him, two by two to every place he was about to go.



A Samaritan.

Instructions to the seventy

¹¹He instructed them saying, “The harvest is great but the labourers are few. I am sending you out like lambs among wolves. Take no money with you, or bag, or spare sandals and do not stop to converse with anyone on the road.”

¹²“When you enter a house, first say, ‘Peace to this house.’ If a man of peace be there, your peace will rest upon him, if not, it will return to you. ¹³Stay in that house and eat and drink whatever they give you, for the labourer is worthy of his keep. Do not

MATT-MARK-LUKE 19

move from house to house.”

¹⁴“When you enter a town and the people welcome you, eat what is set before you. Heal the sick who are there, and say to them, ‘The kingdom of God is near you.’”

¹⁵“But if you enter a town and they welcome you not, go into its streets and say, ‘Even the dust of your town that clings to our feet, we shake off against you. Yet be sure of this, the kingdom of God is near.’”

¹⁶“Truly I say to you it will be more bearable for Sodom on the day of judgement than for that town.”

¹⁷“He who hears you, hears me, and he who rejects you, rejects me, and rejects him who sent me.”

Jesus continues from town to town toward Jerusalem

¹⁸When the seventy had departed, Jesus continued on from town to town, teaching as he made his way to Jerusalem.

Jesus is asked what one must do to gain Eternal Life?

¹⁹On one occasion a teacher of the Law stood up to test Jesus. He said, “Teacher, what must I do to inherit Eternal Life?”

²⁰Jesus replied, “What is written in the Law? How do you read it?”

Love God with all your heart and love your neighbour as yourself

²¹He answered, “You shall love Jehovah your God with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your might, and love your neighbour as yourself.”

²²Jesus replied, “You have answered correctly. Do this and you shall live.”

The parable of the good Samaritan

²³But wanting to justify his question he said to Jesus, “And who is my neighbour?”

²⁴In reply Jesus told this parable. “A man was travelling from Jerusalem to Jericho when he fell among robbers. They stripped him of his clothes, beat him, and left him lying half dead.”

²⁵“Now it happened that a priest^{F*} was travelling along the same road, but when he saw the man lying there, he passed by him on the other side. So also a Levite,^{F*} when he saw him, he too passed by on the other side.”

²⁶“But then a Samaritan came to where the man was, and when he saw him he took pity on him. He bound up his wounds pouring on oil and wine. Then he put the man on his own donkey and carried him to an inn and took care of him.”

²⁷“The next day he took out two silver coins^{F*} and gave them to the innkeeper

*25 Priests were direct descendants of Aaron and had charge of the temple sacrifices.

*25 The Levites were a tribe set apart to assist the priests (who were also Levites) and were meant to be supported by the tithes of the people.

*27 About two days wages for a labourer.

saying, ‘Take care of him. When I return I will pay you for any extra expense you may incur.’”

²⁸“Which of these three do you think was a neighbour to the man who fell into the hands of robbers?”

²⁹The teacher of the Law replied, “The one who had mercy on him.”

³⁰Jesus said to him, “Go and do likewise.”

The seventy return from their missions with great joy

³¹When the seventy returned to Jesus they came with great joy and said, “Lord, even the demons submit to us in your name.”

Jesus watched as Satan was cast out of heaven

³²Jesus said, “I watched when Satan was cast down like lightning from heaven. ³³You see that I have given you power to tread on those snakes and scorpions and to overcome all his forces. They shall never harm you.”

³⁴“However, do not rejoice that his spirits submit to you, rejoice rather that your names are written ^{F*} in heaven.”



An inn on the Jerusalem-Jericho road, the setting of the parable of the Good Samaritan.

Jesus, full of joy praises the Father

³⁵Then Jesus full of joy through the Holy Spirit prayed saying, “I thank you Father, Lord of heaven and earth for you have hidden these things from the self-wise and the learned, and revealed them to those who are humble like little children. Yes Father, for this was pleasing to you.”

Mary and Martha

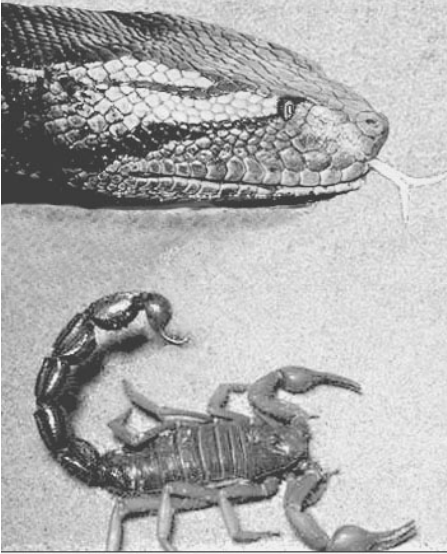
³⁶As Jesus and his disciples neared Jerusalem they came to the village of Bethany on the Mount of Olives. There a woman named Martha welcomed Jesus into her home.

³⁷Now Martha had a sister named Mary, and she sat at the feet of Jesus listening to what he taught.

*34 ie Written in the Book of Life. See note on Revelation 2:36.

³⁸But Martha was anxious about the many tasks of food preparation and serving that had to be done. So she came to Jesus and said, "Lord do you not care that my sister has left me to do all the work alone? Tell her to help me."

³⁹But Jesus answered her saying, "**Martha, Martha, you are anxious and troubled about many things, but only one thing is of importance and Mary has chosen rightly. It will not be taken from her.**"



Jesus likened Satan and his forces to snakes and scorpions.

20

Jesus teaches in the towns around Jerusalem

¹Then Jesus taught in the towns of Judea.

The disciples ask Jesus to teach them to pray

²At a certain place after Jesus had prayed, one of his disciples said to him, "Lord teach us to pray as John taught his disciples."

Be persistent in prayer

³Jesus said to them, "Suppose one of you has a friend and you go to him at midnight and say, 'My friend, lend me three loaves of bread, for someone on a journey has come to visit me and I have nothing to set before him.'"

⁴"Your friend may answer from within, 'Do not bother me now. My door is already locked and my children are with me in bed. I cannot get up now and give you food.'"

⁵"But I say to you, though he may not at first get up and give you bread, because he is your friend and because of your insistence he will eventually get up and give you as much as you need."

Ask and you shall receive

⁶"So it is also with your Father in heaven.

Ask and you shall receive, seek and you shall find, knock and the door will be opened to you."

⁷"For which of you, who are fathers if your son asks you for bread will give him a stone instead? Or if he asks you for a fish will give him a snake?"

⁸"If you, though you sin, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your Father in heaven give the Holy Spirit to those who ask him."

The parable of the persistent widow and the unjust judge

⁹Then Jesus told his disciples another parable to show them that they should pray always and not lose heart.

¹⁰"In a certain city there was a judge who neither feared God nor cared about people. In that same city was a widow who kept coming to him saying, 'Grant me justice against my oppressor.'"

¹¹"Many times the judge refused, but finally he said to himself, 'Though I fear not God nor care about people, I shall see that this widow gets justice for she will wear me out with her constant coming.'"

¹²Jesus said, "Hear what the unjust judge says. Will not God therefore grant justice to his chosen ones, who cry out to him day and night? Will he keep putting them off? I say to you, he will see that they get justice, and quickly."

Jesus goes to eat at the home of a Pharisee

¹³When Jesus had finished speaking, a Pharisee invited him to eat with him, so Jesus went to his house and reclined at the table.

Jesus rebukes the hypocrisy of the Pharisees

¹⁴The Pharisee was surprised that Jesus did not first wash before eating.

¹⁵Jesus said to him, "You Pharisees are content to clean the outside of the cup and the dish, while inside you are full of greed and wickedness."

¹⁶"You foolish men, did not he who made the outside make the inside also? Give to the poor and then what is inside the dish will be clean for you."

The teachers of the Law also rebuked

¹⁷Hearing these words one of the teachers of the Law said to him, "Teacher, when you say these things you insult us also."

¹⁸Jesus replied, "And woe to you teachers of the Law, for you load people with burdens that are hard to bear, yet you yourselves will not lift a finger to ease them."

¹⁹"Woe to you teachers of the Law, for you have taken away the key of knowledge and you neither enter yourselves nor let others enter."

²⁰"Woe to you teachers of the Law, for you build tombs for the prophets, and it was your own fathers who killed them."

The Pharisees and teachers of the Law begin to oppose Jesus fiercely

²¹Therefore from that time on the Pharisees and the teachers of the Law began to oppose Jesus fiercely, and to ply him with questions trying to catch him in something he might say.

21

A vast crowd of many thousands gather

¹Now a vast crowd of many thousands had gathered to Jesus so that they were trampling on one another.

Jesus warns his disciples against hypocrisy for all hidden things will one day be revealed

²Jesus said to his disciples, "Beware the yeast of the Pharisees which is hypocrisy. For there is nothing hidden that will not be made known. What is now whispered in inner rooms will one day be shouted from the roof tops."

Jesus warns the crowd against greed

³Then someone in the crowd said to Jesus, "Teacher tell my brother to divide the inheritance with me."

⁴Jesus replied, "Who made me a judge between you?" And he said to the crowd, "Beware of greed. A man's life does not consist of an abundance of possessions."

The parable of the foolish rich man

⁵Then he told this parable. "The fields of a rich man produced abundantly. He thought to himself, 'What shall I do? I have no place large enough to store my crops.'"

⁶"Then he said, 'This is what I will do. I shall tear down my barns and build bigger ones and in them I will store all my grain and my goods. Then I shall have plenty of wealth laid up for many years and I will take life easy. I will eat, drink and be merry.'"

⁷"But God said to him, 'You foolish man, this very night your life is required of you. Then who will get what you have prepared for yourself?'"

⁸"So it is with anyone who stores up treasure for himself, but is not rich toward God."

Disciples told to sell their possessions

⁹Jesus said to his disciples, "Fear not little flock, for your Father is pleased to give you the kingdom. Sell your possessions and give to the poor."

Where your treasure is there will your heart be also

¹⁰"Provide for yourself treasure in heaven that will not wear out, and where no thief comes near and no moth destroys. ¹¹For where your treasure is there will your heart be also."

The parable of the dishonest steward

¹²Then Jesus told this parable. "There was a rich man whose steward^{f*} was charged

with wasting his goods. So he called him in and said to him, 'What is this I hear about you? Settle up your stewardship. You can no longer be my steward.'

¹³"The steward said to himself, 'What shall I do now? My master is taking away my job. I am not strong enough to dig and am ashamed to beg.'

¹⁴"I know what I shall do, so that when I lose my job here people will welcome me into their homes."

¹⁵"So he called in his master's debtors, one by one and said to the first, 'How much do you owe my master?'"

"He replied, '800 measures of olive oil.'"

¹⁶"The steward told him, 'Take your bill, sit down quickly and make it 400 measures.'"

¹⁷"He then said to the second, 'And how much do you owe?'"

"He replied, '100 measures of wheat.'"

¹⁸"He told him, 'Take your bill and make it 80 measures.'"

Worldly people more shrewd than those of the kingdom

¹⁹"The master had to admire the shrewdness of the dishonest steward, for the people of this world are more shrewd in dealing with their own kind than are those of the kingdom of God."

²⁰"Therefore use your worldly wealth to gain friends for yourselves, so that when it is gone they will welcome you into their eternal homes."

Whoever is honest with little can be trusted with much

²¹"Whoever is honest with little can be trusted with much, but whoever is dishonest with little will also be dishonest with much."

²²"If you have been untrustworthy in handling worldly wealth, who will trust you with true riches? And if you have been untrustworthy with the property of others, who will give you property of your own?"

You cannot serve both God and money

²³"No servant can serve two masters, for he will despise one and love the other. You cannot serve both God and money."

²⁴The Pharisees who were lovers of money heard these words and ridiculed Jesus. But he said to them, "You justify yourselves in the eyes of men but God knows your hearts. ²⁵What is highly valued among men is an abomination in the sight of God."

The parable of Lazarus and the rich man

²⁶He then told them another parable. "There was a rich man who dressed in purple and fine linen and lived in luxury every day. ²⁷At his gate lay a beggar named Lazarus. He was covered with sores and longed to eat what fell from the rich man's table. Even the dogs would come and lick his sores."

²⁸"In time the beggar died and the angels

*12 A steward is one who administers the personal finances and property of another.

carried him to Abraham's side." F*

²⁹"The rich man also died, and in Hades^{F*} where he was in torment he looked up and saw Abraham far away with Lazarus by his side."

³⁰"So he called to him saying, 'Father Abraham have pity on me. Send Lazarus to dip the tip of his finger in water and refresh my tongue, for I am in anguish in this flame.'

³¹"But Abraham replied, 'My son, remember that in your lifetime you received good things while Lazarus received bad things. Now he is comforted here and you are in anguish. ³²Besides, a great chasm has been fixed between us so that we cannot go from here to you, nor can anyone cross over from you to us.'

³³"The rich man answered, 'Then I beg you father Abraham, send Lazarus to my father's house for I have five brothers. Let him warn them that they not also come to this place of torment.'

³⁴"Abraham replied, 'They have the scriptures, let them take heed of them.'

³⁵"The rich man said, 'They will not do so father Abraham, but if one from the dead appears to them they will repent.'

³⁶"Abraham said to him, 'If they will not heed the words of Moses and the Prophets they will not be convinced even if one returns from the dead.'

Parable of the prepared faithful servants

³⁷"Therefore, be dressed and ready with your lamps burning, like servants awaiting their master's return from a wedding banquet. So that even if he comes after midnight they can immediately open the door for him."

³⁸"Blessed be those servants. Their master will dress himself to attend them and will serve them at the table."

The Son of Man to return unexpectedly

³⁹"You must be ready, for the Son of Man will return in an hour when you expect him not. ⁴⁰For if the owner of the house had known at what hour the thief was coming he would not have let his house be broken into."

Parable of the faithful and unfaithful servant

⁴¹Peter said, "Lord, are you telling this parable to us or to everyone?"

⁴²Jesus answered Peter saying, "A master will place a servant who is faithful and wise over all his other servants. And it will be good for that servant when the master returns and finds him still faithful. He will place him in charge of all his possessions."

⁴³"But suppose that servant says to himself, 'My master is a long time coming'

and he begins to beat the other servants and to eat and drink and get drunk. ⁴⁴The master of that servant will return when he least expects him and will beat him with a heavy beating, and cut him off and assign him a place with the hypocrites where their will be weeping and grinding of teeth."

⁴⁵"But a servant who has not this greater responsibility but also does things deserving of punishment will receive only a light beating."

⁴⁶"For from him who is given much, much is expected."

Jesus anguished about his coming crucifixion

⁴⁷"I have come to bring fire on the earth, and how I wish it were already kindled. But I have a baptism to undergo and how distressed I am until it is completed."

Jesus to bring division on earth until he returns

⁴⁸"Do you think I have come to bring peace on earth? No, but division. From now on there will be five in one house divided against each other. Father against son and son against father, mother against daughter and daughter against mother, in-laws against in-laws. ⁴⁹A man's enemies will be those of his own household"

22

Those who are killed accidentally not worse sinners than others

¹Now there were some present at that time who told Jesus about the Galileans whose blood Pilate had shed while they were offering sacrifices.

²Jesus said to them, "Do you think that those Galileans were worse sinners than other Galileans because they suffered this way?"

³"Or the eighteen who died when the tower in Siloam fell upon them. Were they more guilty than all the others living in Jerusalem? I say to you, no. But unless you repent you will all perish."

The parable of fertilising a barren fig tree

⁴Then he told this parable, "A man had a fig tree in his vineyard and went to look for fruit on it but found none. So he said to his servant who took care of the vineyard, 'For three years now I have been coming to look for fruit on this fig tree and have not found any. Cut it down. Why should it cumber the ground?'"

⁵"But the servant replied, 'Master, leave it alone for one more year. I will dig around it and fertilise it. If it bears fruit next year well and good. If not then cut it down.'

A woman bent over by an unclean spirit for eighteen years is healed on the Sabbath

⁶On the Sabbath, Jesus taught in one of the synagogues and a woman was there who had been crippled by an unclean spirit for eighteen

*28 Literally 'the bosom of Abraham,' also known as 'Paradise,' the blissful, garden-like area of the spirit world where the righteous spirits of the dead dwell in God's presence, awaiting the resurrection.

*29 The spirit world of the unrighteous dead.

MATT-MARK-LUKE 22

years. She was bent over and could not straighten up at all.

⁷When Jesus saw her he called her forward and said, **“Woman, you are set free from your infirmity.”** Then he laid his hands upon her and immediately she straightened up and praised God.

The synagogue ruler indignant that Jesus healed on the Sabbath

⁸However the synagogue ruler was indignant that Jesus had healed on the Sabbath. He said to the people, **“There are six days for work so come and be healed on those days, not on the Sabbath.”**

Jesus rebukes the synagogue ruler

⁹Jesus said to him, **“You hypocrite. Do not each of you on the Sabbath untie your ox or donkey from the stall and lead it out to water?”**

¹⁰**“Why then should this woman, a daughter of Abraham whom Satan has kept bound for eighteen long years, not be freed on the Sabbath day?”**

¹¹When Jesus said this his opponents were humiliated, but the crowds were delighted with all that he was doing.

Jesus is asked if only a few people will be saved

¹²Someone said to him, **“Lord, will only a few people be saved?”**

¹³Jesus answered, **“Strive to enter through the narrow door, for many shall try to enter but not be able. ¹⁴For once the owner of the house arises and closes the door, you will be left standing outside, knocking and calling, ‘Lord, open the door to us! We ate and drank with you, and you taught us in our streets.’”**

¹⁴**“But he will answer, ‘I do not know you. Depart from me you sinners.’”**

Many non-Israelites will enter the kingdom of God and many Israelites will be thrust out

¹⁵**“There will be weeping and grinding of teeth when you see Abraham, Isaac and Jacob and all the prophets in the kingdom of God but you yourselves thrust out.”**

¹⁶**“People will come from nations east, west, north and south, and take their places at the feast in the kingdom of God. ¹⁷Indeed some who are now last shall be first, and some are now first shall be last.”**

Jesus dines in the house of a prominent Pharisee

¹⁸On a Sabbath day Jesus went to dine in the house of a prominent Pharisee. He was being carefully watched and in front of him was a man suffering from dropsy.^{F*}

Jesus heals the man with dropsy on the Sabbath

¹⁹Jesus said to the Pharisees and teachers of the Law, **“Is it lawful to heal on the Sabbath**

or not?” But they remained silent.

²⁰So Jesus healed the man with dropsy and sent him away. Then he said to them, **“Which one of you, if he had a son or an ox fall into a well on the Sabbath day would not immediately pull him out?”**

²¹And they could not answer him.

Take the lowest place at a feast

²²When Jesus noticed how the guests desired the places of honour at the table, he taught them saying, ²³**“When someone invites you to a wedding feast, do not take the place of honour, for a person more distinguished than you may have been invited. Then the host may come and say to you, ‘Give this man your seat,’ and humiliated, you will have to take the lowest place.”**

²⁴**“But when you are invited, take the lowest place, so that when your host sees you he will say to you, ‘My friend, move up to a better place.’ Then you will be honoured in the presence of your fellow guests.”**

²⁵**“For he who exalts himself will be humbled, and he who humbles himself will be exalted.”**

Invite the poor to your feasts and those who cannot invite you back

²⁶Then Jesus said to his host, **“When you give a dinner or banquet, do not invite your friends and your relatives, or the rich. For if you do they may invite you back and so you will be repaid.”**

²⁷**“But rather, invite the poor, the crippled, the lame and the blind. Then you will be blessed, for they cannot repay you. ²⁸You will be repaid at the resurrection of the righteous.”**

The parable of the great feast

²⁹When one of those at the table heard this he said to Jesus, **“Blessed is the man who shall eat bread in the kingdom of God.”**

³⁰Jesus replied, **“A certain man was preparing a great feast and invited many guests. On the day of the feast he sent his servant to say to those who had been invited, ‘Come, everything is now ready.’”**

³¹**“But they all alike began to make excuses. The first said, ‘I have just bought a field and must go and inspect it.’ Another said, ‘I have just bought five yoke of oxen and am on my way to try them out.’ Still another said, ‘I have just got married so I cannot come.’”**

³²**“The servant reported this back to his master. Then the master became angry and said to the servant, ‘Go quickly into the streets and alleys of the town. Bring in the poor, the crippled, the blind and the lame.’”**

³³**“Later the servant said to his master, ‘I have done as you ordered but there is still room.’”**

³⁴**“The master said, ‘Go out then into the country roads and lanes and bring them in, so that my house will be full. ³⁵Truly I say to**

*18 A disorder (also known as edema) that causes excess fluid retention to swell the body.

you, not one of those who were first invited will taste of my feast.”



“When you give a dinner...do not invite your friends... but rather, invite the poor, the crippled, the lame and the blind” (Matt-Mark-Luke 22:26-27).

23

Anyone not prepared to give up all cannot be a disciple of Jesus

¹Great crowds travelled everywhere with Jesus. Turning to them one day he said, “If any man comes to me and does not love me more than his father and mother, his wife and children, his brothers and sisters, even his own life, he cannot be my disciple.”

²“Anyone who will not carry his cross and follow me, cannot be my disciple.”

Two parables of counting the cost

³“Suppose one of you decides to build a tower. Will he not first sit down and estimate the cost to see if he has enough money to complete it?”

⁴“For if he lays the foundation and is not able to finish it, all who see will ridicule him saying, ‘This man began to build and was not able to finish.’”

⁵“Or suppose a king is about to go to war against another king. Will he not first sit down and consider whether he is able with 10,000 men to oppose the one coming against him with 20,000 men?”

⁶“In the same way, any one of you who is not prepared to give up everything he has cannot be my disciple.”

The parable of the lost sheep

⁷Tax collectors and sinners also came to hear Jesus. The Pharisees and teachers of the Law saw this and murmured among themselves saying, “This man welcomes sinners and eats with them.”

⁸Jesus told them this parable. “Suppose a man among you has a hundred sheep and loses one of them. Will he not leave the ninety-nine and go after the lost sheep until he finds it?”

⁹“And when he finds it will he not joyfully lift it onto his shoulders and carry it home. Then he will call his friends together and say, ‘Rejoice with me for I have found my lost sheep.’”

Joy in heaven when a sinner repents

¹⁰“In the same way there is more rejoicing in heaven over one sinner who repents, than over ninety-nine righteous persons who need no repentance.”

The parable of the lost coin

¹¹“Or suppose a woman has ten silver coins and loses one. Does she not light a lamp and sweep the house and search carefully until she finds it? ¹²And when she finds it she calls her friends together and says, ‘Rejoice with me for I have found my lost coin.’”

¹³“Truly I say to you, there is much rejoicing in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner who repents.”

The parable of the prodigal son

¹⁴Jesus told another parable. “There was a man who had two sons. One day the younger said to his father, ‘Give me my share of the estate now.’ So the father divided his property between his two sons.”

¹⁵“Soon afterward the younger son took all that he had and set off for a distant land. There he squandered his wealth in wild living.”

¹⁶“After he had spent everything, there came a severe famine in that land and he began to be in need. ¹⁷So he went and hired himself to a man of that land who sent him into his fields to help feed the pigs. ¹⁸He would gladly have filled his stomach with the pods that the pigs were eating but no one gave him anything.”

¹⁹“Then he came to his senses and thought, ‘My father’s hired men have food to spare, and here I am perishing with hunger. I will return to my father and say to him, ‘Father, I have sinned against God and against you. I am no longer worthy to be called your son. Make me as one of your hired men.’”

²⁰“So he arose and returned to his father. While he was still a long way off his father saw him coming and was filled with love and compassion for him. He ran to meet his son and threw his arms around him and kissed him.”

²¹“The son said to him, ‘Father, I have sinned against God and against you. I am no longer worthy to be called your son.’”

²²“But the father said to his servants, ‘Bring the best robe and place it upon him. Put a ring on his finger and sandals on his feet. ²³Kill the fattened calf, let us have a feast and celebrate. For this son of mine was dead and is alive again. He was lost and is found.’”

²⁴“Meanwhile the elder son returned from

the fields. When he came near the house and heard the music and dancing he called one of the servants and asked him what it meant."

²⁵"The servant replied, 'Your brother has returned home and your father has killed the fattened calf, for he has him back safe and sound.'"

²⁶"When he heard this the older brother became angry and refused to go into the house. So his father came out and pleaded with him."

²⁷"But he said to his father, 'All these years I have served you and never disobeyed you, yet you never gave me even as much as a young goat so that I could celebrate with my friends. ²⁸But when this son of yours who has squandered your property with harlots returns home, you kill the fattened calf for him.'"

²⁹"The father said, 'My son, you are always with me and everything I have is yours. But we had to celebrate and be glad, for this brother of yours was dead and is alive again, he was lost and is found.'"

Forgive your brother if he repents, seven times in one day if necessary

³⁰Then Jesus said to his disciples, "If your brother sins rebuke him, and if he repents forgive him, even if he sins against you seven times in one day and seven times returns to you and says, 'I repent,' forgive him."

Faith even small as a mustard seed will result in miracles

³¹The apostles said to Jesus, "Increase our faith."

³²Jesus replied, "If you had faith as a grain of mustard seed you could say to this sycamore tree, 'Be uprooted and planted in the sea' and it would obey you."

Where two apostles on earth agree about anything asked for, it will be done

³³"Again I say to you, if two of you on earth agree about anything you ask for, it will be done for you by my Father in heaven."

Need for apostles to do more than duty alone to be rewarded

³⁴"However, suppose one of you had a servant who plowed your field or looked after your sheep. Would you say to that servant when he came in from the field, 'Come sit down and eat?'"

³⁵"Rather you would say, 'Prepare my meal and serve me while I eat and drink and after that you may eat and drink. ³⁶And would you thank your servant just because he did as you told him to do?'"

³⁷"So you too, when you have done everything God tells you to do should say, 'I am an unworthy servant. I have only done my duty.'"

The kingdom of God is here among you now

¹Once when asked by the Pharisees when the kingdom of God was to come, Jesus said, "The kingdom of God is not coming with signs to be seen, nor will people say, 'Here it is' or 'There it is.' ²In truth the kingdom of God is here among you now." F*

Jesus speaks of his second coming

³Then Jesus said to his disciples, "The time is coming when you will long to see the Son of Man, but you will not."

⁴"Some will say, 'There he is!' or 'Here he is!' But do not go running off after them, for the Son of Man on the day he returns will be like the lightning which flashes and lights up the sky from one side to the other."

⁵"But first he must suffer many things and be rejected by this generation."

Day of second coming will be as it was in the days of Noah and Lot

⁶"Just as it was in the days of Noah, so will it be in the days when the Son of Man returns. ⁷People were eating, drinking and marrying up to the day Noah entered the ark. Then the flood came and destroyed them all."

⁸"It was the same in the days of Lot. People were eating, drinking, buying, selling, planting and building. But the day Lot left Sodom, fire and sulphur rained down from heaven and destroyed them all."

One person will be taken and one left

⁹"So shall it be on the day that the Son of Man is revealed. ¹⁰On that night two will be sleeping in one bed and one shall be taken and the other left. ¹¹Two women shall be grinding grain together and one shall be taken and the other left."

Jesus wonders if he will find faith on the earth when he returns?

¹²The disciples said, "Taken where Lord?"

¹³Jesus replied, "Where the carcass is, there the vultures gather. ¹⁴However when the Son of Man comes again will he find faith on the earth?"

Parable of the Pharisee and the tax collector

¹⁵Jesus told this parable to some who were self-righteousness and looked down upon others.

¹⁶"Two men went to the Temple to pray, one was a Pharisee and the other a tax collector. ¹⁷The Pharisee stood with his head erect and prayed saying, 'O God, I thank you that I am not like other men, robbers, evildoers, adulterers, or even like this tax collector here. I fast twice a week and give a tithe of all I get.'"

¹⁸"But the tax collector stood off at a

*2 ie In the authority and power of Jesus himself (see Matt-Mark-Luke 13:29).

distance and would not even lift his eyes to heaven, but he beat his breast and said, 'O God have mercy on me a sinner.'

¹⁹"I say to you, this man rather than the other went home justified before God. ²⁰For every one who exalts himself will be humbled, but he who humbles himself will be exalted."

Is it lawful for a man to divorce his wife?

²¹Jesus then crossed the Jordan into the region of Perea. Great crowds followed him and he healed them there.

²²Some Pharisees came to test him. They asked, "Is it lawful for a man to divorce his wife for any reason?"

²³Jesus answered, "Have you not read that from the beginning the Creator made them male and female and said, 'A man will leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife and the two shall become one flesh.' ²⁴So they are no longer two but one. Therefore what God has joined together let no man put apart."

Why Moses allowed divorce

²⁵They said to him, "Why then did Moses allow a man to give his wife a certificate of divorce and send her away?"

²⁶Jesus replied, "Moses permitted you to divorce your wives because of the hardness of your hearts, but from the beginning it was not so."

Remarrying after divorce adultery unless divorced spouse unfaithful

²⁷"And I say to you that he who divorces his wife, except on grounds of unchastity and marries another, commits adultery against her, and if she divorces her husband and marries another, she commits adultery."

²⁸The disciples said to him, "If such is the case between a man and his wife it is better not to marry."

²⁹Jesus replied, "Not everyone can accept this word, only those to whom it is given.

³⁰For some are eunuchs because they were born that way, others were made that way by men and some have made themselves eunuchs for the sake of the kingdom of God. ³¹He who can accept this should accept it."

Jesus blesses the little children

³²Parents also brought their little children to Jesus to have him lay his hands upon them, but the disciples sternly rebuked them.

³³When Jesus saw this he was indignant and said to them, "Let the little children come to me. Hinder them not, for to such as these belongs the kingdom of God. ³⁴Truly I say to you, anyone who will not receive the kingdom of God like a little child shall not enter it."

³⁵Then he took them in his arms and blessed them and laid his hands upon them.

Jesus told that Herod wants to kill him

³⁶Some Pharisees came to Jesus and said, "Leave this place and go elsewhere for Herod wants to kill you."

³⁷Jesus replied, "Go tell that fox, 'I will drive out demons and heal the people today and tomorrow, and on the third day I will enter Jerusalem. ³⁸For surely no prophet can die outside of Jerusalem."

Jesus mourns the wickedness of Jerusalem

³⁹"O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, you who kill the prophets and stone those who are sent to you. ⁴⁰How often have I longed to gather your children together as a hen gathers her chickens under her wings, but you would not."

⁴¹"Therefore your house will be left deserted. You will not see me again until you say, 'Blessed is he who comes in the name of Jehovah.'"

The wealthy young ruler

⁴²As Jesus started on his way a young ruler ran up to him and falling on his knees said to him, "Good teacher, what must I do to inherit Eternal Life?"

⁴³Jesus said, "Why do you call me good? No one is good except God alone."

⁴⁴"You know the commandments, 'Do not murder. Do not commit adultery. Do not steal. Do not give false testimony. Honour your father and mother. Love your neighbour as yourself.'"

⁴⁵He replied, "All these I have kept since my youth."

⁴⁶Jesus looked on him and loved him, then he said, "There is still one thing you lack. Sell all that you have and give to the poor. Then you will have treasure in heaven, and come follow me."

⁴⁷When the young ruler heard this he was dismayed for he had great wealth. His face fell and he went away.

Hard for the rich to enter the kingdom of God

⁴⁸Jesus looked around and said to his apostles, "How hard it is for those who have riches to enter the kingdom of God. ⁴⁹Indeed, it is easier for a camel to pass through the eye of a needle than for a rich man to enter the kingdom of God."

What is impossible for men is possible with God

⁵⁰The Twelve were amazed when they heard this and asked, "Who then can be saved?"

⁵¹Jesus replied, "What is impossible for men is possible with God."

The Twelve to judge the twelve tribes of Israel

⁵²Peter said to him, "We have left all to follow you. What will there be for us?"

⁵³Jesus said to the Twelve, "In the new world when the Son of Man sits on his glorious throne, you who have followed me will also sit on twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel."

The faithful who give up all will receive a hundred fold in new world and Eternal Life

⁵⁴“And everyone who has left houses, brothers, sisters, father, mother, children, or fields for my sake will receive a hundred times as much, and will inherit Eternal Life.”

⁵⁵But many who are first shall be last, and many who are last shall be first.”

The parable of paying the workers in the vineyard

⁵⁶Then he told them this parable. “For the kingdom of God is like a landowner who went out early in the morning to hire men to work. He agreed to pay them a denarius^{F*} for the day and sent them into his vineyard.”

⁵⁷“About the third hour^{F*} he went out and saw other men standing in the marketplace doing nothing. So he said to them, ‘You also go and work in my vineyard and I will pay you a fair wage.’ So they went.”

⁵⁸“He went out again about the sixth hour, and the ninth hour and did the same thing.”

⁵⁹“About the eleventh hour he went out and found still others standing around. He said to them, ‘Why have you been standing here all day doing nothing?’”

⁶⁰“They answered, ‘No one has hired us.’”

⁶¹“He said to them, ‘You also go and work in my vineyard.’”

⁶²“When evening came, the owner of the vineyard said to his foreman, ‘Call the workers and pay them their wages, beginning with the last ones hired.’”

⁶³“The workers who were hired at the eleventh hour came and each received a denarius. So when those who had been hired first came they expected to receive more. But they too received a denarius.”

⁶⁴“At this they began to grumble against the landowner saying, ‘These men who were hired last worked only one hour, and you have paid them equal to us who have borne the burden of the work and the heat of the day.’”

⁶⁵“The landowner replied, ‘Friend, I am not being unfair to you. Did you not agree to work for a denarius?’”

⁶⁶“Take your pay and go. Do I not have the right to do what I want with my own money? Are you envious because of my generosity?”

⁶⁷“So the last shall be first and the first shall be last.”

Jesus tells the Twelve of his coming death and resurrection

⁶⁸Then Jesus took the Twelve aside and said to them, “We are going up^{F*} to Jerusalem and all that is written by the prophets about the Son of Man shall be fulfilled.”

⁶⁹“He will be betrayed to the chief priests

*56 A denarius was a Roman silver coin and a normal days wage for a labourer.

*57 9am, the Jewish first hour began at 6am.

*68 ‘Up to Jerusalem’ was a common term, because of the height of the city which is built on a mountain ridge 800 metres high.

and teachers of the Law. They will condemn him to death and hand him over to the Gentiles who will mock him, insult him, spit on him, flog him and kill him. And on the third day he shall rise again.”

⁷⁰But the apostles did not understand what Jesus was saying.

The request of the mother of James and John

⁷¹Later that day the mother of the apostles James and John came to Jesus with her two sons, and kneeling down she asked a favour of him saying, “Grant that these two sons of mine may sit at your right and left hand in your kingdom.”

⁷²Jesus said to them, “You do not know what you are asking. Can you drink the cup I am going to drink?”

⁷³James and John answered, “We can.”

To sit at the right or left of Jesus not for him to grant only the Father

⁷⁴Jesus said to them, “You shall indeed drink from my cup, but to sit at my right or left hand is not mine to grant. Those places belong to them for whom they have been prepared by my Father.”

The other apostles indignant with James and John

⁷⁵When the other ten apostles heard of this they were indignant with James and John.

Whoever would be great must serve

⁷⁶But Jesus called them together and said, “You know that the rulers of the Gentiles lord it over them, but it is not to be so among you.”

⁷⁷“Rather, whoever wishes to be great among you must be your servant, just as the Son of Man came to serve and to give his life as a ransom for many.”

⁷⁸Then Jesus set out for Jerusalem.

25

Zacchaeus the wealthy tax collector

¹As Jesus entered Jericho there was a man there by the name of Zacchaeus. He was a chief tax collector and very wealthy. He wanted to see Jesus but being a short man he could not see him because of the crowd. ²So he ran ahead and climbed a sycamore tree as Jesus was coming that way.

Jesus tells Zacchaeus he must stay at his house today

³When Jesus reached the spot he looked up and said to him, “Zacchaeus, come down immediately. I must stay at your house today.”

⁴Zacchaeus climbed down at once and welcomed Jesus gladly. But the people began to murmur saying, “He is going to stay at the house of a sinner”

Zacchaeus repents and agrees to give half his possessions to the poor

⁵But Zacchaeus said to Jesus, “Lord, here and now I vow to give half of my possessions

to the poor, and if I have cheated anybody I will repay them four fold.”

⁶Jesus said to the people, **“Today salvation has come to this house. For this man too is a son of Abraham. The Son of Man came to search out and save the lost.”**

A blind man named Bartimaeus healed

⁷When Jesus and his disciples along with a great crowd were leaving Jericho, a blind man named Bartimaeus was sitting by the roadside begging. ⁸When he was told that it was Jesus of Nazareth he began to shout, “Jesus, Son of David, have mercy on me!”

⁹Many rebuked him and told him to be quiet but he shouted all the louder.

¹⁰Jesus stopped and said, **“Call him to me.”**

¹¹They said to the blind man, “Take heart. He is calling you. Up on your feet.” So throwing his cloak aside he jumped to his feet and made his way through the crowd to Jesus.

¹²Jesus said to him, **“What is it you want me to do for you?”**

¹³The blind man answered, “Rabbi, I want to see.”

¹⁴Jesus said, **“Go, your faith has healed you.”** And immediately the blind man received his sight and followed Jesus along the road.

Jesus sends two disciples into Bethany to fetch the colt of a donkey

¹⁵As they neared Jerusalem and approached Bethany on the Mount of Olives, Jesus sent two of his disciples before him saying, **“Go into the village ahead. As you enter you will see a donkey tied, with her colt alongside of her which no one has ever ridden. Untie them both and bring them to me.”**

¹⁶“If anyone says to you, ‘Why are you doing this?’ say to them, ‘The Lord has need of them and will return them shortly.’”

¹⁷So the two disciples went and found the donkey and her colt outside in the street, tied at a doorway. As they were untying them some people standing there said, “What are you doing?”

¹⁸They answered as Jesus had instructed them and the people let them go.

The triumphal entry into Jerusalem

¹⁹When they brought the donkey and colt to Jesus they threw their cloaks over the colt and Jesus rode it into Jerusalem.

²⁰As he entered the city many of the crowd spread their cloaks on the road while others spread branches they had cut from trees.

²¹Those who went ahead of him and those who followed behind shouted, ²²**“Hosanna!^f* Blessed is he who comes in the name of Jehovah! Blessed is the coming kingdom of our father David! Hosanna in the highest!”**

²³Some of the Pharisees in the crowd said to

Jesus, “Teacher, rebuke your disciples!”

²⁴But he replied, **“If they were to remain silent, the very stones would cry out.”**

Jesus rode a donkey to fulfil scripture

²⁵This took place to fulfil what was spoken through the prophet Zechariah, **“Rejoice greatly O Jerusalem. Your King is coming to you, righteous and having salvation, humble and riding on the foal of a donkey.”^f***

Jesus weeps over Jerusalem and prophesies of its destruction

²⁶When Jesus saw the city he wept over it and prophesied, **“O Jerusalem, if you had only known what would bring you peace, but now it is hidden from your eyes.”**

²⁷**“The days are coming when your enemies will build a siege against you and encircle you on every side. They will dash you to the ground, you and the children within your walls. ²⁸They will not leave within you one stone upon another, for you did not recognise the time of your visitation.”**



To fulfil prophecy Jesus rode a previously unriden donkey colt on his triumphal entry into Jerusalem.

26

Jesus heals in the Temple

¹Jesus entered Jerusalem and went to the Temple. The blind and the lame came to him there and he healed them.

The Jewish leaders indignant at the praising of Jesus by the children

²When the chief priests and teachers of the Law saw the wonderful things Jesus did, and heard the children shouting in the Temple area, **“Hosanna to the Son of David,”^f*** they were indignant. ³They said to him, “Do you hear what these children are saying?”

⁴Jesus replied, **“Have you not read, ‘The mouths of infants and little children praise you?’”**

*²² Hosanna was a Hebrew word, originally meaning ‘save me now I pray’ but it is believed to have lost its original meaning among the Jews and to have become a general exclamation of praise as it is today.

*²⁵ This prophecy is found in Zechariah 4:6.

*² The ‘Son of David’ was another term for the Messiah or Christ. However Jesus rejected this title as being inaccurate. See Matt-Mark-Luke 27:22-25.

MATT-MARK-LUKE 26

Jesus and the Twelve leave the city to stay the night at Bethany

⁵Since it was already late, Jesus left them and went out of the city with the Twelve to Bethany^{F*} where he stayed the night.

Jesus curses a fig tree

⁶The next day,^{F*} early in the morning as they were again going into the city, Jesus was hungry and seeing in the distance a fig tree in leaf he went to see if it had any fruit on it.

⁷But he found nothing but leaves for it was not yet the season for figs. ⁸So he cursed the tree saying, “**May no one eat fruit from you again.**” And his apostles heard him.

Jesus drives out the merchants and money changers from the Temple courtyards

⁸Jesus entered Jerusalem and went into the outer courtyards of the Temple and began to drive out those who were buying and selling there. ⁹He overturned the tables of the currency changers and the benches of those selling doves and would not allow anyone carrying goods for sale to walk through the Temple courtyards.

¹⁰He said to them, “**Is it not written, ‘My house will be a house of prayer for all nations?’ But you have made it a den of thieves.**”

Jewish leaders look for a way to kill Jesus

¹¹The chief priests and teachers of the Law heard of this and began looking for a way to kill Jesus for they feared him, as the whole crowd was amazed at his teaching.

¹²When evening came Jesus and his apostles again went out of the city and stayed at Bethany.

Next morning the fig tree has withered

¹³In the morning as they returned they saw the fig tree withered from its roots. Peter said to Jesus, “Look Rabbi, the fig tree you cursed has withered.”

With faith in God a mountain can be ordered to be cast into the sea

¹⁴Jesus said to his apostles, “**Have faith in God. Truly if any of you say to this mountain, ‘Be taken up and cast into the sea’ and doubt not in your heart but believe it will happen, it will be done for you.**”

When praying believe that you have received it and it will be yours

¹⁵“**Therefore I say to you, whatever you ask for in prayer, believe that you have received it and it shall be yours.**”

But first forgive all others

¹⁶“**But whenever you stand praying, if you hold anything against anyone, first forgive them so that your Father in heaven may forgive you your sins.** ¹⁷For if you forgive

not those who sin against you, neither will your Father in heaven forgive you your sins.”



Bethany where Jesus stayed when he visited Jerusalem.

The city leaders and priests challenge the authority of Jesus

¹⁸They again entered Jerusalem and while Jesus was walking in the Temple courtyards, the chief priests, teachers of the Law and the elders came to him and questioned him saying, “By what authority are you doing these things?”

Jesus questions them about John the Baptist instead

¹⁹Jesus replied, “**I also will ask you a question. Answer me and I will tell you by what authority I do these things. Was the baptism of John from God, or from man?**”

²⁰They discussed this among themselves saying, “If we say ‘From God,’ he will say, ‘Why then did you not believe him?’ But if we say, ‘From man,’ then the people will stone us, for they believe that John was a prophet.”

²¹So they said to Jesus, “We do not know where it came from.”

The parable of the two sons

²²Jesus said, “**Then neither will I tell you by what authority I do these things.**” And he told them this parable:

²³“**What do you think? There was a man who had two sons. He went to the first and said, ‘Son, go work today in the vineyard.’**”

²⁴“**His son answered, ‘I will not go’ but later he repented and went. Then the father went to his other son and said the same thing. That son answered, ‘I will go,’ but did not go.** ²⁵**Which of the two sons did the will of the father?**”

They answered, “The first.”

²⁶Jesus said to them, “**Truly I say to you, tax collectors and harlots will enter the kingdom of God before you do.** ²⁷**For John came to show you the way of righteousness and you believed him not, but tax collectors and harlots did. And even after you saw this you failed to repent and believe in him.**”

*5 Bethany was a small village about 3 kms east of Jerusalem on the road to Jericho. Lazarus and his sisters Martha and Mary lived there.

*6 This was Monday morning. Jesus would die later this same week on Friday afternoon, the day of the Passover, and rise from the dead Sunday morning.

Parable of the unrighteous vineyard tenants

²⁸Jesus told them another parable. “A landowner planted a vineyard. He built a wall around it, dug a pit for the winepress, and erected a watchtower. Then he rented out the vineyard and departed to another land.”

²⁹“At harvest time he sent a servant to the tenants to collect some of the fruit of the vineyard. But they seized the servant and beat him and sent him away empty-handed.”

³⁰“Then the landowner sent a second servant to them. They struck this servant on the head and treated him shamefully.”

³¹“He sent a third and that one they killed. He also sent many others, some of them they beat and others they killed.”

³²“He had one left to send, a son whom he loved. So he sent him last of all thinking, ‘They will surely respect my son.’”

³³“But the tenants said to one another, ‘This is the heir. Let us kill him and the vineyard will be ours.’ ³⁴So they took the son and killed him and threw him out of the vineyard.”

³⁵“What then will the owner of the vineyard do? Will he not come and put all those tenants to a miserable death and rent his vineyard to others who will give him of its fruit?”

³⁶“Have you not read this scripture, ‘The stone the builders rejected has become the capstone?’”

³⁷“Therefore the kingdom of God will be taken from you and given to a people who will produce its fruit.”

The chief priests want to arrest Jesus but fear the crowd

³⁸When the chief priests and the Pharisees heard these parables they perceived that Jesus was speaking of them. ³⁹So they looked for a way to arrest him but were afraid of the crowd, for the people believed that Jesus was a prophet.

The parable of the wedding feast

⁴⁰Jesus told them yet another parable. “The kingdom of God is like a king who prepared a wedding feast for his son. ⁴¹He sent his servants to those who had been invited to the feast, to tell them to come, but they refused.”

⁴²“So he sent more servants and said, ‘Tell those who have been invited that my fattened calves have been killed and everything is ready. Come now to the wedding feast.’”

⁴³“But they paid no attention to them and went off, one to his field, another to his business. Others seized his servants and mistreated them and killed them.”

⁴⁴“The king was enraged at this and sent an army to destroy those murderers and burn their city.”

⁴⁵“Then he said to his servants, ‘The wedding feast is ready but those I invited were not worthy to come. Go out to the street corners and invite to the feast anyone you find.’”

⁴⁶“The servants went out into the streets and gathered all the people they could find, both good and bad and the wedding hall was filled with guests.”

⁴⁷“But when the king came in to see the guests he saw a man there who was not wearing a wedding garment. ⁴⁸So he said to him, ‘My friend, how did you get in here without a wedding garment?’ The man was speechless.”

⁴⁹“So the king said to his servants, ‘Tie him hand and foot and throw him out into the darkness where there will be weeping and grinding of teeth.’”

⁵⁰“For many were invited but few were worthy.”



Vineyard watchtower.

27

The Pharisees plan to trap Jesus in his words

¹The Pharisees then went and took counsel as to how they could trap Jesus in his words.

The Pharisees ask Jesus if it is right to pay taxes to Caesar?

²They sent some of their followers to Jesus along with some of the Herodians* and said to him, “Teacher, we know you are a man of integrity and that you teach the way of God in accordance with the truth and are not swayed by man. ³Tell us then, what do you think? Is it right to pay taxes to Caesar?”

⁴But Jesus, knowing their evil intent said, “You hypocrites, why do you try to trap me? Show me the coin used for paying the tax.”

⁵They gave him a denarius and he said to them, “Whose portrait is this, and whose inscription?”

They replied, “Caesar’s.”

Give to Caesar the things that are Caesar’s

⁶Jesus said to them, “Give therefore to

*3 The Herodians were those loyal to the Roman appointed kings and to Caesar.

MATT-MARK-LUKE 27

Caesar the things that are Caesar's, and to God the things that are God's."

⁷They were amazed at his answer and left him and went away.

The Sadducees question Jesus about the resurrection

⁸Then the Sadducees, who say there is no life after death, came to him with a question.

⁹They said, "Teacher, Moses wrote for us that if a man's brother dies and leaves a wife but no children, he must marry the widow and raise up children for his brother."

¹⁰"Now there were seven brothers. The first one married and died without leaving any children. The second one married the widow but he also died, leaving no child. It was the same with the third and so on down to the seventh, none of them left any children."

¹¹"Last of all the woman died. At the resurrection whose wife will she be, since all seven were married to her?"

¹²Jesus replied, "**You are in error, for you know not the scriptures, nor the power of God? When the dead are resurrected they will neither marry nor be given in marriage, but are like the angels in heaven.**"



The Roman silver denarius, with a portrait of Caesar. It was about the size of a ten cent piece and worth about a day's wages.

Jesus corrects the false belief of the Sadducees concerning life after death

¹³"**And concerning the dead, that they live on,**^{F*} have you not read in the scriptures in the account of the burning bush how God said to Moses, 'I am the God of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob?'"

¹⁴"**He is not God of the dead but of the living. You are quite mistaken in your belief.**"

*13 'Live on,' is a translation of the Greek word 'egeiro' which means 'to regain mental awareness' such as when awakening from sleep. Jesus appears to be confirming that the spirit survives death prior to the resurrection. According to Josephus the Sadducees believed that the spirit died with the body (Josephus, Antiquities, 18:1,4). See also the parable of Lazarus and the rich man (Matt-Mark-Luke 21:26-36).

The two most important commandment

¹⁵One of the teachers of the Law, hearing that Jesus had given the Sadducees a good answer asked him, "Of all the commandments, which is the most important?"

¹⁶Jesus answered, "**The most important commandment is this. 'Love the Lord your God with all your heart, soul, mind and strength. This is the first and most important commandment.'**"

¹⁸"**The second most important is like unto it. 'Love your neighbour as yourself.'**"

¹⁹"**There are no commandments greater than these. On these two commandments are based all the scriptures.**"

Jesus commends the teacher of the Law

²⁰The man replied, "Well said teacher. To love God and to love your neighbour as yourself are more important than burnt offerings and sacrifices."

²¹Jesus saw that he had spoken wisely and said to him, "**You are not far from the kingdom of God.**"

Jesus corrects the Pharisees' false belief concerning the Christ

²²While the Pharisees were gathered together Jesus asked them this question, "**What do you think about the Christ? Whose son is he?**"

They replied, "The son of David."

²³Jesus said to them, "**How is it then, that David speaking by the Holy Spirit calls him Lord? For he said, 'Jehovah said to my Lord, 'Sit at my right hand until I make your enemies a footstool for your feet.'**"^{F*}

²⁵"**If David called him Lord, how can he be his son?**"

No one dares ask Jesus any more questions

²⁶Not one of the Pharisees could say a word in reply, and from that day on none dared ask Jesus any more questions. But great crowds heard him gladly.

Hypocritical teachers of the Law will receive the greater condemnation

²⁷As Jesus taught the people he said, "**Beware the teachers of the Law and the Pharisees. For they love to walk around in flowing robes^{F*} and have people call them Rabbi in the marketplaces and to have the most important seats in synagogues, and places of honour at feasts. They defraud widows of their possessions, and for show say long prayers.**"

²⁹"**Such men will receive the greater condemnation.**"

Do what they teach, not what they do

³⁰Then he said to the crowds and his disciples, "**The teachers of the Law and the Pharisees sit on Moses' seat, therefore do whatever they teach you, but not what they do, for they do not practice what they teach.**"

*24 Psalm 54:1.

*27 Teachers of the Law who were also mostly Pharisees, usually wore long white flowing robes. They were also known as Rabbis, Scribes and Lawyers.

Jesus strongly rebukes the hypocritical teachers of the Law and Pharisees

³¹“Woe to you teachers of the Law and Pharisees! Hypocrites! For you give God a tithe of your mint, rue, and other garden herbs, but you neglect justice and the love of God. These you should do without neglecting the other.”

³²“Woe to you teachers of the Law and Pharisees! Hypocrites! For you love the most important seats in the synagogues, and to be greeted with respect in the marketplace.”

³³“Woe to you teachers of the Law and Pharisees! Hypocrites! You are like white-washed tombs, which appear outwardly beautiful but inside are full of dead men’s bones and all manner of corruption.”

Converts become twice as bad as before

³⁴“Woe to you teachers of the Law and Pharisees! Hypocrites! You travel land and sea to win a single convert and when he becomes one you make him twice as much a son of Gehenna as you are.”

Woe to you blind fools

³⁵“Woe to you blind guides! You say, ‘If a man swears by the Temple it means nothing. But if he swears by the gold of the Temple he is bound by his oath.’”

³⁶“Blind fools! Which is greater, the gold, or the Temple that makes the gold sacred?”

This generation to suffer for the blood of all the prophets of old

³⁷“God in his wisdom has said, ‘I will send them prophets and apostles, some of whom they will kill and others they will persecute.’”

³⁸Therefore this generation will be held accountable for the blood of all the prophets since the beginning of the world. From the blood of Abel to the blood of Zechariah who was killed between the altar and the Temple.”*F*

³⁹“Truly I say to you, all this will come upon this generation.” F*

The poor widow’s offering

⁴⁰Then Jesus sat down in the Temple courtyard opposite the treasury and watched the crowd putting in their offerings. Many who were wealthy put in large amounts of money.

⁴¹But a poor widow came by and put in two small copper coins.

⁴²Jesus called his disciples to him and said, “This poor widow has put more into the treasury than all the others. ⁴³For they gave out of their abundance, but she in her poverty gave from all that she had to live on.”



The widow’s coin, a one cent size lepton. The lowest value coin of the day, crudely made from bronze or copper.

28

Jesus prophesies the destruction of the Temple

¹As Jesus was leaving the Temple one of his disciples said to him, “Look Teacher. What massive stones! What magnificent buildings!”

²Jesus replied, “You see all these great buildings. The time is coming when not one stone here will be left upon another, all will be thrown down.” F*

The apostles ask Jesus when this will happen and what will be the sign of his return

³Later when Jesus was sitting on the Mount of Olives, Peter, James, John and Andrew enquired of him privately, “Tell us when these things will happen, and what will be the sign that they are about to take place?”

⁴“Also, what will be the sign of your return, and of the end of the age?”

The apostles to suffer and testify before kings

⁵Jesus answered his apostles, “As for yourselves, beware, for you will be hated by men for my sake. ⁶They will lay hands upon you and persecute you and will deliver you to synagogues and prisons to be flogged. ⁷You will stand before kings and governors for my sake, and testimony to them of me.”

The Holy Spirit to give the apostles words to speak

⁸“When they bring you to trial, do not concern yourself beforehand with what to say. For at the right time you will be given words and wisdom they will not be able to resist or contradict. ⁹It shall be the Holy Spirit speaking through you.”

Enduring to the end will bring Eternal Life

¹⁰“But not a hair of your head will be lost. By enduring to the end you will gain Eternal Life.”

*38 Accounts of these deaths are found in Genesis 4:6 and 2 Kings 5:16.

*39 This prophecy of Jesus was fulfilled 40 years later in the destruction of Jerusalem by the Romans and the deaths of over 600,000 Jews in AD 70.

*2 This occurred in 70 AD when the temple and the buildings of its courtyards were burned and the stones of the temple dismantled by the Romans to retrieve the melted gold. Furthermore in AD 134 when a false Christ, Simon bar Kosiba led a second rebellion against Rome, most of Jerusalem was razed to the ground by the Romans and the city foundations ploughed up.

The destruction of Jerusalem to come within this generation

11“And when you see Jerusalem being surrounded by armies and the abomination that causes defilement^{F*} set up where it does not belong, you will know that the destruction of Jerusalem is near.”

12“Then let those who are in Judea flee to the mountains. Let those in Jerusalem escape from the city, and those out in the country not enter the city. 13Let no one on the roof of their house enter the house to take anything out, nor anyone out in the field return home to get their cloak. 14Flee and do not turn back. Remember Lot’s wife.”

15“Pray that your flight not take place in winter, nor on the Sabbath. For these will be days of wrath and distress in Judea and against this people unequalled from the beginning of time, and never to be equalled again.” ^{F*}

16“**It will be a time of punishment in fulfillment of that which has been written. Woe to pregnant women and nursing mothers in those days.** 17And if God had not decreed that those days be cut short, none would survive, but for the sake of the elect whom he has chosen he has shortened them.”

18“Truly all this will come upon this generation.”

Surviving Jews to be scattered to all nations

19“Judea shall fall by the sword and the survivors will be taken prisoner and scattered to all nations.”

Jerusalem to be trampled on by the Gentiles

20“Jerusalem will be trampled on by the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles are fulfilled.” ^{F*}

False Christs will arise

21“**And after those days beware that you are not deceived, for men will come in my name and say, ‘I am he’ and will lead many astray.**”

22If any say, ‘Here is the Christ!’ or ‘There he is!’ do not believe them. For false Christs will arise^{F*} and perform signs and miracles to deceive the very elect if possible. 23Do not follow them. Be on guard. I have warned you ahead of time.”

*11 The abomination that causes defilement is something that grossly defiles the temple. See Daniel 10:44 and footnote for a similar abomination where a pig was sacrificed to the god Zeus.

*15 This distress took place about 40 years later in 70 AD, when 600,000 Jews perished and 90,000 were taken captive following a siege of Jerusalem by the Romans. The situation inside the city was unbelievably horrific, with starvation, disease, internal fighting and cannibalism. The magnificent temple was completely destroyed soon after and has never been rebuilt. And 64 years later in AD 134, another 580,000 Jews were killed in a second and final Roman invasion.

*20 This time of fulfillment may have been accomplished at the time of the six day war in 1967 when the Jews regained control of Jerusalem for the first time since AD134.

*22 At least ten false Jewish Christs have arisen, Simon bar Kosiba, 2nd century AD; Moses, 5th century AD; Abu Isa al-Isphani, 9th century AD; Serene, 9th century AD; Yudghan, 9th century AD; David Alroy, 13th century AD; Abraham Abulafia, 14th century AD; David Reuveni, 17th century AD; Solomon Molko, 17th century AD and Shabbatai Tzevi in 1665 AD.

Nation to war against nation and earthquakes, famines and plagues

24“**When you hear of wars and the sound of war, do not fear, for these things must first take place. Nation will war against nation and there will be great earthquakes, famines and plagues in various places, and fearful events and great signs in the sky.**”

25“**All these are but the beginning of the birth pains.**”

False prophets to arise

26“**In those days many will turn from the faith and will betray and hate one another, and many false prophets will arise and deceive many.**”

Family members to take one others lives

27“**Brother will betray brother to death, and a father his child. Children will rebel against their parents and take their lives.**”

Wickedness to increase and the love of most will grow cold

28“**Because of increased wickedness the love of most will grow cold. But he who endures to the end will be saved.**”



The west foundation wall or ‘Wailing Wall’ of the Temple of Jesus’ day. This is all that remains of the original structure which was levelled by the Romans in 70 AD.

The gospel to again be preached in all the world

29“**And then this gospel of the kingdom will again be preached in all the world, as a testimony to all nations. Then the end will come.**”

Great tribulation to come in final days and the sun and moon will be darkened

30“**In the final days, immediately following great tribulation, ‘The rising sun shall be darkened and the moon will not shed its light, and the stars of the heavens will not be seen.’^{F*} 31And stars will fall from the heavens.**”

Great waves of the sea will roar and bring distress and terror

32“**Nations shall be in great distress at the roaring and great waves of the sea.**”

*30 Jesus is quoting a prophecy of Isaiah (Isaiah 8:4).

33 People will faint with terror, fearful of what is coming on the earth for the powers of the heavens will be shaken."

All nations will see the Son of Man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory

34 "Then the sign of the Son of Man will appear in the sky, and all nations of the earth shall mourn. **35** They will see the Son of Man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory."

Angels to gather the elect with loud trumpet call

36 "He will send his angels with a loud trumpet call and they will gather his elect from the four winds, from ends of the earth to the ends of the heavens."

Parable of the signs of the fig tree

37 "Learn this lesson from the fig tree. When its twigs become tender and leaves appear, you know that summer is near."

38 "Even so, when all these things begin to be seen, people shall know that the Son of Man is near, even at the door."

Christ's coming to occur in the generation in which all the signs are seen

39 "Truly I say to you, that generation will not pass away until all these things take place."

40 "The heavens and the earth shall pass away but my words will never pass away."

No one knows the day only the Father

41 "But that day or hour no one knows, neither the angels in heaven nor the Son, only the Father." ^{F*}

One will be taken and the other left

42 "Two men will be in the field, one shall be taken and the other left. Two women shall be grinding with a hand mill, one will be taken and the other left."

43 "Therefore keep watch, for you know not on what day your Lord will return."

The parable of the thief in the night

44 "For if the owner of the house had known what time of night the thief was coming, he would have kept watch and would not have let his house be broken into."

45 "So you too must be ready, for the Son of Man will come at an hour when you expect him not."

29

The parable of the wise and foolish virgins

1 "In those days the kingdom of God will be like ten virgins who took their lamps and went out to meet the bridegroom. **2** Five of them were foolish and five were wise."

3 "The foolish virgins took their lamps but had no spare oil. The wise however took spare oil in jars along with their lamps."

4 "The bridegroom was a long time in

coming and they all fell asleep. At midnight the cry rang out, 'The bridegroom is here! Come out to meet him!'"

5 "All the virgins awoke and trimmed their lamps. The foolish ones said to the wise, 'Give us some of your spare oil for our lamps are going out.'"

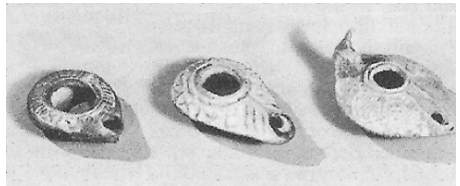
6 "But they replied, 'There may not be enough for both of us. Go rather to those who sell and buy for yourself.'"

7 "So they went to buy oil, but while they were away the bridegroom arrived. The five virgins who were prepared went in with him to the wedding banquet."

8 "Later the others came also and called out, 'Lord! Lord! Open the door for us.'"

9 "But he replied, 'I do not know you.'"

10 "Therefore keep watch, for you know not the day or hour of my return."



Israelite olive oil lamps.

The parable of the talents

11 "Again in that day it will be like a man going on a journey who called his servants and entrusted his property to them. To one he gave five talents of silver.^{F*} To another two talents, and to another one talent. Each according to his ability. Then he went on his journey."

12 "The man who was given five talents went at once and put his money to work and gained five more talents. So also the one with the two talents, he gained two more."

13 But the man who had been given one talent went and dug a hole in the ground and buried his master's money."

14 "After a long time the master of those servants returned. The man who had received five talents brought the other five and said, 'Master, you entrusted me with five talents. See I have gained five more.'"

15 "His master replied, 'Well done my good and faithful servant. As you have been faithful with a few things I will set you over many things. Come enter into the joy of your master.'"

16 "The man with the two talents also came forward and said, 'Master you entrusted me with two talents. See, I have gained two more.'"

17 "His master replied, 'Well done my good and faithful servant. As you have been faithful with a few things I will set you over many things. Come enter into the joy of your master.'"

*41 This remark by Jesus clearly reveals the superiority of God the Father. See also Revelation 1:1.

*11 A talent of silver was a large sum of money, approx 3000 shekels, about ten years wages for a labourer.

MATT-MARK-LUKE 30

18“Then the man who had received one talent came forward and said, ‘Master I knew you were a hard man, harvesting where you had not sown. So I feared and went out and buried your talent in the ground. See, here is what belongs to you.’”

19“His master replied, ‘You wicked and lazy servant! Why did you not at least invest my money with the bankers so that when I returned I would receive it back with interest?’”

20“Take the one talent from him and give it to him who has ten talents. For to everyone who has, more will be given and they will have in abundance. But whoever has not, even what they have shall be taken from them.”

21“**And throw that worthless servant into outer darkness where there will be weeping and grinding of teeth.**”

At day of judgement people to be separated like sheep from goats

22“**When the Son of Man has come in his glory, and all the angels with him, he will sit upon his throne in heavenly glory.**”

23“**Then shall be gathered before him all the nations, and he will separate the people one from another as a shepherd separates the sheep from the goats.** 24**He will put the sheep on his right hand and the goats on his left.**” F*

Caring people to inherit the kingdom of God

25“**The King will say to those on his right, ‘Come you blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the creation of the world.’**”

26“**For I was hungry and you fed me, I was thirsty and you gave me a drink, I was a stranger and you welcomed me in, I was naked and you clothed me, I was sick and you took care of me, I was in prison and you came to visit me.**”

27“**Then the righteous will answer, ‘Lord, when did we see you hungry and feed you, or thirsty and give you a drink? When did we see you a stranger and welcome you in, or naked and clothed you? When did we care for you when sick or visit you in prison?’**”

28“**The King will reply, ‘Truly I say to you, whenever you did it for the least of these my brothers, you did it for me.’**”

Uncaring people to inherit Eternal Punishment

29“**Then he will say to those on his left, ‘Depart from me you cursed into the Eternal Fire’* prepared for the devil and his angels.**”

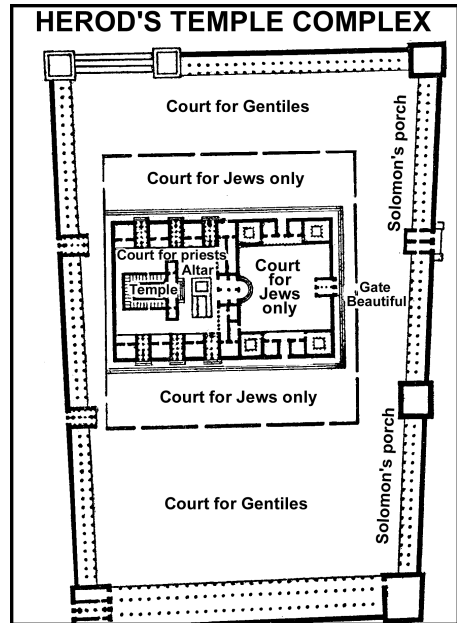
30“**For I was hungry and you would not**

feed me, I was thirsty and you gave me nothing to drink, I was a stranger and you did not welcome me in, I was naked and you did not clothe me, I was sick, and in prison, and you did not care for me.”

31“**They will answer, ‘Lord, when did we see you hungry, or thirsty, or a stranger, or needing clothes, or sick, or in prison, and did not help you?’**”

32“**He will reply, ‘Truly I say to you, whenever you did it not for the least of these brothers of mine, you did it not for me.’**”

33“**Then shall they go away into Eternal Punishment, but the righteous into Eternal Life.**”



Floor plan of the Temple in the days of Jesus. Only the high priest was permitted to enter the Temple proper, and only priests the inner court.

30

Jesus to be crucified during the Passover in two days time

1When Jesus had finished saying all these things he said to his disciples, “**The Passover is two days away. At that time the Son of Man will be handed over to be crucified.**”

The leaders plot to arrest Jesus stealthily

2The chief priests and elders of the people had assembled in the palace of the high priest and plotted to arrest Jesus in some stealthy way and kill him. But they said, “**Not during the Feast of the Passover or there may be a riot among the people.**” F*

*2 The feast of the Passover lasted eight days and huge numbers of Jews gathered to Jerusalem. In AD 70 when Jerusalem was destroyed there were approx a million Jews gathered for Passover.

*24 This great day of judgement will not take place immediately after Jesus returns. The more detailed book of Revelation reveals that it will occur after the one thousand year reign of Christ on earth known as the Millennium when all of the wicked and also those born during the Millennium have been resurrected. However see Daniel 5:10-18 and footnote regarding a preliminary judgement just prior to the second coming of Jesus Christ.

*29 This Greek word for fire 'pur' is often used in a figurative sense such as when describing a severe trial or ordeal.

Jesus teaches daily at the Temple

³“Every day Jesus taught at the Temple, and every evening he would go out and stay the night in the town of Bethany, on the Mount of Olives.

⁴All the people would come early in the morning to hear him teach at the Temple.

Mary anoints Jesus with expensive perfumed oil

⁵While Jesus was at Bethany, in the house of Simon the Leper, a woman named Mary^{F*} came in. She brought with her an alabaster jar of very expensive perfumed oil, pure nard.^{F*}

⁶As Jesus reclined at the table she broke the jar and poured it on his head. ⁷Then she wiped his feet with her hair and kissed them and anointed them with the perfumed oil, and also his head. The fragrance filled the room.

Judas is critical of the waste of money

⁸Some of the disciples present were indignant at this and rebuked the woman harshly. ⁹Judas Iscariot one of the Twelve said, “Why this waste? This perfume could have been sold for 300 denarii^{F*} and the money given to the poor.”

Judas rebukes Judas and those bothering the woman

¹⁰But Jesus said, “Why are you bothering this woman? She has done a beautiful thing to me. ¹¹The poor you always have with you and can help them anytime you wish. But you will not always have me.”

¹²“She has done what she could. When she poured this perfumed oil on my body she did so to prepare me for burial.”

¹³“Truly, wherever this gospel is preached throughout the world what she has done will also be told, in memory of her.”

Judas goes to the chief priests to offer to hand Jesus over to them

¹⁴At this rebuke Satan entered into Judas Iscariot and he went out to find the chief priests, to offer to hand Jesus over.

The chief priests are pleased and pay Judas thirty silver coins

¹⁵Judas went to the chief priests and said to them, “What are you willing to pay me if I hand him over to you?”

¹⁶When the chief priests heard this they were pleased, and counted out for Judas thirty silver coins.^{F*}

¹⁷From then on Judas waited for an opportunity for them to arrest Jesus when no crowd was present.

Peter and John prepare the Passover supper

¹On the first day of the Feast,^{F*} when it was customary to sacrifice the Passover lamb Peter and John came to Jesus and said, “Where do you want us to prepare the Passover supper?”

²Jesus replied, “Go into Jerusalem. You will see a man carrying a jar of water. Follow him, and say to the owner of the house he enters, ‘The Teacher says, My appointed time is near. I am going to celebrate the Passover with my apostles at your house.’”

³“He will show you a large upper room, furnished and ready.”

⁴So the two apostles left and found things just as Jesus had told them and they prepared the Passover.



Traditional site of the upper room.

The last supper

⁵When it was dark^{F*} Jesus arrived with the rest of the Twelve.

⁶As they reclined at the table eating, Jesus said, “I have eagerly awaited the eating of this Passover with you before I suffer. For I will not eat it again until it finds fulfilment in the kingdom of God.”

The greatest to be one who serves

⁷During the meal a dispute again arose among the apostles as to which of them was the greatest. But Jesus said to them, “The kings of the Gentiles lord it over them, but you are not to be like that.”

⁸“Instead, the greatest among you should be as the youngest, and the one who rules like the one who serves. For I am among you as one who serves.”^{F*}

The apostles to sit on thrones and judge the twelve tribes of Israel

⁹“Nevertheless, you are they who have stood by me in my trials, and I confer upon

*5 The sister of Lazarus and Martha (see John 12:3).

*5 A highly fragrant rose-red oil extracted from the spikenard plant of India. It was normally kept in a sealed, long necked flask which contained just enough for one application.

*9 About a year's wages for a labourer.

*25 About 120 denarii, approx five month's wages. See also the prophecy of this event in Zechariah 4:33-34.

*1 The Passover.

*5 The daylight hours of this day would have been Thursday, but as the Jews start their following day at 6pm or sunset, it was now Friday. Jesus died during the daylight hours of the next day, the day observed by Christians as Good Friday.

*8 John in his gospel records that at this point Jesus demonstrated this law by washing the feet of his apostles (John 13:3-12).

MATT-MARK-LUKE 31

you a kingdom just as my Father conferred a kingdom upon me.”

¹⁰“You will eat and drink at my table in my kingdom and sit on thrones judging the twelve tribes of Israel.”

Jesus tells the Twelve that one of them will betray him

¹¹Then Jesus said, “Truly one of you will betray me, one who is dipping bread in the bowl with me. ¹²The Son of Man will go as it is written but woe to he who betrays him. It would be better for that man never to have been born.”

¹³The apostles were dismayed at these words. They said to Jesus one after the other, “Surely not I Lord?” Judas also said, “Surely not I Rabbi?”

Judas goes out into the night

¹⁴Jesus answered Judas, “Your own lips have said it. What you are about to do, do quickly.” Judas immediately went out into the night.

Jesus gives bread and wine to his apostles in remembrance of his body and blood

¹⁵Then Jesus took bread and, gave thanks and broke it and gave it to his disciples saying, “This is my body given for you, do this in remembrance of me.”

¹⁶Then after taking a cup he gave thanks and said, “Take this and drink from it, all of you, for this is the blood of the covenant which is poured out for many for the forgiveness of sins.”

Jesus to one day drink new wine with his apostles in the kingdom of God

¹⁷“For I say to you I will not drink again of the fruit of the vine until that day when I drink it new^{F*} with you in the kingdom of God.”

Peter to strengthen the other apostles when he is truly converted

¹⁸Then Jesus said, “Peter, Peter, Satan desires to sift you all as wheat, but I have prayed for you Peter that your faith will not fail. When you are converted, strengthen your brothers.”

¹⁹“This very night you will all fall away from me, for it is written, ‘I will smite the shepherd and the sheep will be scattered.’”

²⁰Peter replied, “Lord, I am ready to go with you to prison, and to death.”

Peter told that he will deny Jesus three times that night

²¹Jesus answered, “I say to you Peter, before the cock crows in the morning you will three times deny that you know me.”

²²Peter said, “Even if I must die with you I will never deny that I know you.” And all the others said the same.



The former Temple area of Jerusalem today. On part of the site is an Islamic mosque known as the Dome of the Rock.

Protection of Jesus to be withdrawn from the apostles for a time

²³Then Jesus said to the apostles, “When I sent you out without money, bag or sandals, did you lack for anything?”

²⁴They answered, “We lacked for nothing.”

²⁵Jesus said to them, “Now at this time, if you have money, take it and also a bag, and if you do not have a sword, sell your cloak and buy one. For it is written, ‘He will be numbered with the transgressors.’ ⁵²What is written of me is about to be fulfilled.”

²⁶One of the apostles said, “Lord, here are two swords.”

Jesus replied, “That is enough.”

They go out to an olive grove called Gethsemane

²⁷When they had sung a hymn, they left the city and went out to the Mount of Olives, to an olive grove called Gethsemane where Jesus often went with his apostles.

Jesus is sorrowful and troubled

²⁸On reaching Gethsemane, Jesus said to his apostles, “Sit here while I go over there and pray.”

²⁹And taking Peter, James and John with him Jesus began to be very sorrowful and troubled.

³⁰Then he said to them, “My soul is overwhelmed with sorrow, even to death. Stay here and keep watch with me.”

Jesus prays that his Father will remove the suffering if possible

³¹Going a little further, about a stone’s throw he fell with his face to the ground and prayed, “O Father if it be possible may this cup be taken from me.”

Yet not my will but yours be done

³²“Yet not my will but yours be done.”

An angel comes to strengthen Jesus

³³Then an angel from heaven appeared and strengthened Jesus.

Jesus sweats blood in great anguish

³⁴And Jesus being in great anguish, prayed more earnestly and his sweat became like drops of blood falling to the ground.^{F*}

*17 ‘new’ probably meaning fresh grape juice in its unfermented state. However the term ‘new wine’ can refer to both freshly extracted grape juice not yet fermented and newly fermented wine.

*34 This occurrence is known as hematidrosis where blood mingles with sweat in times of extreme anguish.



Painting of Jesus in Gethsemane.

The apostles cannot remain awake

³⁵Afterward Jesus returned to his three apostles and found them sleeping. He said to Peter, “**Could you not watch with me one hour?**”

³⁶“**Watch, and pray that you do not fall into temptation. The spirit is willing but the flesh is weak.**”

³⁷Jesus went away a second time and prayed, “**O Father if it be not possible for this cup to be taken away unless I drink it, your will be done.**”

³⁸When Jesus came back he again found the apostles asleep, for their eyes were heavy.

³⁹They did not know what to say to him. So he left them and went away once more and prayed the third time, saying the same words.



The olive grove of Gethsemane.

Judas arrives with an armed force to arrest Jesus

⁴⁰Then Jesus returned to his apostles and said to them, “**Are you still sleeping? Behold, the hour has come for the Son of Man to be betrayed into the hands of sinners. Arise, my betrayer is here.**”

⁴¹While he was still speaking, Judas one of the Twelve arrived. With him was a large force of men sent from the chief priests, the teachers of the Law and the elders of the people. They were armed with swords and clubs.

Judas identifies Jesus with a kiss

⁴²Judas had arranged a signal with them saying, “The one I kiss is the man to arrest.”

⁴³Going at once to Jesus, Judas said, “Greetings Rabbi,” and kissed him.

⁴⁴Jesus replied, “**Judas, why have you come? Are you betraying the Son of Man with a kiss?**”

Peter attacks the high priest’s servant and cuts off his ear

⁴⁵Then the men seized Jesus and arrested him. But Peter drew the sword and attacked the servant of the high priest, cutting off his ear.

Jesus rebukes Peter and restores the ear

⁴⁶But Jesus commanded, “**No more of this!**” And he touched the man’s ear and healed him.

⁴⁷Then he said to Peter, “**Put away the sword, for all who draw the sword perish by the sword.**”

⁴⁸“**Do you not think that I can call on my Father, and he would at once send me more than twelve legions of angels? ⁴⁹But how then would the scriptures be fulfilled, that say it must happen in this way?**”

Darkness reigns that prophecy be fulfilled

⁵⁰Then he said to the mob that had come for him, “**Am I leading a rebellion that you come out with swords and clubs to capture me? Every day I sat in the Temple courtyards teaching and you did not arrest me.**”

⁵¹“**But this is your hour, when darkness reigns. This is taking place that the writings of the prophets might be fulfilled.**”

The apostles flee

⁵²Then the apostles deserted Jesus and fled.

32

Jesus taken before high priest and Jewish leaders

¹Those who had arrested Jesus took him to Caiaphas the high priest, where the teachers of the Law and the elders had assembled.

Peter follows at a distance

²Peter followed at a distance, to the courtyard of the high priest. Then he entered the courtyard and sat down with the guards who were warming themselves at a fire to see what would happen.



The courtyard of the high priest's palace in Jerusalem.

The Jewish leaders look for testimony to put Jesus to death

³The chief priests and the whole of the Sanhedrin^{F*} were looking for testimony against Jesus to put him to death, but they did not find any. Many false witnesses came forward but their statements did not agree.

⁴Finally two came forward and said, "This man declared, 'Destroy this temple of God and I will rebuild it in three days.'" ^{F*}

Jesus remains silent

⁵The high priest stood up and said to Jesus, "Have you no answer to the testimony that these men are bringing against you?" But Jesus was silent.

The high priest orders Jesus to reveal if he is the Christ

⁶The high priest said to him, "I order you under oath in the name of the living God, tell us, are you the Christ, the Son of God?"

Jesus confirms he is the Christ

⁷Jesus replied, "I am, and I say to you all, the day is coming when you will see the Son of Man seated at the right hand of the Almighty One, and coming in the clouds of heaven." ^{F*}

The high priest angrily accuses Jesus of blasphemy

⁸At these words the high priest tore his garment and said, "He has spoken blasphemy! Why do we need any more witnesses? You have all heard the blasphemy. What is your judgement?"

⁹They answered, "He deserves to die."

*3 The Sanhedrin was the Jewish governing body of seventy elders presided over by the high priest.

*4 The temple Jesus had referred to was his own body.

*7 This statement would appear to indicate that the Father is to accompany Jesus when he returns. See also Psalms 54:5, 1 Thessalonians 1:28, 2:11, Titus 1:25 and note on Revelation 1:4.

The Jewish leaders and guards mock and beat Jesus

¹⁰Then they spat in his face and punched him with their fists. Others blindfolded Jesus then slapped him and said, "Prophecy to us Christ. Who hit you?"

¹¹The guards then took Jesus and beat him further and said many insulting things to him.

Peter denies Jesus three times

¹²Now Peter was below in the courtyard with the guards and a servant girl of the high priest came up and peered closely at him and said, "You also were with Jesus of Galilee."

¹³But Peter denied it saying, "Woman, I do not know what you are talking about."

¹⁴Peter then went out and stood in the gateway. There the servant girl saw him again and said to the bystanders, "This man is one of them."

¹⁵Peter denied it again, this time with an oath and said, "I do not know the man!"

¹⁶About an hour later, those standing there said to Peter, "Surely you are one of them for your Galilean accent gives you away."

¹⁷At this Peter began to call down curses on himself and swore to them, "I do not know the man you are talking about!"

Peter goes out and weeps bitterly

¹⁸Immediately a rooster crowed and Jesus turned and looked out toward Peter. Then Peter remembered the words Jesus had spoken to him, "Before the cock crows in the morning you will three times deny that you know me."

¹⁹And he went outside and wept bitterly.

Jesus officially condemned to death

²⁰Very early in the morning the chief priests, teachers of the Law and the elders of the people met officially and confirmed the decision to put Jesus to death.

Judas is filled with remorse

²¹When Judas who had betrayed him heard that Jesus was condemned to death, he was filled with remorse.

Judas returns the silver coins then hangs himself

²²He took the thirty silver coins back to the chief priests and said, "I have sinned. I have betrayed innocent blood."

²³They replied, "What is that to us? It is your concern."

²⁴Judas threw the money into the Temple and then went away and hanged himself.

The priests use the money to buy potter's field as a burial field for foreigners

²⁵The chief priests picked up the coins and said, "It is against the Law to put this into the treasury for it is blood money."

²⁶(They eventually used the money to buy the potter's field as a burial place for strangers. That is why it is called the Field of Blood to this day.)



The potter's burial field in the valley of Hinnom (Gehenna) purchased with the blood money that Judas returned.

33

Jesus accused before Pilate the Roman governor

¹Early that morning^{F*} the Jewish leaders bound Jesus and led him before Pilate, the Roman governor.

²There they began to accuse him saying, "We have found this man subverting our nation. He opposes payment of taxes to Caesar and claims to be the Christ, a king."

³Pilate said to Jesus, "Are you the king of the Jews?"

⁴Jesus replied, "**Your own lips have said it,**"

⁵The chief priests continued to accused Jesus of many other things, but he remained silent.

Jesus makes no reply to the charges

⁶Pilate said to him, "Do you not hear the testimony they are bringing against you?"

⁷But Jesus made no reply, not even to a single charge, to the great amazement of the governor.

Pilate finds no basis for the charges against Jesus

⁸ Finally Pilate announced to the chief priests and the crowd, "I find no basis for the charges against this man."

⁹But they insisted saying, "He stirs up the people all over Judea by his teaching. He started in Galilee and has come all the way here."

*1 Before 6am (see John 17:28 and note), no doubt to avoid the crowds and opposition from those who believed Jesus to be a prophet. Pilate was probably roused from his bed which would explain the account of his wife's dream later that morning (Matt-Mark-Luke 33:20). Jesus was on the cross before 9-30am (Matt-Mark-Luke 34:4).

Pilate sends Jesus to Herod the governor of Galilee

¹⁰On hearing that Jesus was a Galilean and therefore under Herod's jurisdiction, Pilate sent him to Herod who was in Jerusalem for the Passover.

Jesus refuses to speak to Herod

¹¹When Herod saw Jesus, he was greatly pleased, for he had been wanting to see him for a long time and hoped to see him perform a miracle.

¹²He asked Jesus many questions but Jesus gave him no answer. ¹³All the time the chief priests and the teachers of the Law were standing there, vehemently accusing him.

Herod and his soldiers mock Jesus then return him to Pilate

¹⁴So Herod and his soldiers ridiculed and mocked Jesus, and after arraying him in a royal robe they returned him to Pilate.

¹⁵That day Herod and Pilate became friends. Before this they had been enemies.

Pilate tries to free Jesus

¹⁶Pilate called together the chief priests and the leaders and the people and said to them, "You brought me this man as one who was inciting the people to rebellion. I have examined him in your presence and have found no basis for your charges. ¹⁷Neither has Herod for he sent him back to me."

¹⁷"He has done nothing deserving of death. Therefore I will have him flogged and then release him."

¹⁸But with one voice they cried out, "Crucify this man!"

The dream of Pilate's wife

¹⁹Now Pilate knew that it was because of jealousy they had handed Jesus over to him.

²⁰Also, while Pilate was sitting on the judge's seat his wife had sent him this message, "Have nothing to do with that innocent man for I dreamed this morning that I will suffer much because of him." ^{F*}

Pilate threatens to release a violent criminal Barabbas

²¹Now it was the governor's custom at each Passover to release a prisoner, chosen by the crowd.

²²At that time there was a notorious prisoner called Barabbas who was in prison for causing a revolt in the city and for murder. So Pilate said to them, "Which one do you want me to release to you, Barabbas, or Jesus who is called the Christ?"

The crowd chooses Barabbas over Jesus

²³The chief priests and the elders persuaded the crowd to ask for Barabbas and to have Jesus put to death. So they answered, "Release Barabbas to us."

Crucify him!

²⁴Pilate replied, "What then shall I do with

*20 Pilate's political career ended six years later and according to historian Eusebius, 'wearied with misfortunes' he soon afterwards took his own life.

MATT-MARK-LUKE 34

Jesus who is called the Christ?"

²⁵They all shouted, "Crucify him!"

²⁶Wanting to release Jesus, Pilate appealed to them again saying, "Why? What crime has he committed?"

²⁷But they shouted all the louder, "Crucify him!"

Pilate has Jesus flogged

²⁸At this Pilate released Barabbas and handed Jesus over to his soldiers to be flogged.^{F*}

²⁹After the flogging the soldiers took Jesus into the governor's palace and gathered the whole company of soldiers around him.

The Roman soldiers mock Jesus

³⁰The soldiers stripped Jesus and then placed the royal robe back upon him.

³¹They also twisted together a crown of thorns and set it on his head and placing a staff in his right hand they knelt in front of him and mocked him saying, "Hail king of the Jews."

³²Then they took turns at spitting on Jesus and striking him on the head with the staff.

Pilate tries again in vain to release Jesus

³³After this, Pilate once more led Jesus out before the people. He was still wearing the thorns and the robe. But as soon as the chief priests and leaders saw him they again shouted, "Crucify him! Crucify him!"

³⁴For the third time Pilate said, "I have found in him no grounds for death. Therefore I will release him."



Roman soldiers.

Pilate yields to the demands of the people

³⁵But with loud shouts they insistently demanded that he be crucified. When Pilate saw that he was getting nowhere, but rather that a riot was starting he decided to yield to their demand.

Pilate washes his hands of innocent blood

³⁶But first he called for a bowl of water, and washing his hands before the crowd he said to them, "I am innocent of the blood of this man.

^{*27} The Romans flogged with a multi-thonged, leather whip embedded with bone and lead inserts at the tips. Sometimes victims did not survive the flogging.

The responsibility is yours."

³⁷The crowd answered, "His blood be upon us and upon our children!"

Pilate hands Jesus back over to his soldiers to be crucified

³⁸Then Pilate handed Jesus back to his soldiers to be crucified.

³⁹They removed the royal robe from Jesus and put his own clothes back upon him, then they led him away, carrying his own cross.

Simon of Cyrene carries the cross

⁴⁰As they were going out of the city they met a man named Simon from Cyrene,^{F*} coming into Jerusalem. They put the cross on him and made him carry it behind Jesus.

Jesus prophesies of troubled times to come to the weeping women

⁴¹A large crowd of people followed Jesus, including women who wept and wailed for him.

⁴²Jesus turned to them and said, "Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for me, weep for yourselves and for your children. For the time will come when you will say, 'Blessed are the barren women.'" ^{F*}

⁴³"Then will come the day when your children will say to the mountains, 'Fall upon us! Cover us!'" ^{F*}

⁴⁴"For if men do these things when the tree is green, what will they do when it is dry?"

Two criminals also led out to be crucified

⁴⁵Two other men, both criminals were also led out with Jesus to be crucified.



Street through which Jesus probably carried his cross.

34

Jesus is crucified

¹They came to the place called Golgotha which means Place of the Skull, or Calvary to the Romans.

^{*40} A city of Libya in North Africa.

^{*42} Jesus is referring to the terrible siege and destruction of Jerusalem that would take place in about 40 years time.

^{*43} Jesus is referring to the time of his glorious second coming.

²There they offered Jesus wine mixed with gall,^{F*} but after tasting it he refused to drink it.

³Then they crucified him, along with the two criminals, one on his right and the other on his left. Above his head they placed the written charge against him which stated, *'This is Jesus, the King of the Jews.'*

⁴It was now the third hour.^{F*}



The hill site of the crucifixion known as Golgotha, Calvary or Place of the Skull. In the foreground is the tomb area where Jesus was buried.

Jesus prays that the Roman soldiers be forgiven

⁵As the soldiers were crucifying^{F*} him Jesus prayed, **"Father forgive them, for they know not what they do."**

The soldiers divide up his clothes

⁶When they had crucified Jesus the soldiers divided up his clothes by casting lots, and then sitting down they kept watch over him.

Jewish leaders, soldiers and those passing by mock Jesus

⁷As the crowd stood by watching, the Jewish leaders scoffed saying, "He saved others, if he is the Christ of God, the Chosen One let him save himself."

⁸The soldiers also mocked him saying, "If you are the king of the Jews, save yourself."

⁹Those who passed by also insulted him, shaking their heads and saying, "You who were going to destroy the Temple and rebuild it in three days, come down from the cross and save yourself."

¹⁰"Let this Christ, this King of Israel come down now from the cross that we may see and believe."

One of the two criminals believes in Jesus

¹¹Even one of the criminals who hung there kept deriding him saying, "Are you not the Christ? Save yourself and us."

¹²But the other criminal rebuked him saying, "Do you not fear God? We are punished justly, getting what our deeds deserve, but this man has done nothing wrong."

¹³Then he said, "Jesus, remember me when you come into your kingdom."

Jesus promises the criminal that he will be with him in Paradise that same day

¹⁴Jesus said to him, **"Truly I say to you, today you will be with me in Paradise."**^{F*}

Three hours of darkness

¹⁵At about noon, darkness fell over the whole land until the ninth hour,^{F*} for the sun was darkened.

Jesus cries out to the Father

¹⁶About the ninth hour Jesus cried out in a loud voice saying, **"Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani?"** which means in Aramaic, **"My God, my God, why have you forsaken me?"**

¹⁷When some of those standing there heard this they said, "He is calling Elijah."

¹⁸Immediately one of them took a sponge and soaked it with sour wine^{F*} and put it on a stick and offered it to Jesus to drink.

¹⁹Others then said, "Now leave him alone, let us see if Elijah comes to save him."

Jesus dies

²⁰Then Jesus cried out with a loud voice, **"Father, into your hands I commit my spirit."** When he had said this, Jesus died.

The veil of the Temple splits, an earthquake, and many holy people resurrected

²¹At that moment the veil^{F*} of the Temple was torn in two from top to bottom. The earth shook and the rocks split. ²²Tombs broke open and the bodies of many holy saints^{F*} who had died arose to life and came out of the tombs.

The resurrected saints later show themselves to others

²³(After the resurrection of Jesus they appeared to many in Jerusalem.)

The onlookers are awed

²⁴When the Roman centurion and the soldiers with him felt the earthquake, and seeing all else that had happened, they feared greatly and said, "Surely this was a righteous man."

²⁵The crowd who had gathered beat their breasts^{F*} and went away. Some said, "Surely he was the Son of God."

The followers of Jesus watch from a distance

²⁶All those who knew Jesus, including the women who had followed him from Galilee to care for his needs from their own means stood at a distance, watching these things.

²⁷Among them were Mary Magdalene from whom seven demons had come out, Mary the mother of James and Jose, Salome the mother of the apostles James and John, and many other women who had come up with him to Jerusalem.

*14 Paradise was the blissful, garden-like area of the spirit world of the dead where the righteous dwelt awaiting the resurrection. It was also known as 'The bosom of Abraham.' See note on Matt-Mark-Luke 21:28.

*15 From 12pm until 3pm.

*18 An acidic wine drink, popular with soldiers and labourers.

*21 The curtain that concealed the Most Holy Place.

*22 The term 'saints' refers to faithful members of the church of God.

*25 A sign of grief.

*2 A pain-deadening narcotic.

*4 About 9am Friday morning.

*5 In crucifixion, thick wrought-iron nails were driven through the wrists and heel bones.

MATT-MARK-LUKE 35

Joseph a ruler asks Pilate for the body of Jesus

²⁸Now there was a man named Joseph who had become a disciple of Jesus. He was a member of the ruling Sanhedrin Council, a good and upright man who had not consented to their decision and action. Going boldly to Pilate he asked for the body of Jesus.

²⁹Pilate was surprised to hear that Jesus was already dead. When he confirmed with the centurion that it was so, he gave Joseph permission to take down his body.

Joseph takes down the body of Jesus, wraps it and lays it in his own tomb

³⁰Joseph purchased some linen cloth and after taking down the body of Jesus from the cross he wrapped it in the linen and placed it in his own new tomb cut out of rock, in which no one had yet been laid.

³¹Then he rolled a very large stone against the entrance of the tomb.

The women buy anointing spices but rest on the Sabbath day

³²It was Preparation Day and the Sabbath was about to begin.^{F*} ³³The women who had come with Jesus from Galilee followed Joseph and saw the tomb and how his body was laid in it. ⁴Then they returned to where they were staying and purchased and prepared spices and perfumes but rested on the Sabbath in obedience to the commandment.



A tomb in Israel with a rolling stone.

35

The Jewish leaders seal the tomb and post Roman guards over it

¹The next day, on the Sabbath, the chief priests and Pharisees went to Pilate and said,

*32 Preparation Day was the Friday before the Sabbath. The Sabbath day began at sunset Friday evening and ended at sunset Saturday evening.

“Sir, we remember that while he was still alive that deceiver said, ‘After three days I will rise again.’”

²“Therefore command that the tomb be made secure until the third day. Otherwise his disciples may come and steal his body and then say to the people, ‘He has risen from the dead,’ and this last deception will be worse than the first.”

³Pilate answered, “Take a guard and make the tomb as secure as you know how.”

⁴So they went and made the tomb secure by placing a seal on the stone and posting Roman guards.

The women set out to the tomb early Sunday morning to embalm Jesus

⁵After the Sabbath, at dawn on the first day of the week^{F*} Mary Magdalene, the other Mary, and Salome took the spices and went to anoint the body of Jesus.

⁶As they walked to the tomb, just after sunrise, they said to one another, “Who will roll away the stone for us from the entrance?”

Jesus is resurrected

⁷About that same time there came a sudden violent shaking of the earth as an angel of the Lord came down from heaven to the tomb.

⁸He rolled back the stone and sat upon it. His appearance was like lightning and his clothes as white as snow.

⁹The guards at the tomb were terrified of him and trembled and fainted.

The Roman guards run and report what happened to the chief priests

¹⁰When they recovered they ran into the city and reported to the chief priests what had happened.

Chief priests bribe the guards to lie

¹¹The chief priests met with the elders and devised a plan. They gave the soldiers a large sum of money and said to them, “You are to say, ‘His disciples came during the night and stole him away while we were asleep.’ ¹²If this report gets to the governor we will satisfy him and keep you out of trouble.”

¹³So the soldiers took the money and did as they were instructed. (¹⁴This story has been widely circulated among the Jews to this very day.)

Two angels speak to the women at the tomb

¹⁵When the three women arrived at the tomb they saw that the stone which was very large had been rolled away.

¹⁶As they entered the tomb they saw two angels dressed in white robes sitting on the right side, and they became alarmed.

¹⁷But one of the angels spoke to them saying, “Be not afraid. Why do you look for the living among the dead? You are seeking Jesus of Nazareth who was crucified. He is not here, he has risen. See the place where they laid him.”

¹⁸“Now go and say to Peter and his disciples,

*5 Sunday, the Jewish Sabbath was a Saturday.

‘He will go ahead of you into Galilee and there you will see him.’

The women filled with joy hurry back to tell the apostles

¹⁹Trembling, the women went out from the tomb and hurried away to tell the apostles. They were bewildered yet filled with joy.

The women are not believed

²⁰When the women told the apostles and others what they had seen and heard, they were not believed for their words seemed like nonsense.

Peter and John run out to the tomb

²¹Peter and John however arose and ran out to the tomb. They saw the linen lying there and wondered deeply.

Mary Magdalene returns again to the tomb and sees the resurrected Jesus

²²Mary Magdalene returned again to the tomb. Suddenly Jesus met her. She went to him and fell down and clasped his feet and worshipped him.

²³Jesus said to her, **‘Be not afraid. Go and tell my brothers^{F*} to return to Galilee and there they will see me.’**



The actual tomb in which Jesus was resurrected.

Jesus appears and walks with two disciples on the way to Emmaus

²⁴Now that same day, two disciples of Jesus were going to a village called Emmaus, about sixty stadia^{F*} from Jerusalem. They were talking

*²³ Jesus often referred to his disciples as brothers, see Matt-Mark-Luke 13:43; 16:17 and 31:18.

*²⁴ Sixty stadia was about 11 kms.

with each other about all that had happened.

²⁵As they talked, Jesus himself came up and walked along with them, but they were kept from recognising him.

²⁶He said to them, **‘What is this you are discussing as you walk along?’**

²⁷They stood still, their faces downcast. One of them named Cleopas said to Jesus, ‘Are you a visitor to Jerusalem and know not the things that have happened?’

Jesus answered, **‘What things?’**

²⁸They replied, ‘About Jesus of Nazareth. He was a prophet, powerful in word and deed. But the chief priests and our leaders handed him over to be crucified.’

²⁹‘We had hoped that he was the one who was coming to redeem Israel, but it is now the third day since this took place.’

³¹‘In addition, some of our women amazed us. They went to his tomb early this morning but did not find his body. They came and told us they had seen an angel who said to them he was alive.’

³²‘Then some of our companions went to the tomb and found it just as the women had said, but they did not see Jesus.’

Jesus explains the scriptures concerning himself to the two disciples

³³Jesus said to them, **‘O foolish men, and slow to believe all that the prophets have spoken. Did not the Christ have to suffer these things and enter this way into his glory?’**

³⁴And beginning with Moses and then the Prophets he explained to them what was written in the scriptures concerning himself.



The road to the village of Emmaus to which Jesus walked with two disciples after his resurrection.

The two disciples suddenly recognise Jesus when he breaks bread

³⁵As they approached the village to which they were going, Jesus acted as if he were going further. But they urged him to remain saying, ‘Stay with us for it is nearly evening.’ So he went in to stay with them.

³⁶When he was at the table with them he took bread, gave thanks, broke it and began to give it to them. ³⁷Then their eyes were opened and they

MATT-MARK-LUKE 35

recognised him, but he vanished from their sight.

³⁸They said to one another, "Did not our hearts burn within us while he talked with us on the road and opened the scriptures to us?"

Jesus also appears to Peter

³⁹The two disciples at once arose and returned to Jerusalem.

⁴⁰When they arrived they found the apostles and those with them assembled together and were told, "It is true! The Lord has risen and has appeared to Peter!"

Jesus appears in the midst of all his disciples

⁴¹Then the two disciples told them what had happened on the road and how Jesus was recognised by them when he broke bread.

⁴²While they were still talking, Jesus himself appeared and stood in their midst and said to them, "**Peace be with you.**"

The disciples think he is a spirit

⁴³They were all startled and fearful, thinking they saw a spirit.

⁴⁴But Jesus said to them, "**Why are you troubled? Why is there doubt in your minds? It is I.** ⁴⁵**Touch me and see, a spirit has not flesh and bones as you see I have.**"

⁴⁶**"Behold my hands and my feet."** And he showed them his hands and feet.

Jesus eats in front of his disciples to prove he has a body of flesh and bones

⁴⁷But they still could not believe, though they were filled with joy and amazement.

⁴⁸So Jesus said, "**Do you have anything here to eat?**"

⁴⁹They gave him a piece of baked fish and Jesus took it and ate it in front of them.

Jesus explains the scriptures about the Christ

⁵⁰Then he said to them, "**As I told you while I was still with you, all must be fulfilled that is written about me in the scriptures.**" ⁵¹And he opened their minds to understand the scriptures and said to them, "**It is written that the Christ should first suffer and then rise from the dead on the third day.** ⁵²**Then repentance and forgiveness of sins is to be preached in his name to all nations, beginning at Jerusalem.**"

Jesus sends his disciples to preach to all the world

⁵³**"You are witnesses of these things, therefore go into all the world and preach the good news to every person."**

Whoever believes and is baptised shall be saved

⁵⁴**"Whoever believes and is baptised will be saved, but whoever believes not shall be condemned."**

Miraculous signs to accompany those who believe

⁵⁵**"And these signs shall follow those who believe. In my name they shall drive out demons, they shall speak in new tongues, they will pick up snakes with their hands, and should they drink deadly poison it will**

not hurt them at all. ⁵⁶**They shall lay hands on the sick and they will recover."**

Disciples to await the Holy Spirit in Jerusalem

⁵⁷**"I will send you that which my Father has promised.^{F*} So remain in Jerusalem until you have been clothed with power from on high."**

Jesus is taken up to God the Father

⁵⁸Then Jesus led them out to the vicinity of Bethany on the Mount of Olives.^{F*} There he lifted up his hands and blessed them. ⁵⁹While he was blessing them he left them and was taken up into heaven to sit at the right hand of God.

The disciples rejoice in the Temple daily

⁶⁰Then they worshipped him and returned to Jerusalem with great joy. They stayed daily in the courtyards of the Temple, praising God.

The apostles see and worship Jesus in Galilee

⁶¹After the day of Pentecost the apostles returned to Galilee to the mountain where Jesus had told them to go. There they saw him and worshipped him.

Jesus commands his apostles to baptise and teach all nations

⁶²Jesus said to them, "**All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me.**"

⁶³**"Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, baptising them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teach them to obey everything I have commanded you."**

⁶⁴**"And remember I am with you always, to the end of the age."**

Miraculous signs attend the apostles preaching

⁶⁵The apostles went out and preached the good news everywhere, and the Lord worked with them and confirmed his word by the signs that followed.



View of Jerusalem from the Mount of Olives, where Jesus was taken up into heaven and to where he will return at his second coming.

*57 The Holy Spirit, which came seven weeks later on the day of Pentecost.

*58 The Mount of Olives is a rounded hill to the east of Jerusalem and higher than the Temple mount. It was used as a lookout and a park-like area by the residents of Jerusalem. The village of Bethany was on its slopes. It is to split in two when the feet of Jesus touch it at his return, see Zechariah 5:18.

JOHN

John's gospel is quite different from the other three gospels of Matthew, Mark and Luke. He writes as if the reader is already familiar with the basic story of Jesus.

His account which is the last gospel to be written, fills in many gaps of the other three gospels and is full of vivid eye-witness and ear-witness detail and contains more dialogue of Jesus than the other gospels.

John's gospel is also very spiritual and explains more clearly the relationship of God the Father to Jesus and to man. John has much to say about love and identifies himself as *'the disciple Jesus loved.'*

John was one of the three chief apostles of Jesus. The other two were John's brother James and Peter. John and James were probably cousins of Jesus as their mother Salome and Mary the mother of Jesus appear to have been sisters (Matt-Mark-Luke 34:27 and John 18:10).

Like their fellow apostle Peter, both John and James were fishermen before being called to follow Jesus. Their family is believed to have been well off as hired men assisted them in their fishing business (see Mark 1:20 traditional Bible) and their mother Salome was one of the women who provided for Jesus (Matt-Mark-Luke 34:27).

John and James evidently were impetuous in their early years as Jesus nick-named them 'sons of thunder' (Matt-Mark-Luke 7:3). Quite appropriately it seems, for on one occasion they suggested calling down fire on a Samaritan town that had rejected Jesus (Matt-Mark-Luke 19:3), and another time they along with their ambitious mother Salome went to Jesus with the request that they sit at his right and left hand in the kingdom of God (Matt-Mark-Luke 24:71).

However in later years John became well known among the churches in and around Ephesus for his gentleness, love, and spirituality. Tradition states that when he was asked to write this gospel by his Christian friends from these churches, he agreed to do so only if the churches fasted and prayed for him for three days.

John was last heard of at Ephesus where he spent much of his time. There is no record of his death and many believe he was translated as was Moses (see Deuteronomy 10:30) and Elijah. See also the words of Jesus to Peter in John 20:31.

AUTHOR

John the apostle, plus a short testimony attached to the end by a group of unknown Christians as to the truthfulness of John's words.

"For God so loved the world that he gave his only begotten Son, that whoever believes in him shall not perish but have Eternal Life." John 3:12.

Though the doors were locked Jesus appeared and stood among them. John 19:25.

CONTENTS

	Chapter		
The Word (Jesus) made all things	1	Jesus drives out merchants and money changers	2
John the Baptist came to testify of Jesus	1	Jewish leaders demand a miraculous sign	2
Jesus' own people did not believe in him	1	Many believe in Jesus because of his miracles	2
The apostle John's testimony	1	Nicodemus the ruler comes to Jesus by night	3
Jesus has made the Father known to us	1	Need to be born again from above	3
John the Baptist explains his role	1	Jesus came from heaven	3
John the Baptist sees Jesus	1	God loved the world	3
Testifies that Jesus is the Son of God	1	God gave his only begotten Son	3
Andrew, Simon and John become disciples of Jesus ..	1	Whoever does not believe stands condemned	3
Simon surnamed Peter by Jesus	1	Disciples of Jesus baptise	3
Philip and Nathanael become disciples of Jesus	1	John the Baptist to decrease but Jesus to increase ..	3
Jesus turns water into wine	2	John the Baptist prophesies of Jesus	3
Jesus goes to Jerusalem for the Passover	2	Jesus speaks to a Samaritan woman at Jacob's well ..	4

JOHN 35

Jesus can give her Living Water	4	The devil a murderer and a liar	8
Jesus tells the woman she has had five husbands ...	4	Jesus challenges anyone to prove him guilty of sin ..	8
Salvation is from the Jews	4	Jesus again accused of being demon-possessed	8
Worship Father in spirit and truth	4	Jesus says that Abraham saw his day.....	8
Jesus reveals to the woman that he is the Christ	4	Jesus claims he existed before Abraham was born ..	8
Disciples return with food	4	People try to stone Jesus for blasphemy	8
The fields ripe for missionary harvest	4	Jesus heals a man blind from birth	9
Jesus stays with the Samaritans two days	4	Healed man taken to the Pharisees	9
Many believe in him	4	Man's parents questioned	9
Jesus welcomed back to Galilee	4	Pharisees question the healed man	9
Heals an official's son from a distance	4	Healed man defends Jesus	9
Jesus again visits Jerusalem	5	The Pharisees scorn the man and thrust him out	9
Heals an invalid at the pool of Bethesda	5	Healed man worships Jesus	9
Jews rebuke healed man for breaking Sabbath	5	Pharisees guilty because they claim to see	9
Jesus tells the healed man to sin no more	5	Parable of the sheep pen	9
Or something worse may happen to him	5	Jesus explains parable of the sheep pen	9
Jesus persecuted for healing on the Sabbath	5	Jesus the good shepherd	9
Jesus does what he has seen his Father doing	5	Good shepherd lays down his life for his sheep.....	9
All judgement given to Jesus by the Father	5	Other sheep to also hear voice of Jesus	9
Whoever believes words of Jesus has Eternal Life ...	5	Jesus to lay down his life willingly	9
The dead also to hear the voice of Jesus	5	Some disbelieve Jesus but others believe	9
All who have died to be resurrected	5	Jesus asked outright if he is the Christ	10
The Pharisees challenge Jesus' testimony	5	Miracles speak for Jesus	10
Jesus cites John the Baptist's testimony	5	Unbelievers not Jesus' sheep	10
Jesus also cites the miracles he has done	5	Jesus says he is one with the Father	10
And the Father's testimony	5	Jews pick up stones to stone him	10
The scriptures also testify of Jesus	5	Jesus quotes scripture – men called Gods	10
Moses himself will be Pharisee's accuser	5	Miracles prove that Jesus speaks the truth	10
If you do not believe in me you will die in your sins ...	5	Jesus escapes and crosses the Jordan	10
Jesus testifies of the Father	5	John the Baptist testified truly about Jesus	10
A great crowd of people have no food	6	Lazarus becomes very sick	11
A boy has five loaves and two fishes	6	Jesus delays going to Lazarus for two days	11
Jesus miraculously feeds 5000 men	6	Jesus tells his disciples Lazarus is dead	11
Twelve baskets of food gathered up afterward	6	Martha goes out to meet Jesus	11
The people want to make Jesus king	6	Jesus tells Martha that he is the resurrection	11
Jesus walks on water	6	Jesus calls for Mary	11
The crowd search for Jesus next day	6	Mary falls down at the feet of Jesus	11
The people ask Jesus for a sign	6	Jesus weeps	11
The Father has sent Jesus – the True Bread	6	Jesus taken to the tomb	11
All whom the Father has given will come to Jesus ...	6	Lazarus raised from the dead by Jesus	11
I have come down from heaven	6	Many of the Jews believe in Jesus	11
The people murmur in disbelief	6	Jewish leaders call a meeting	11
Jesus the True Bread of Eternal Life	6	The high priest decides that Jesus must die	11
Many followers turn away from Jesus	6	Jesus withdraws to a remote desert town	11
Jesus asks the Twelve if they will also go away	6	Passover draws near.....	11
One of the Twelve a devil	6	Jesus arrives at Bethany	12
Jesus stays in Galilee for safety	7	Mary anoints Jesus with perfumed oil	12
Jesus' brothers tell him to return to Judea	7	Judas Iscariot objects	12
Even brothers of Jesus do not believe in him	7	Judas rebuked by Jesus	12
Jesus goes to Jerusalem secretly	7	Chief priests plan to kill Lazarus also	12
Jesus teaches in the Temple courtyards	7	Jesus' triumphal entry into Jerusalem	12
Jesus accused of being demon-possessed	7	The Pharisees become desperate	12
Jesus defends healing on the Sabbath	7	Some Greeks want to meet with Jesus	12
Testifies again that he has come from the Father	7	Jesus' hour has come to be glorified	12
Many believe in Jesus because of his miracles	7	Parable of the seed of wheat	12
Pharisees send Temple guards to arrest Jesus	7	He who loves his life shall lose it	12
Jesus speaks of his coming death	7	The Father speaks to Jesus	12
Jesus describes Holy Spirit as Living Water	7	Crowd hear the voice of the Father	12
The people are divided	7	Jesus to draw all unto him	12
Temple guards return without arresting Jesus	7	Is not the Christ to remain forever?	12
Nicodemus stands up for Jesus	7	Many who believe in Jesus afraid to confess it	12
An adulterous woman brought before Jesus	8	Jesus' words will condemn unbelievers on last day ...	12
He who is without sin to cast the first stone	8	Whoever sees Jesus sees the Father who sent him ..	12
Women's accusers depart, one by one	8	The Father commanded Jesus what to say	12
Woman told by Jesus to sin no more	8	The Last Supper	13
Jesus the light of Eternal Life	8	Jesus washes feet of his apostles	13
Truth will free you from the slavery of sin	8	Peter resists at first	13
Those who oppose Jesus are children of the devil ...	8	Apostles also to wash one another's feet	13

Jesus reveals who will betray him	13	Jesus arrested and taken to the high priest	16
Judas had charge of money bag	13	Peter and John follow Jesus into the courtyard	16
Judas departs into the night	13	Peter denies Jesus the first time	16
Apostles to love one another	13	High priest questions Jesus	16
Apostles to follow Jesus later	13	Jesus struck on the face by an official	16
Jesus tells Peter he will deny him three times	13	Peter denies Jesus two more times	16
Many mansions where my Father dwells	13	The cock crows	16
No one comes into the Father but by Jesus	13	Early that morning Jesus taken before Pilate	17
Anyone who has seen me has seen the Father	13	Pilate questions Jesus privately	17
Father does his work through me	13	Pilate finds Jesus innocent of charge	17
Anyone with faith shall do greater miracles	13	Pilate threatens to release Barabbas the murderer....	17
The Father will give you the Comforter	13	The Jews choose Barabbas	17
Comforter is the Holy Spirit	13	Pilate has Jesus flogged	17
The Father, Son, and believers all one	14	Roman soldiers mock and strike Jesus	17
To be understood in a day to come	14	Pilate tries to release Jesus	17
The obedient loved by the Father and Son	14	Priests and Pharisees cry out Crucify him!	17
Obedient will see Jesus	14	Pilate again questions Jesus privately	17
Holy Spirit to teach all things	14	Pilate again tries to set Jesus free	17
The Father is greater than Jesus	14	Pilate finally hands Jesus over to be crucified	17
Satan the ruler of this world is coming	14	Jesus crucified between two other men	18
Jesus the vine and the Father the gardener	14	Pilate orders a notice for the cross	18
Unfruitful branches to be cut off	14	Chief priests protest about wording	18
Fruitful branches to be pruned to bear more fruit ..	14	Clothes of Jesus divided among the soldiers	18
Father glorified when you bear much fruit	14	Jesus requests John to care for his mother	18
Keep commandments that your joy be complete	14	Jesus sips sour wine	18
Greatest love is to lay down our life for our friends .	14	Jesus dies	18
Jesus calls apostles his friends	14	Legs of the other two men are broken	18
Jesus made known what he heard from the Father ...	14	Jesus' side pierced with a spear	18
World will hate the apostles	14	Joseph and Nicodemus take down the body	18
Apostles to testify of truth by the Holy Spirit	14	Body of Jesus placed in nearby tomb	18
Apostles will be killed as a 'service to God'	14	Early Sunday morning the tomb is open and empty...19	
Comforter will not come unless Jesus goes away ..	14	Mary Magdalene runs to tell the disciples	19
Comforter will convict world of sin	14	Peter and John run out to the tomb	19
The Holy Spirit will teach you all truth	14	They see the burial linen	19
All that belongs to the Father is mine	14	Mary Magdalene returns to the tomb	19
Disciples to experience joy after Jesus' resurrection..	15	Mary sees two angels inside	19
Ask and you shall receive	15	Mary sees resurrected Jesus	19
Time coming when Jesus will speak plainly	15	Jesus sends Mary to his disciples with a message..	19
Apostles to be scattered and Jesus left alone	15	Jesus appears to disciples that same evening	19
In this world you shall have trouble	15	Disciples in a locked room	19
Jesus prays for the Father to glorify him	15	Disciples filled with joy	19
With the glory he had before the world began	15	Jesus says to his disciples 'Receive the Holy Spirit' ..	19
Eternal Life is to know Father and Jesus Christ	15	Thomas who was not with them doubts	19
Jesus prays for all whom the Father has given him ..	15	Thomas sees risen Jesus a week later	19
Jesus prays for a perfect oneness among believers ..	15	Blessed those who have not seen yet believed	19
As Jesus and the Father are one	15	Many miracles of Jesus not recorded in this book ..	19
Only the Son of Perdition has been lost	15	Seven apostles spend a fruitless night fishing	20
Jesus prays his followers be protected from evil	15	Jesus appears to them on the lake shore	20
Jesus prays that all believers will become one	15	Peter leaps into the water and wades ashore	20
Believers to be given the same glory as Jesus	15	Jesus prepares breakfast for his apostles	20
Love of Father and spirit of Jesus to be in believers...	15	Peter confirms his love for Jesus three times	20
Jesus and his disciples go out to an olive grove	15	Peter to die by crucifixion	20
Judas leads band of guards to Jesus	16	John to remain on earth until Jesus returns	20
Guards fall backwards at words of Jesus	16	John must still eventually die to be resurrected	20
Peter attacks with a sword	16	Testimony to the truthfulness of John's gospel	20

Bold The Lord or an angel speaking.

Bold italics A prophet speaking under inspiration.

1

The Word (Jesus) made all things

¹*"In the beginning was the Word, and he was with God and of God. Through him all things were made."* ²*"In him is life,*

and the light of mankind. Light that shines in the darkness but the darkness sees it not." F*

*2 Verses 1 and 2 are the words of a hymn.

JOHN 1

John the Baptist came to testify of Jesus

³There came a man sent from God whose name was John,^{F*} to testify that the true light that gives light^{F*} to every man was coming into the world.

His own people did not believe in him

⁴He came into the world and even though the world was made through him,^{F*} the world knew him not.

⁵He came to his own^{F*} but his own believed him not, yet to all who did believe he gave the right to become the sons and daughters of God.

The apostle John's testimony

⁶The Word became flesh and lived among us and we have seen his glory, even the glory of the Only Begotten of the Father who is full of grace and truth.

⁷From his fullness we have received blessing after blessing. The Law was given through Moses but grace^{F*} and truth came through Jesus Christ.

Jesus has made the Father known to us

⁸No one has seen God the Father,^{F*} but the Only Begotten Son who sits at his side has made him known.

John the Baptist explains his role

⁹Now when John the Baptist was baptising at Bethany^{F*} on the other side of the Jordan he was asked, "Who are you?"

¹⁰He answered, "I am not the Christ."^{F*}

¹¹They said to him, "Are you Elijah, or the Prophet?"^{F*}

¹²John replied, "I am not." Then he cried out, quoting the words of Isaiah, "***I am the voice of one calling in the desert 'Make straight the way of our God.'***"

¹³Some Pharisees said to him, "Why then do you baptise if you are not the Christ, nor Elijah, nor the Prophet?"

¹⁴John replied, "***I baptise with water but***

among you is one whom you know not who comes after me, whose sandals I am not worthy to untie."

¹⁵***"He ranks ahead of me for he was before me."***

John the Baptist sees Jesus and testifies that he is the Son of God

¹⁶The next day John saw Jesus coming toward him and prophesied saying, "***Behold the Lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world.***"^{F*}

¹⁷***"I saw the Spirit of God come down upon him from heaven as a dove, and remain upon him. I would not have known him but the one who sent me to baptise with water said to me, 'The man on whom you see the Spirit come down and remain, is he who will baptise with the Holy Spirit.'"***

¹⁸***I have seen and testify that this is the Son of God."***



The Jordan river where Jesus was baptised by John the Baptist.

Andrew, Simon and John become disciples of Jesus

¹⁹The next day John the Baptist was with two of his disciples.^{F*} When he saw Jesus pass by he said, "***Behold the Lamb^{F*} of God.***"

²⁰When the two disciples heard this they followed Jesus. He turned and saw them and said, "***What do you want?***"

²¹They said, "Rabbi (which means Teacher) where are you staying?"

²²Jesus replied, "***Come and you will see.***" So they remained with him all that day.

²³Then Andrew, one of the two, found his brother Simon and said to him, "We have found the Messiah," and he brought him to Jesus.

Simon is surnamed Peter by Jesus

²⁴Jesus looked at Simon and said, "***Simon, you will be called Cephas,***" which when translated is Peter.^{F*}

Philip and Nathanael become disciples of Jesus

²⁵The next day, before Jesus left for Galilee,

*16 The 'sin of the world' is believed to be death, brought about by the transgression of Adam (Genesis 2:8, 3:5 and 3:18-20).

*19 Andrew the brother of Peter, and John the writer of this gospel.

*19 The lamb sacrificed at the feast of the Passover since the days of Moses had long symbolised Jesus and foreshadowed his atonement. The death of Jesus also occurred on the feast of the Passover (John 17:29).

*24 Cephas means 'a large rock' in Aramaic the spoken language of the day. Peter is the Greek-English equivalent.

*3 John the Baptist.

*3 Light is here used in the sense of spiritual discernment and awareness such as found in the conscience of man.

*4 Jesus Christ created this world under the direction of the Father, see John 1:1 and Hebrews 1:1.

*5 The Jews.

*7 Grace is the free gift from a loving God, of divine help, divine power, or favour beyond the natural abilities of man.

*8 There are many instances recorded in the Bible of men seeing the God of the Old Testament, however Paul reveals that the God of the Old Testament who appeared face to face with Moses and others by the name of Jehovah was the pre-mortal Christ, not the Father (1 Corinthians 4:13, Zechariah 2:21-24). Christ appeared and spoke as Jehovah because the Father had given him his name (John 5:29, 12:12 and 15:22). Paul like John also wrote that no mortal man has ever seen God the Father (1 Timothy 3:32) however both Paul and John were probably referring to men in their normal earthly state, not those who were 'in the Spirit' or full of the Holy Spirit, for Stephen while 'full of the Spirit' saw both the Father and the Son in a vision for which he was shortly afterward stoned to death (Acts 6:48-9), and John himself while 'in the Spirit' saw the Father in his Revelation visions (Revelation 3:2). Even Paul himself was caught up to the 'third heaven' and saw things of which he was forbidden to speak (2 Corinthians 3:45).

*9 Not the Bethany on the outskirts of Jerusalem.

*10 Christ is the Greek equivalent of the Hebrew 'Messiah' meaning 'the Anointed One.' The Jews had long awaited his coming.

*11 Moses prophesied that the Lord would raise up a prophet like himself (Deuteronomy 4:1-4).

he found Philip and said to him, **“Follow me.”**

²⁶Philip, Andrew and Peter were all from the town of Bethsaida in Galilee.

²⁷Then Philip found Nathanael and said to him, “We have found the one whom the prophets wrote about, Jesus of Nazareth.”

²⁸Nathanael replied, “Can any good thing come out of Nazareth?”

Philip said, “Come and see.”

²⁹When Jesus saw Nathanael he said of him, **“Here is a true Israelite, in whom there is no guile.”**

³⁰Nathanael replied, “How do you know me?” Jesus answered, **“I saw you under the fig tree, before Philip called you.”**

³¹Nathanael said, “Rabbi, you are the Son of God, the King of Israel.”

³²Jesus said, **“You believe because I told you I saw you under the fig tree? You shall see greater things than this. ³³You shall see the heavens open and the angels of God ascending and descending upon the Son of Man.”**

2

Jesus turns water into wine

¹On the third day, a wedding took place at Cana in Galilee and Mary the mother of Jesus was there. Jesus and his disciples were also invited.

²During the banquet the wine ran out and the mother of Jesus said to him, “They have no more wine.”

³Jesus replied, **“Why do you involve me? My hour has not yet come.”**

⁴But his mother said to the servants, “Do whatever he tells you.”

⁵Nearby stood six stone water jars used by the Jews for washing. Jesus instructed the servants saying, **“Fill these jars with water.”** So they filled them to the brim.

⁶Then he said to them, **“Draw some out and take it to the master of the banquet.”**

⁷The master of the banquet tasted the water which had now become wine. He called the bridegroom aside and said to him, “Everyone serves the best wine first and then the cheaper wine later when the guests have had much to drink. You have saved the best until last.”



Stone water jars similar to those used when Jesus changed water into wine.

Jesus goes to Jerusalem for the Passover

⁸After this, Jesus went to Capernaum^{F*} with his mother and brothers and his disciples. They stayed there for a few days and then went up^{F*} to Jerusalem for the Jewish Passover.

Jesus drives the merchants and money changers from the Temple

⁹In the Temple courtyards Jesus saw merchants selling cattle, sheep and doves, and money changers sitting at tables exchanging currency.

¹⁰So making a whip out of cords he drove them all from the Temple area along with their sheep and cattle. Then he scattered the coins of the money changers and overturned their tables.

¹¹To those who sold doves he said, **“Get these out of here! How dare you turn my Father’s house into a market place.”**



Money changer in Jerusalem.

The Jewish leaders demand a miraculous sign

¹²The Jewish leaders came up to Jesus and demanded, “What miraculous sign can you show us to prove your authority to do all this?”

¹³Jesus answered, **“Destroy this temple and I will raise it again in three days.”**

¹⁴The Jews said, “It has taken forty-six years to build this Temple and you say you can raise it in three days?” But the temple he spoke of was his own body.

Many believe in Jesus because of his miracles

¹⁵While Jesus was in Jerusalem many people saw the miracles he was doing and believed in him.

*8 Capernaum was an important town on the shore of Lake Galilee. Jesus used this town as a base during his ministry in Galilee.

*8 ‘Up to Jerusalem’ was a common term because of the height of the city which is built on a mountain ridge 800 metres high. Jerusalem was about a three to five day journey southward from Capernaum.

Nicodemus the ruler comes to Jesus by night

¹Now there was a Pharisee^{F*} named Nicodemus, a member of the Jewish ruling council. He came to Jesus by night and said to him, “Rabbi, you are a teacher who has come from God, for no man could do the miracles you do if God were not with him.”

The need to be born again from above

²Jesus said to him, “Truly, no one can see the kingdom of God unless he is born again from above.”

³Nicodemus asked, “How can a man be born again when he is grown? He cannot enter a second time into his mother’s womb.”

⁴Jesus answered, “No one can enter the kingdom of God unless he is born anew, of water and of the Spirit. ⁵Flesh gives birth to flesh, but the Spirit gives birth to spirit.”

⁶“You should not wonder at my saying, ‘You must be born anew.’ The wind blows wherever it pleases, and you hear its sound, but you cannot tell where it comes from or where it is going. So it is with everyone born of the Spirit.”^{F*}

⁷“How can such things happen?” Nicodemus asked.

⁸Jesus replied, “Are you a teacher in Israel and yet not understand these things? I speak of what I know and have seen, but you men^{F*} will not accept my testimony.”

⁹“I have spoken of earthly things and you do not believe, how then will you believe if I speak of heavenly things?”

No man has ever gone into heaven except Jesus who came from heaven

¹⁰“No man has ever entered into heaven except the Son of Man who came from heaven.”

¹¹“And just as Moses lifted up the snake in the desert,^{F*} so too must the Son of Man be lifted up that all who believe in him may have Eternal Life.”

God so loved the world that he gave his only begotten Son

¹²“For God so loved the world that he gave his only begotten Son, that whoever believes in him shall not perish but have Eternal Life.”

Whoever does not believe in Jesus stands condemned

¹³“God did not send his Son into the world to condemn the world, but to save the world. Whoever does not believe in me stands condemned.”

*1 The Pharisees were the predominant religious sect, and zealous guardians of the religious Law given through Moses. They tended however to obey the letter of the Law rather than the spirit.

*6 The word for wind, breath, and spirit is the same in Aramaic, the spoken language of the gospels.

*8 The Jewish rulers.

*11 The account of this incident, which involves a bronze snake, is found in Numbers 9:6-9.

¹⁴“Light has come into the world, but men love darkness instead of light, because their deeds are evil. ¹⁵All who do evil hate the light and will not come into it for fear that their deeds will be exposed. But whoever lives by truth will come into the light.”

The disciples of Jesus baptise

¹⁶After this, Jesus went out into the Judean countryside and his disciples baptised. John the Baptist was also baptising at Aenon^{F*} for there was much water there.

¹⁷Some Jews came to John the Baptist and said to him, “Teacher, that man whom you testified about is also baptising and everyone is going to him.” ¹⁸(Although Jesus did not baptise, but his disciples.)

John the Baptist to decrease but Jesus to increase

¹⁹John replied, “A man can receive only what is given him from heaven. You yourselves heard me testify that I am not the Christ but was sent ahead of him.”

²⁰“The best man who attends the bridegroom listens for him and is joyful when he hears his voice. That joy is now mine.”

²¹“He must increase and I decrease.”

John the Baptist prophesies of Jesus

²²Then John prophesied, “*He who has come from above is above all, and testifies to what he has seen and heard, but few accept his testimony.*”

²³“*Those who do accept, testify that God is truthful. For he whom God has sent speaks the words of God, for God gives him the Spirit without limit.*”

²⁴“*The Father loves the Son and has placed all things in his hands.* ²⁵*Whoever believes in the Son has Eternal Life, but whoever rejects the Son will not have Eternal Life, for God’s wrath remains upon him.*”



Caná of Galilee where Jesus did his first miracle, changing water into wine.

*16 Aenon was the site of a spring-fed pool approx midway between Judea and Galilee.

4

**Jesus speaks to a Samaritan woman
at Jacob's well**

¹Jesus left Judea to return again to Galilee. On the way he passed through Samaria and came to a town called Sychar.

²Jesus was weary from the journey and about noon he sat down by Jacob's well while his disciples went into the town to buy food.

³A Samaritan woman came out to the well to draw water. Jesus said to her, "**Will you give me a drink?**"

⁴The Samaritan woman replied, "How is it that you a Jew ask me for a drink?" (For the Jews do not socialise with the Samaritans.F*)

Jesus can give her Living Water

⁵Jesus answered her, "**If you knew who it was that asked you for a drink, you would have asked him, and he would have given you Living Water.**"

⁶The woman said, "You have nothing to draw with and the well is deep. Where can you get this Living Water?F* Are you greater than our father Jacob who gave us this well and drank from it himself?"

⁷Jesus answered, "**All who drink this water will thirst again, but whoever drinks the water I give will never thirst. It will become in them a spring, welling up unto Eternal Life.**"

⁸The woman said to Jesus, "Sir, give me this water that I may never again thirst and not have to keep coming here to this well."

Jesus tells the woman she has had five husbands

⁹Jesus said to her, "**Go and bring your husband.**"

The woman replied, "I have no husband."

¹⁰Jesus said, "**You are right in saying you have no husband. You have had five husbands and the man you now have is not your husband.**"

¹¹The woman said, "Sir, I perceive that you are a prophet. Our fathers worshipped on this mountain, but you Jews claim that the only place we can worship is in Jerusalem."

Salvation is from the Jews

¹²Jesus declared to her, "**Believe me womanF* the time is coming when you will worship the Father neither on this mountain nor in Jerusalem.**"

¹³"**You Samaritans worship what you do not know, but we worship what we do know, for salvation is from the Jews.**"

Worship Father in spirit and truth

¹⁴**Yet the time is coming and has now**

*4 There was much ill feeling between the Samaritans and the Jews. The Samaritans were of mixed blood, descendants of non-Israelites who had been exiled to Israel from their native lands by the Assyrians about 800 years ago and who had over the years interbred with remnant Israelites of the former northern kingdom of Israel.

*6 The Living Water Jesus referred to was the Holy Spirit. See John 7:35-36.

*12 To address a female as 'woman' meant no disrespect.

come when true worshipers will worship the Father in spirit and truth. For God is spirit and that is what he seeks."

Jesus reveals to the woman that he is the Christ

¹⁵The woman said, "I know that the Christ is coming. When he comes he will explain everything to us."

¹⁶Jesus said, "**I who speak to you am he.**"



Samaritans celebrating the Passover on Mount Gerizim, 40 km north of Jerusalem.

The disciples return with food

¹⁷Just then the disciples of Jesus returned. They were surprised to find him talking with a woman.

¹⁸The woman left her water jar and hurried back into the town and said to the people, "Come and see a man who told me everything I ever did. Could this be the Christ?" So they came out of the town to see him.

¹⁹Meanwhile the disciples urged Jesus saying, "Teacher, eat something."

²⁰Jesus replied, "**I have food to eat that you know nothing about.**"

²¹His disciples said to one another, "Has someone brought him food?"

The fields are ripe for missionary harvest

²²Jesus said to them, "**My food is to do the will of him who sent me and to complete his work. Open your eyes and look around you. The fields are ripe for harvest. Harvest the crop for Eternal Life so that the sower and the reaper may rejoice together.**"

²⁴"**I am sending you to reap what you have not sown. Others have done the sowing and you will reap the benefits of their labour.**"

**Jesus stays with the Samaritans two days
and many believe in him**

²⁵Many Samaritans from that town believed in

JOHN 5

Jesus because of the woman's testimony. They urged him to stay with them.

²⁶So Jesus stayed two days and because of his words many more became believers.

²⁷They said to the woman, "We no longer believe just because of your words. Now we have heard for ourselves and know that this man really is the Saviour of the world."



Jacob's well at Sychar where Jesus spoke with the Samaritan woman.

Jesus welcomed back to Galilee

²⁸When Jesus arrived back in Galilee he was welcomed, for many Galileans had seen all that he had done in Jerusalem at the Passover.

Jesus heals an official's son from a long distance

²⁹Once more Jesus visited Cana where he had turned water into wine. While there, an official whose son lay sick at Capernaum^{F*} came to Jesus begging him to return and heal his son who was close to death.

³⁰Jesus said to him, "**Unless you people see the miracle you never believe. Go, your son will live.**" The official believed and departed.

³¹On the journey home his servants met him with the news, "The fever left your son yesterday at the seventh hour."

³²This was the exact time at which Jesus had said to him, "**Your son will live.**" So he and all his household believed.

5

Jesus again visits Jerusalem

¹Some time later Jesus again went up to Jerusalem for a feast.

Jesus heals an invalid at the pool of Bethesda

²Now in Jerusalem there is a pool called

Bethesda which is surrounded by five covered porches. In these porches lay many invalids, blind, lame, and paralysed waiting for the moving of the water.

³For from time to time an angel would come and stir up the water. The first one into the pool after the disturbance would be cured of whatever disease he had.

⁴Now there was a man lying there who had been an invalid for thirty-eight years. When Jesus learned he had been in this condition for such a long time he said to him, "**Do you want to made well?**"

⁵The invalid replied, "Sir I have no one to help me into the pool when the water is stirred. While I am trying to get in, another goes down ahead of me."

⁶Jesus said to him, "**Arise, take up your mat and walk.**" At once the invalid was healed and he picked up his mat and walked.

The Jewish leaders rebuke the healed man for breaking the Sabbath

⁷Now this took place on the Sabbath day. Some of the teachers of the Law said to the man who had been healed, "The Law forbids you to carry your mat on the Sabbath."

⁸He replied, "The man who healed me told me to take up my mat and walk."

⁹They asked, "Who was he?" But the man did not know for Jesus had disappeared into the crowd.

Jesus tells the healed man to sin no more or something worse may happen to him

¹⁰Later Jesus saw the man at the Temple and said to him, "**See, you are well again. Sin no more or something worse may happen to you.**"

¹¹Then the man went and told the teachers of the Law that it was Jesus who had healed him.



Street in Jerusalem.

Jesus persecuted for healing on the Sabbath

¹²Because Jesus did such things on the Sabbath the chief priests and teachers of the Law persecuted him. But Jesus said to them, "**My Father is always at his work, so I too am working.**"

*²⁹ Capernaum was about 30 kms from Cana.

¹³For this reason they tried all the harder to kill him for not only was he breaking the Sabbath but he was even claiming God to be his own Father, making himself equal with God.

Jesus does what he has seen his Father doing

¹⁴Jesus said to them, "The Son does nothing of himself, only what he has seen his Father doing. Whatever the Father does the Son does also. For the Father loves the Son and shows him all that he does."

¹⁵"Yes, and even greater works than these shall he show him to your amazement, for just as the Father raises the dead and gives them Eternal Life, so too will the Son give Eternal Life to whomever he chooses."

All judgement given to Jesus by the Father

¹⁶"The Father judges no one but has given all judgement to the Son, that all may honour him just as they honour the Father.

¹⁷He who does not honour the Son does not honour the Father who sent him."

¹⁸"But of myself I do nothing. I judge only as I hear, but my judgement is just for I seek to please not myself but him who sent me."

Whoever believes the words of Jesus has Eternal Life

¹⁹"Whoever believes my words believes him who sent me and has Eternal Life. He will not be condemned. He has crossed over from Death to Life."

The dead also to hear the voice of Jesus

²⁰"The time is coming and has now come, when the dead will hear the voice of the Son of God, and those who heed it will Live." ^{F*}

All who have died to be resurrected

²¹"Be not amazed at this, for the day will come when all who are in their graves will hear my voice and come out. Those who have done good to Eternal Life, and those who have done evil to condemnation."

The Pharisees challenge Jesus' testimony

²²But the Pharisees challenged Jesus saying, "You are appearing as your own witness, therefore your testimony is not valid."

Jesus cites John the Baptist's testimony

²³Jesus answered, "If I testify of myself my testimony is not valid, but John has testified to the truth. ²⁴John was a lamp that burned and gave light and you chose for a time to enjoy his light."

Jesus also cites the miracles he has done and the Father's testimony

²⁵"However I have testimony greater than that of John, for the miracles that the Father has given me to do testify that he has sent me."

²⁶"Also the Father who sent me has himself

testified concerning me.^{F*} But his word does not dwell in you for you do not believe the one he sent."

The scriptures also testify of Jesus

²⁷"You study the scriptures, thinking that by them you will gain Eternal Life and the scriptures testify of me. Yet you refuse to come to me to have Eternal Life. ²⁸You have not the love of God in your hearts."

²⁹"I come in my Father's name and you accept me not, but if another comes in his own name you will accept him."

Moses himself will be Pharisee's accuser

³⁰"But think not that I will accuse you before the Father, your accuser will be Moses, on whom your hopes are set."

³¹"If you believed Moses you would believe me, for he wrote of me.^{F*} But since you disbelieve the words he wrote, how are you going to believe my words?"

If you do not believe in me you will die in your sins

³²"You are from below, I am from above. You are of this world, I am not of this world.

³³If you do not believe that I am who I claim to be, you will die in your sins."

Jesus testifies of the Father

³⁴The Pharisees demanded, "Tell us who you are."

Jesus answered, "I am who I have been claiming to be all along. He who sent me is trustworthy, and what I have heard from him I tell the world."

³⁵They did not understand that he was speaking of his Father so Jesus said, "When you have lifted up the Son of Man then you will know that I am who I claim to be. And that I do nothing of my own will but speak what the Father has taught me."

³⁶"He who sent me is with me and has not left me alone, for I always do what pleases him."

³⁷Even as he spoke, many believed in him.

6

A great crowd of people have no food

¹Jesus returned once more to Galilee. Soon afterward he crossed to the far shore of the lake and a great crowd of people followed him, for they had seen the miracles he had performed on the sick.

²Jesus went up on a hillside and sat down with his twelve disciples. Then he said to Philip, "Where shall we buy bread for all these people to eat?" (He said this only to test him.)

³Philip answered, "Even 200 denarii^{F*} would not buy enough bread for all these!"

*26 A voice from heaven was heard at the time Jesus was baptised (Matt-Mark-Luke 4:21).

*31 See Deuteronomy 4:1.

*33 About eight months wages.

*20 Peter revealed that Jesus visited and taught the spirits of the dead while his body lay in the tomb (1 Peter 2:15-16).

A boy has five loaves and two fishes

⁴Another of his disciples Andrew said, “Here is a boy with five small barley loaves and two small fishes, but what is that among so many?”

Jesus miraculously feeds 5000 men

⁵Jesus said, “Have the people sit down.” There was much grass in that place and they all sat down, about 5000 men.

⁶Jesus took the loaves and gave thanks, then his disciples distributed them to those who were seated, as much as they wanted. He did the same with the fishes.

Twelve baskets of food gathered up afterward

⁷When they had all had enough to eat, Jesus said to his disciples, “Gather the pieces that are left over. Let nothing be wasted.” ⁸So they gathered them up and filled twelve baskets with the pieces of the five barley loaves that were left over.

The people want to make Jesus king

⁹After the people saw this miracle they began to say, “Surely this is the Prophet who is to come into the world.”

¹⁰When Jesus saw that they intended to make him king by force he withdrew into the hills by himself.

Jesus walks on water

¹¹When evening came, the disciples got into the boat and set off across the lake for Capernaum. It was dark and Jesus had not yet joined them.

¹²A strong wind was blowing and the waters grew rough. When they had rowed about 25 stadia^{F*} they saw Jesus approaching the boat walking on the water, and they feared greatly.

¹³But he called out to them saying, “It is I, fear not.”

¹⁴Then they were willing to take him into the boat. Soon afterward the boat reached the shore where they were heading.



Lake Galilee where Jesus walked on the water.

The crowd search for Jesus next day

¹⁵The next day some boats from Tiberias landed near the place where the crowd had eaten the bread. Many who had been there the

previous day got into the boats and crossed to Capernaum in search of Jesus.

¹⁶They found him teaching in the synagogue at Capernaum and said to him, “Teacher when did you get here?”

¹⁷Jesus answered, “You are looking for me because you ate bread and had your fill. Seek not for food that spoils, but for food that endures unto Eternal Life. This the Son of Man will give you.”

The people ask Jesus for a sign

¹⁸The people said to him, “What does God require of us?”

¹⁹Jesus replied, “To believe in the one he has sent.”

²⁰They said, “What sign will you give us that we may believe in you? Our forefathers ate manna from heaven in the desert.”

The Father has sent Jesus – the True Bread

²¹Jesus said to them, “Moses did not send you the bread from heaven, but my Father. Now he has sent the True Bread of heaven to give Eternal Life to the world.”

²²They said, “Give us this True Bread.”

²³Jesus declared, “I am the True Bread of Eternal Life. He who comes to me will never hunger or thirst.”

All whom the Father has given will come to Jesus

²⁴“You have seen me and do not believe in me. Yet all whom the Father has given me will come to me.

I have come down from heaven

²⁵For I have come down from heaven, not to do my will but the will of him who sent me.”

²⁶“This is his will, that I lose none of those whom he has given me but raise them up at the last day. ²⁷All who come to the Son and believe in him shall have Eternal Life.” ^{F*}

The people murmur in disbelief

²⁸At this the people began to murmur saying, “Is this not Jesus the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? How then can he say, ‘I came down from heaven?’”

²⁹Jesus said, “Do not murmur among yourselves. No one can come to me unless the Father draws him, for it is written in the scriptures, ‘They will all be taught by God.’”

³⁰“All who listen to the Father will come to me and find Eternal Life.”

Jesus the True Bread of Eternal Life

³¹“I am the True Bread of Life. Your forefathers ate manna in the desert yet they died. But I am the True Bread that comes down from heaven which a man may eat and have Eternal Life. This bread is my flesh.”

*27 The term ‘Eternal Life’ (or ‘Life’ or ‘Live’) is used frequently by Jesus and means for a person to live forever after death in glory with Jesus in the presence of God the Father. See John 15:29-31 and note on Revelation 2:13 for fuller explanation.

*12 About 5 kms.

³²The people again murmured saying, “How can this man give us his flesh to eat?”

³³Jesus said to them, “Truly I say, unless you eat the flesh of the Son of Man and drink his blood, you will not have Eternal Life. ³⁴Whoever eats my flesh and drinks my blood has Eternal Life and I will raise him up at the last day. He will abide in me and I in him.”

³⁵“Just as the Eternal Father sent me, and I have Eternal Life because of the Father,^{F*} so anyone who feeds on this bread will have Eternal Life because of me.”

Many followers turn away from Jesus

³⁶On hearing these words, many of his disciples said, “This is a hard teaching, who can accept it?”

³⁷Aware that his disciples were murmuring about this, Jesus said to them, “Does this offend you? What if you see the Son of Man ascend to where he was before?”

³⁸“The Spirit gives life, but the flesh counts for nothing. The words I have spoken to you are Spirit and they will bring you Eternal Life.”

³⁹From that hour on, many of his disciples turned away and no longer followed Jesus.

Jesus asks the Twelve if they will go away also

⁴⁰Jesus turned to the Twelve and said, “Will you also go away?”

⁴¹Peter answered, “Lord, to whom shall we go? You have the words of Eternal Life. We know that you are the Holy One of God.”

One of the Twelve is a devil

⁴²Jesus said, “Did I not choose you Twelve? Yet one of you is a devil.” (He meant Judas Iscariot who was later to betray him.)

7

Jesus stays in Galilee for safety

¹After this, Jesus travelled around Galilee staying away from Judea for the Jewish leaders there wanted to kill him.

His brothers tell him to return to Jerusalem

²When the Feast of Tabernacles drew near his brothers said to Jesus, “Go to Judea so that your followers there can also see the miracles you do. ³For no man who wants to become well known acts in secret. Since you are doing these things show yourself to the world.”

Even brothers of Jesus do not believe in him

⁴Yet even his own brothers did not believe in him. ^{F*}

*35 The name/title of the Father is Jehovah (also shared by the pre-mortal Jesus) and means ‘Eternal.’ Therefore Eternal Life means ‘Life in the presence of God’ rather than merely existing forever, of which even the wicked seem assured, although they do suffer the Second Death which is to be cut off forever from the presence of God the Father (Revelation 17:8). For further information on the fate of the wicked see note on Revelation 16:19.

*4 After his resurrection at least two of his brothers, James and Jude believed in him. See introductions to the books of James and Jude.

⁵Jesus replied, “My time has not yet come. For you any time is right, for the world will not hate you, but it hates me for I testify that its works are evil. You go on up to the Feast.”

Jesus goes to Jerusalem secretly

⁶After his brothers had left for the Feast, Jesus went also but in secret.

⁷Now at the Feast the chief priests and Pharisees were watching for him and saying, “Where is he?” ⁸And among the crowds there was much debate about him. Some said, “He is a good man.” Others said, “He deceives the people.”

⁹But no one spoke openly for fear of the chief priests and Pharisees.

Jesus teaches in the Temple courtyards

¹⁰Halfway through the Feast, Jesus went up into the Temple courts and began to teach.

¹¹The Jews were amazed and said, “How did this man get such learning without having been taught?”

¹²Jesus answered, “My teaching is not my own, it comes from him who sent me. If anyone does God’s will he will know whether my teaching comes from God or whether I speak of myself.”

¹³“He who speaks of himself does so only to gain honour for himself, but he who seeks the honour of the one who sent him is a man of truth.”

Jesus accused of being demon-possessed

¹⁴“Did not Moses give you the Law? Yet not one of you keeps it. And why is it that you are trying to kill me?”

¹⁵The crowd replied, “You are possessed by a demon. Who is trying to kill you?”

Jesus defends his healing on the Sabbath

¹⁶Jesus said to them, “I do one miracle on the Sabbath and you are all astonished, yet you circumcise a child on the Sabbath.”

¹⁷“If a child can be circumcised on the Sabbath so that the Law of Moses not be broken, why are you angry with me for healing a whole man on the Sabbath?”

¹⁸Cease to judge superficially and make right judgements.”

Jesus testifies again that he has come from the Father

¹⁹Now some of the people were saying, “Is not this the man they are trying to kill? Yet here he is speaking openly. ²⁰Have the authorities decided that he really is the Christ? But we know where this man comes from. When the Christ comes no one will know where he is from.”

²¹Hearing this, Jesus cried out, “Yes, you know where I am from, but I have not come of my own accord. I was sent by one who has a right to send.”

²²“You do not know the Father, but I know him, for I am from him and he sent me.”

²³They said to him, “Where is your Father?”

JOHN 8

Jesus replied. **“If you knew me, you would know my Father also.”**

Many believe in Jesus because of his miracles

²⁴Some wanted to seize him but no one dared lay a hand on him, for his time had not yet come.

²⁵Yet many in the crowd believed in him and said, “When the Christ comes will he do more miracles than this man?”

The Pharisees send Temple guards to arrest Jesus

²⁶The chief priests and Pharisees heard what the crowd were saying therefore they sent Temple guards^{F*} to arrest Jesus.

Jesus speaks of his coming death

²⁷Jesus said, **“I am with you only a short time then I will return to him who sent me. You will look for me but not find me for where I am you cannot come.”**

²⁸The Jews said to one another, “Where does this man intend to go that we cannot find him or come to him? Will he kill himself?”

The Temple guards return without arresting Jesus

²⁹The Temple guards returned to the chief priests and Pharisees who said to them, “Why did you not arrest him?”

³⁰The guards answered, “No man ever spoke as this man does.”

³¹The Pharisees retorted, “Has he deceived you also? Have any of the rulers or the Pharisees believed in him? No!”^{F*}

³²“That mob out there know nothing of the Law. There is a curse on them.”

Nicodemus stands up for Jesus

³³Then Nicodemus, who had gone to Jesus by night and who was one of their own number said, “Does our Law condemn a man without first giving him a hearing?”

³⁴They sneered at him and said, “Are you from Galilee too? Search the scriptures, you will find that no prophet is to arise from Galilee.”^{F*}

Jesus describes the Holy Spirit as Living Water

³⁵On the last day of the Feast, the greatest day, Jesus stood up and cried out in a loud voice, **“If anyone thirsts let him come to me and drink. Whoever believes in me, streams of Living Water will flow from within him.”**

³⁶By this he meant the Holy Spirit whom his believers were later to receive. For as yet the Spirit had not been given them since Jesus had not yet been glorified.

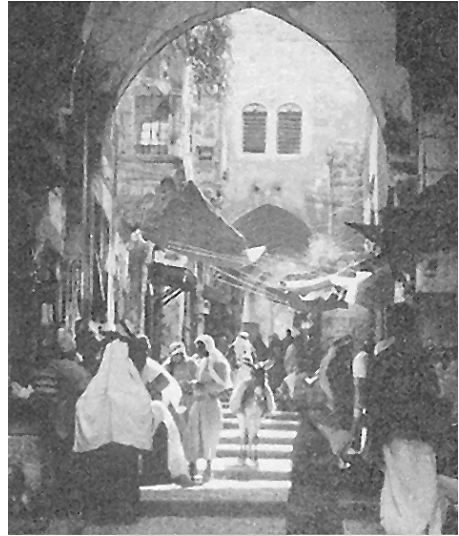
The people are divided

³⁷On hearing these words some of the people said, “Surely this man is the Prophet.” Others said, “He is the Christ.”

³⁸Still others said, “How can the Christ come

from Galilee? Does not the scripture say that the Christ will come from David’s family and from Bethlehem?”

³⁹And so the people were divided because of Jesus.



The streets of old Jerusalem, the setting for much of the gospel of John.

8

An adulterous woman brought before Jesus

¹At dawn the next day Jesus went again to the Temple courts. The people gathered around him and he sat down and began to teach them.

²Then the teachers of the Law and the Pharisees brought in a woman who had been caught in adultery. ³They made her stand before Jesus and said to him, “Teacher, this woman was caught in the very act of adultery. Moses commanded us to stone such a woman, but what do you say?”

He who is without sin to cast the first stone

⁴They were using this question as a trap in order to have grounds for accusing him.^{F*} But Jesus leaned over and wrote on the ground with his finger.

⁵When they kept on questioning him, Jesus sat up straight and said to them, **“Let him who is without sin among you cast the first stone at her.”** Then he leaned over again and wrote on the ground.

The women’s accusers depart, one by one

⁶At these words those who had brought in the woman began to depart, one by one beginning with the eldest, each being convicted by his conscience until they had all gone.

*²⁶ The temple guards were Jews not Romans.

*³¹ Not entirely correct. At least two of their own number Nicodemus and Joseph believed in him. See John 3:1; 7:33 and 18:22-26.

*³⁴ Josephus the Jewish historian commented that the Jewish rulers who were mostly Sadducees not Pharisees were noted for their rudeness to each other.

*⁴ Roman law did not permit the Jews to put to death one of their own and if Jesus excused the woman he would be violating the written Law of Moses.

The woman told by Jesus to sin no more

⁷Jesus then looked up and said to the woman, **“Woman, where are your accusers? Is there no one to condemn you?”**

She replied, “No one sir.”

⁸Jesus said, **“Then neither do I condemn you. Go now and sin no more.”**

Jesus the light of Eternal Life

⁹Jesus continued to teach the people saying, **“I am the light of the world. Whoever follows me will never walk in darkness but will have the light of Eternal Life.”**

The truth will free you from slavery of sin

¹⁰To those who believed in him Jesus said, **“If you continue in my teaching you are truly my disciples. ¹¹You will know the truth and the truth will make you free.”**

¹²Some of the Jews replied, “We are Abraham’s descendants and have never been slaves of anyone. How can you say, ‘We shall be made free?’”

¹³Jesus said, **“I know you are Abraham’s descendants, yet you are ready to kill me, for my words find no place in you.**

¹⁴**Everyone who sins is a slave to sin, therefore if the Son sets you free you will be free indeed.”**

Those who oppose Jesus are children of the devil

¹⁵**“I speak to you of what I have seen in the presence of the Father, but you do what your father tells you.”**

¹⁶They answered, “We are Abraham’s children.”

Jesus said, **“If you were Abraham’s children you would do the things Abraham did. ¹⁷Yet you are determined to kill me, a man who has told you the truth I heard from God. Abraham did not do such things. ¹⁸You are doing the things your own father does.”**

¹⁹They replied, “We are not illegitimate children. We have God himself for our Father.”

²⁰Jesus said to them, **“If God were your Father you would love me, for I came from God. ²¹You do not understand what I say because you are unable to bear my words.**

²²**You belong to your father the devil, and want to carry out your father’s desire.”**

The devil a murderer and a liar

²³**“He was a murderer from the beginning, not holding to the truth for there is no truth in him. When he lies he speaks according to his own nature for he is a liar and the father of lies.”**

Jesus challenges anyone to prove him guilty of sin

²⁴**“Can any of you prove me guilty of sin?”**

²⁵**“I am speaking the truth, why do you not believe me? He who belongs to God believes what God says. ²⁶The reason you do not believe is that you do not belong to God.”**

Jesus again accused of being demon-possessed

²⁷The Jews answered, **“You Samaritan! ^{F*} Are we not right in saying that you are possessed by a demon?”**

²⁸Jesus said, **“I am not possessed by a demon. I honour my Father, and you dishonour me. I am not seeking glory for myself.”**

²⁹**“Truly I say, whoever heeds my words will never see Death.” ^{F*}**

³⁰At this the Jews exclaimed, “Now we know you have a demon. Abraham died and so did the prophets yet you say, whoever heeds your words will never see death. ³¹Are you greater than our father Abraham? Who do you claim to be?”

Abraham saw Jesus

³²Jesus replied, **“Abraham rejoiced at the thought of seeing my day. He saw it and was glad.”**

³³The Jews said to him, “You who are not yet fifty years old, claim that Abraham has seen you?”

Jesus proclaims he existed before Abraham was born

³⁴Jesus answered, **“Truly I say to you, before Abraham was born, I existed.”**

The people try to stone Jesus for blasphemy

³⁵At this they picked up stones to stone him, but Jesus hid himself, then left the Temple courts.

9

Jesus heals a man blind from birth

¹Later as Jesus walked with his disciples he saw a man who had been blind from birth. His disciples said to him, “Teacher, who sinned, this man or his parents that he was born blind?” ^{F*}

²Jesus replied, **“Neither this man nor his parents sinned. He was born blind that a miracle of God might be displayed in his life.”**

³Having said this, Jesus spat on the ground and made some mud with his saliva and spread it on the man’s eyes. Then he said to him, **“Go wash in the Pool of Siloam.”** ⁴So the man went and washed and went home seeing.

⁵His neighbours said to one another, “Is not this the man who sat and begged?”

⁶Some said, “It is he.” Others said, “No, he only looks like him.”

⁷But he himself insisted, “I am the man.”

⁸They said to him, “How then were your eyes opened?”

⁹He replied, “The man they call Jesus made some mud and put it on my eyes. Then he told

*27 A term of abuse.

*29 Jesus is speaking of the Second Death (see Revelation 17:8 and note on Revelation 16:19) which is to be cut off forever from the presence of God.

*1 Traditional Jewish belief is that a person’s spirit existed prior to birth. See note on Job 1:5.

JOHN 9

me to go to Siloam and wash. So I went and washed and then I could see.”

The healed man taken to the Pharisees

¹⁰So they took the man who had been blind to the Pharisees. Now the day on which Jesus had opened the man’s eyes was the Sabbath therefore some of the Pharisees said, “This man is not of God, for he does not observe the Sabbath.”

¹¹But others said, “How could a sinner do such a miracle?”

¹²They turned to the man who had been blind and said, “What have you to say about him?”

¹³The man answered, “He is a prophet.”

The man’s parents questioned

¹⁴The Pharisees did not believe the man had been blind and called for his parents and said to them, “Is this your son whom you say was born blind? How is it that he now sees?”

¹⁵The parents answered, “We know that he is our son, and we know that he was born blind, but how it is that he now sees, we do not know. Ask him, for he is of age and can speak for himself.”

¹⁶His parents answered this way for fear of the Pharisees. For already they had decided that anyone who said that Jesus was the Christ would be expelled from the synagogue.



The pool of Siloam where the man blind from birth washed his eyes and regained his sight.

The Pharisees again question the healed man

¹⁷So a second time the Pharisees called the man who had been blind and said to him, “Give the glory to God for we know that this man is a sinner.”

¹⁸The man replied, “Whether he be a sinner or not, one thing I do know, I was blind and now I see.”

¹⁹Again they said to him, “What did he do to you? How did he open your eyes?”

²⁰He answered, “I have told you already. Why do you want to hear it again? Do you wish to become his disciples too?”

²¹At this they scorned him and said, “You may be this man’s disciple but we are disciples of Moses. We know that God spoke to Moses but as for this man we do not even know where he comes from.”

The healed man defends Jesus

²²The man said, “Now that is remarkable! You do not know where he comes from, yet he opened my eyes. ²³We all know that God does not listen to sinners, but to men who worship him and do his will. ²⁴Never before has it been heard of one opening the eyes of a man born blind. If this man were not from God he could not do such a thing.”

The Pharisees scorn the man and thrust him out

²⁵To these words the Pharisees replied angrily, “You who were steeped in sin at birth would lecture us?” And they thrust him out.

The healed man believes in Jesus

²⁶Jesus heard that they had thrust him out and when he found him he said, “**Do you believe in the Son of Man?**”

²⁷The man answered, “Tell me who he is that I may believe in him.”

²⁸Jesus replied, “**He is the one speaking with you.**”

²⁹The man said, “Lord I believe,” and he worshipped Jesus.

³⁰Jesus said, “**I have come into the world to judge it that the blind may see, and those who claim to see may become blind.**”

The Pharisees guilty because they claim to see

³¹Some Pharisees heard him say this and sneered at him saying, “What, are we blind too?”

³²Jesus said, “**If you were blind you would not be guilty of sin, but since you claim to see, your guilt remains.**”

The parable of the sheep pen

³³“**The man who does not enter a sheep pen^F by the gate but climbs in some other way is a thief. But he who enters by the gate is the shepherd of his flock.**”

³⁴“**The watchman opens the gate for him and the sheep hear his voice. He calls his own sheep by name and leads them out.**”

³⁵“**Then he walks ahead of them and the sheep follow him, for they know his voice.**”

³⁶“**They will not follow a stranger but will run from him, for they do not recognise his voice.**”

Jesus explains the parable of the sheep pen

³⁷They did not understand this parable so Jesus explained it saying, “**I am the gate for**

^{*33} A sheep pen was a large enclosure where shepherds kept their flocks overnight for protection under the care of an appointed watchman. In the morning the shepherds would return and call out their various flocks and lead them out to pasture.

the sheep. All others who enter in some other way are thieves, but the sheep do not listen to them.”

³⁸“I am the gate. Whoever enters through me will be saved. They will come in and go out and find pasture. ³⁹The thief comes only to steal and destroy, but I have come that they may have Eternal Life and have it abundantly.”

Jesus is the good shepherd who lays down his life for his sheep

⁴⁰“I am the good shepherd. The good shepherd lays down his life for his sheep. ⁴¹A hired hand is not the shepherd who owns the sheep. He cares nothing for them. When he sees the wolf coming he abandons the sheep and runs away. Then the wolf attacks the flock and scatters it.”

⁴²“But I am the good shepherd. I know my sheep and my sheep know me, just as the Father knows me and I know the Father, and I lay down my life for my sheep.”

Other sheep of a different fold to also hear the voice of Jesus

⁴³“And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold. Them also I must bring. They too will hear my voice, and there shall be one flock and one shepherd.”



The apt image of a shepherd leading his sheep is used throughout the Bible.

Jesus to lay down his life willingly

⁴⁴“For this reason the Father loves me, because I lay down my life that I may take it up again.”

⁴⁵“No one takes it from me, I lay it down of my own accord. I have power to lay it down and power to take it up again.”

Some disbelieve Jesus but others believe

⁴⁶At these words many of the people mocked him saying, “He is possessed of a demon and

raving mad. Why listen to him?”

⁴⁷But others said, “These are not the words of a man possessed by a demon. Can a demon open the eyes of the blind?”

10

Jesus asked outright if he is the Christ

¹When it was winter, at the time of the Feast of Lights,^{F*} Jesus was at the Temple in Jerusalem walking in Solomon’s Porch. ²The people gathered around him and said, “How long will you keep us in suspense? If you are the Christ, tell us plainly.”



Jerusalem in winter.

The miracles speak for Jesus

³Jesus answered, “I tell you but you do not believe. The miracles I do in my Father’s name speak for me.”

Unbelievers not Jesus’ sheep

⁴“You do not believe because you are not my sheep. My sheep heed my voice. I know them and they follow me and I will give them Eternal Life. No one can snatch them out of my hand.”

Jesus is one with the Father

⁵“My Father who has given them to me is greater than all. I and the Father are one.” ^{F*}

The Jews pick up stones to stone Jesus for claiming to be as God

⁶Again the Jews picked up stones to stone him but Jesus said to them, “For which of the many miracles from the Father are you going to stone me?”

⁷They replied, “We are not going to stone you for miracles but for blasphemy, because you a mere man claim to be as God.”

*1 An 8 day mid-winter feast instituted by Judas Maccabee to commemorate the cleansing of the temple in 164 BC.

*5 This is a Semitic way of speaking and has caused some confusion among Christians. Jesus is not saying he and the Father are the same person, but that they are one in purpose, unity and love, just as devoted friends here on earth can be described as one. In a similar manner Jesus prays to the Father in John 15:22 and 15:28-29 that he and his apostles be one, as he and the Father are one. This is accomplished through the Holy Spirit (see 1 John 3:14). See also note on John 13:35.

Jesus quotes scripture – men called Gods

⁸Jesus said to them, “Is it not written in the scriptures, ‘Yet you are gods, all of you?’” ^{F*}

⁹“If those to whom the word of God came were called gods, and scripture is binding, why not the one whom the Father set apart as his very own and sent into the world?”

¹⁰“Why then accuse me of blasphemy because I say ‘I am the Son of God?’”

The miracles prove that Jesus speaks the truth

¹¹“Do not believe me unless I do what my Father does. Believe the miracles that you may know that the Father is in me and I in the Father.”

Jesus escapes and crosses the Jordan

¹²Again they tried to seize Jesus, but he escaped their grasp and crossed the Jordan to the place where John had been baptising in the early days and stayed there.

John the Baptist testified truly about Jesus

¹³Many people came to Jesus there saying, “Though John never performed a miracle, all he said about this man is true.” And in that place many believed in Jesus.

11

Lazarus becomes very sick

¹Now a certain man named Lazarus was very sick. He was the brother of Mary and Martha from the village of Bethany. So his sisters sent word to Jesus saying, “Lord the one whom you love is very sick.”

²When Jesus heard this he said, “The end of this sickness will not be death, but God’s glory and the glory of God’s Son.”

Jesus delays going to Lazarus for two days

³Jesus loved Lazarus and his two sisters, yet he remained where he was for two more days. Then he said to his disciples, “Let us return to Judea.”

⁴They said to him, “But Teacher only a short while ago the Jews tried to stone you.”

⁵Jesus answered, “Only he who walks in the dark stumbles. Our friend Lazarus has fallen asleep. I go to awaken him.”

Jesus tells his disciples Lazarus is dead

⁶His disciples replied, “Lord if he sleeps he will recover.”

⁷Jesus told them plainly, “Lazarus is dead, and for your sake I am glad I was not there so that you may believe. Let us go to him.”

⁸Thomas said to the rest of the disciples, “Let us also go that we may die with him.”

⁹When Jesus arrived he found that Lazarus had been in the tomb four days.

Martha goes out to meet Jesus

¹⁰Now Bethany was near to Jerusalem and many people had come out to Martha and Mary to comfort them in the loss of their brother.

¹¹When Martha heard that Jesus had come she went out to meet him, but Mary stayed in the house.

Jesus tells Martha that he is the resurrection

¹²Martha said to Jesus, “O Lord, if you had been here my brother would not have died, but I know that even now God will do for you whatever you ask.”

¹³Jesus said to her, “Your brother will rise again.”

Martha answered, “I know he will rise again in the resurrection at the last day.”

¹⁴Jesus said to her, “I am the resurrection and the Life. He who believes in me will Live even though he dies. Do you believe this?”

¹⁵She replied, “Yes Lord, I believe that you are the Christ, the Son of God who was to come into the world.”

Jesus calls for Mary

¹⁶Martha then went back to the house and called her sister Mary aside and said to her, “The Teacher is here and is asking for you.”

¹⁷Now Jesus had not yet entered the village but was still at the place where Martha had met him. When those who were with Mary in the house comforting her saw her go out they followed her, supposing she was going to the tomb to mourn there.

Mary falls down at the feet of Jesus

¹⁸As soon as Mary saw Jesus she fell at his feet and said, “Lord if you had been here my brother would not have died.”

Jesus weeps

¹⁹Jesus saw Mary weeping and heard the wailing of those who had come along with her and was deeply moved in spirit. He wept also.

Jesus is taken to the tomb

²⁰Then Jesus said, “Where have you laid him?”

Mary replied, “Come and see Lord.”

²¹The people said, “See how he loved him.” But some of them said, “Could not he who opened the eyes of the blind man have saved this man from dying?”

²²Jesus, still deeply moved came to the tomb. It was a cave with a stone sealing the entrance. He said, “Remove the stone.”

²³Martha said, “But Lord, by this time there will be a stench. He has been there four days.”

²⁴Jesus said, “Did I not tell you that if you believed you would see the glory of God?”

Jesus raises Lazarus from the dead

²⁵So they took away the stone. Then Jesus looked upward and said, “Father, I thank you that you have heard me. I know that you always hear me but I say this for the benefit of the people standing here, that they may believe that you sent me.”

²⁶Then he cried out in a loud voice, “Lazarus, come forth!”

²⁷The man who was dead came out. His hands and feet were bound with strips of linen

*8 This scripture is found in Psalms 77:4.

and his face was wrapped with cloth.

²⁸Jesus said to them, “Unbind him.”

Many of the Jews believe in Jesus

²⁹Seeing this, many of the Jews who had come to visit Mary believed in Jesus. Some of them went to the Pharisees and told them what Jesus had done.

The Jewish leaders call a meeting

³⁰The chief priests and Pharisees immediately called a meeting of the Sanhedrin^{F*} and said, “What are we to do? This man performs many miracles. ³¹If we let him go on like this soon all will believe in him and the Romans will come and destroy our Temple and our nation.”

The high priest decides that Jesus must die

³²Caiaphas the high priest said, “Do you not understand? It is better that one man die for the people than the whole nation perish?”

³³He did not say this of his own accord, but as high priest he was prophesying that Jesus would die for the Jewish nation and also for the scattered children of God, to bring them together and make them one.

³⁴So from that day on they plotted to take his life.



The tomb of Lazarus at Bethany.

Jesus and his disciples withdraw to a remote desert town

³⁵Jesus therefore no longer moved about publicly among the Jews, instead he withdrew to a town near the desert called Ephraim^{F*} where he stayed with his disciples.

³⁶The chief priests and Pharisees issued an announcement that if anyone knew where Jesus was they were to report it so they could arrest him.

The Passover draws near

³⁷When it was almost time for the Passover, many Jews went up to Jerusalem for their cleansing before the Feast. ³⁸They kept looking

*30 The Sanhedrin was a Jewish governing body of seventy elders, presided over by the high priest.

*35 The town of Ephraim was about 25 km north of Jerusalem.

for Jesus and as they stood in the Temple courts they said to one another, “What do you think? Surely he will not come to the Feast will he?”



Towns mentioned in the gospel of John

12

Jesus arrives at Bethany

¹Six days before the Passover, Jesus arrived at Bethany where Lazarus lived, whom he had raised from the dead.

²A dinner was given in his honour and Martha served, while Lazarus was among those reclining with Jesus at the table.

Mary anoints Jesus with expensive perfumed oil

³Then Mary the sister of Lazarus took a jar of pure nard, an expensive perfumed oil and poured it on the feet of Jesus and wiped his feet with her hair.

⁴The house was filled with the fragrance of the perfume.

Judas Iscariot objects to waste of money

⁵But Judas Iscariot one of the Twelve who was to betray Jesus objected and said, “Why was this perfume not sold and the money given to the poor? It is worth about 300 denarii.”^{F*}

⁶Judas did not say this because he cared for the poor but because he was a thief. As keeper of the money bag he would help himself from what was put into it.

Judas is rebuked by Jesus

⁷But Jesus said, “Do not bother this woman. She has kept it until now to anoint me in preparation for my burial. ⁸You will always have the poor with you but you will not always have me.”

The chief priests plan to kill Lazarus also

⁹Meanwhile a large crowd heard that Jesus was at Bethany and came out to him and also

*5 About a year's wages.

JOHN 12

to see Lazarus whom he had raised from the dead.

¹⁰Therefore the chief priests made plans to kill Lazarus also, for on account of him many of the people were believing in Jesus.

Jesus' triumphal entry into Jerusalem

¹¹The next day, the great crowd that had come for the Passover heard that Jesus was about to enter Jerusalem. ¹²So many took palm branches and went out to meet him shouting, **"Hosanna! Blessed is he who comes in the name of Jehovah! Blessed is the King of Israel!"**

¹³Jesus had found a young donkey and was riding upon it. ¹⁴Then still more people, having heard of the great miracle of raising Lazarus went out to meet him.



Crowd in Jerusalem waving palm branches re-enacting the triumphant entry by Jesus.

The Pharisees become desperate

¹⁵The Pharisees said to one another, "See, we are getting nowhere. Look how the whole world is going after him."

Some Greeks want to meet with Jesus

¹⁶There were some Greeks among those who had come up to worship at the Feast. They spoke to Philip who was from Bethsaida and said, ^{F*} "We would like to meet with Jesus."

Jesus' hour has come to be glorified

¹⁷Philip and Andrew went and told Jesus, but he replied, **"The hour has now come for the Son of Man to be glorified."**

Parable of seed of wheat

¹⁸**"Not until a seed of wheat falls to the ground and dies does it produce more seed."**

He who loves his earth life shall lose Eternal Life

¹⁹**"He who loves his life shall lose it, but he who detests his life in this world shall save it and gain Eternal Life. ²⁰Whoever serves**

me must follow me, and where I am, there will my servant be also. The Father will honour all who serve me."

The Father speaks to Jesus and the crowd hear his voice

²¹**"Now my spirit is troubled and what shall I say? 'Father save me from this hour?' No, for it was for this very hour that I came."**

²²**"O Father, glorify your name."**

²³Then came a voice from heaven saying, **"I have glorified it and will glorify it again."**

²⁴The crowd heard the voice and said it was thunder. Others said, "An angel has spoken to him."

²⁵Jesus said, **"The voice was for your sake, not mine."**

Jesus to draw all unto him

²⁶**"Now is the time for judgement on this world. Now the ruler of this world^{F*} shall be driven out. ²⁷And when I am lifted up from the earth I will draw all men unto me."** He said this to show by what manner of death he was to die.*

Is not the Christ to remain forever?

²⁸Someone in the crowd spoke up saying, "The scriptures say that the Christ is to remain forever, why then do you say 'The Son of Man must be lifted up?'"

²⁹Jesus answered, **"You will have the light with you only a little while longer. Walk while you have the light before darkness overtakes you. ³⁰Put your trust in the light while you have it so that you may become children of light."**

Many who believe in Jesus afraid to confess it

³¹When he had finished speaking Jesus hid himself from the crowd, for even though he had done many miracles in their presence, still they would not believe in him.

³²Yet many did believe in him, even among the leaders, but because of the Pharisees they would not confess their faith for fear they would be expelled from the synagogue. ³³For they loved the praise of men more than the praise of God.

The words of Jesus will condemn unbelievers on the day of judgement

³⁴Therefore Jesus had cried out to them saying, **"If anyone hears my words and does not obey them he will be condemned. I will not condemn him, for I came to save the world not to condemn it. The words I speak will condemn him at the last day."**

Whoever sees Jesus sees the Father who sent him

³⁵**"Anyone who believes in me does not believe in me only, but in the one who sent me. When he sees me he sees the one who sent me."**

*¹⁶ Bethsaida had a sizable Greek community and Philip, though a Jew, had a Greek name.

*²⁶ Satan, see also John 14:11 and 14:40.

*²⁷ ie To be lifted up on a cross in crucifixion.

**The Father commanded Jesus
what to say and how to say it**

³⁶“The Father who sent me commanded me what to say and how to say it. His commandments lead to Eternal Life.”

13

**Jesus washes the feet of his apostles
at the Last Supper**

¹It was now the night before the Passover and Jesus knew that the time had come for him to leave this world and return to the Father. ²Having loved his own who were in the world he now showed them the full extent of his love.

³As the Passover supper was being eaten Jesus arose from the meal and laid aside his outer clothing and wrapped a towel around his waist. ⁴He then poured water into a basin and began to wash the feet of his twelve disciples, drying them with the towel that was wrapped around him.

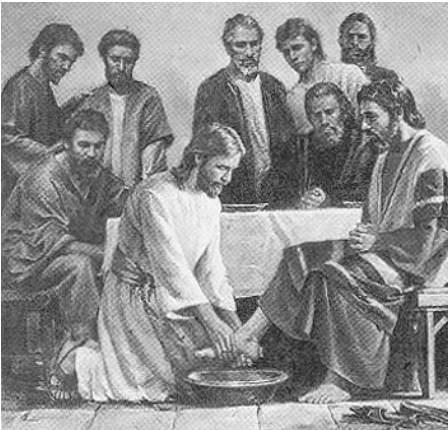
Peter resists at first

⁵He came to Peter who said to him, “No Lord, you shall never wash my feet.”

⁶Jesus answered, “**Unless I do, you have no part with me.**”

⁷Peter replied, “Then Lord, not just my feet but my hands and my head as well.”

⁸Jesus answered, “**He who has bathed needs only to wash his feet. And you are clean, though not all of you.**” For he knew who was going to betray him.



“He poured water into a basin and began to wash the feet of his twelve disciples” (John 13:4)

The apostles also to wash one another’s feet

⁹When Jesus had finished washing their feet, he again put on his outer clothing and returned to his place.

¹⁰He said to them, “Do you understand what I have done for you? You call me Teacher and Lord, and rightly so for that is what I am. Now if your Lord and Teacher

has washed your feet, you should also wash one another’s feet. ¹¹I have set you an example. You should do as I have done for you.”

¹²“No servant is greater than his master. Now that you know these things you will be blessed if you do them.”

Jesus reveals who will betray him

¹³After Jesus had said this he was troubled in spirit and declared, “**One of you will betray me.**”

¹⁴His disciples looked at one another. One of them, the disciple whom Jesus loved was reclining next to him. ^F* Peter motioned to this disciple and said, “Ask him which one of us he means.”

¹⁵So leaning back against Jesus he said to him, “Lord, who is it?”

¹⁶Jesus answered, “**It is he to whom I give this piece of bread.**” Then dipping the piece of bread in the dish he gave it to Judas Iscariot.

¹⁷As soon as Judas took the bread Satan entered into him. Jesus said to him, “**What you are about to do, do quickly.**”

Judas had charge of the money bag

¹⁸No one at the meal understood why Jesus said this to Judas. Since Judas had charge of the money bag some thought that Jesus was instructing him to go and buy what was needed for the coming Passover, or to give something to the poor.

Judas departs into the night

¹⁹As soon as Judas had eaten the bread he went out, and it was night.

²⁰When he was gone Jesus said, “**Now will the Son of Man be glorified, and in him is God glorified.**”

Apostles to love one another

²¹“My children I will be with you only a little longer. You will look for me but where I am going you cannot come.”

²²“This new commandment I give you, ‘Love one another.’ As I have loved you love one another. ²³By this shall men know that you are my disciples, if you have love one for another.”

Apostles to follow Jesus later

²⁴Peter said to him, “Lord, where are you going?” Jesus replied, “**Where I am going you cannot follow now, but you will follow later.**”

Jesus tells Peter ‘You will deny you know me three times’

²⁵Peter said, “Lord, why can I not follow you now? I will lay down my life for you.”

²⁶Jesus answered, “**Will you lay down your life for me? Truly I say, before the cock crows in the morning you will deny you know me, three times.**”

Many mansions where my Father dwells

²⁷“**But let not your hearts be troubled.**

*14 John himself, the author of this gospel. The Jews in his day reclined on cushions at a low table when eating.

Trust in God and trust in me also. For where my Father dwells there are many mansions. ²⁸I go to prepare a place for you. Then I will return and take you to be with me. ²⁹You know the way to the place where I am going.”

No one comes unto the Father but by me

³⁰Thomas said, “Lord we do not know where you are going. How can we know the way?”

³¹Jesus replied, “I am the way, the truth, and the Life. No one comes unto the Father but by me. If you really knew me you would know my Father also.”

Anyone who has seen me has seen the Father

³²Philip said, “Lord, show us the Father and we will be content.”

³³Jesus answered, “Do you not know me Philip, even after I have been among you all this time? ³⁴Whoever has seen me has seen the Father.”

The Father does his work through me

³⁵“Do you not believe that I am in the Father and the Father in me? The words I say to you are not my own, rather it is the Father living in me* who is doing his work.”

³⁶“Believe me when I say that I am in the Father and the Father in me, or at least believe in the evidence of the miracles.”

Anyone who has faith shall do even greater miracles than Jesus

³⁷“Truly anyone who has faith in me shall do what I have been doing, and will do even greater miracles than these.”

³⁸“Because I am going to the Father I will do whatever you ask in my name, so that the Son may bring glory to the Father. ³⁹You may ask anything in my name and I will do it.”

The Father will give you the Comforter who is the Holy Spirit

⁴⁰“If you love me you will keep my commandments, and I will ask the Father and he shall give you another Comforter to be with you forever, even the Spirit of truth.”

⁴¹The world cannot receive him for it neither sees him or knows him, but you will know him, for he shall abide with you and be in you.”

The oneness of the Father, Son and believers to be understood in a day to come

¹“I will not leave you as orphans, I will return to you. The world will not see me any more but you will see me. ²And because I Live you also will Live.”

³“In that day you will understand how I am in my Father and you are in me and I am in you.”

Whoever obeys the commandments will be loved by the Father and Son and see Jesus

⁴“Whoever obeys my commandments loves me, and he who loves me will be loved by my Father, and I too will love him and show myself to him.”

⁵Thaddeus said, “Lord why will you only show yourself to us and not to the world?”

⁶Jesus replied, “He who loves me will obey my words. My Father will love him and we shall both come to him and dwell* with him. ⁷But he who does not love me will not obey my words.”

The Comforter who is the Holy Spirit to teach all things

⁸“I say these things to you while I am still with you, but the Comforter, the Holy Spirit whom the Father will send in my name will teach you all things and will remind you of everything I have said to you.”

The Father is greater than Jesus

⁹“My peace I leave with you. Let not your hearts be troubled and do not fear. ¹⁰If you loved me you would be glad that I am going to the Father, for the Father is greater than I am.”

Satan the ruler of this world is coming

¹¹“I shall not speak with you much longer for the ruler of this world is coming. ¹²He has no power over me, but I do as my Father commands me so that the world may know that I love the Father.”

Jesus the vine and the Father the gardener

¹³“I am the vine, you are the branches, and my Father is the gardener. He who abides in me and I in him will bear much fruit, for apart from me you can do nothing.”

¹⁴“No branch can bear fruit of itself, it must remain on the vine, therefore you cannot bear fruit unless you abide in me. ¹⁵Abide in me and I will abide in you.”

Unfruitful branches cut off and fruitful branches pruned to bear more fruit

¹⁶“Every branch that fails to bear fruit, the Father cuts off and it withers. Such branches are cast into the fire and burned.”

¹⁷“But every branch that bears fruit the Father prunes, that it may become more fruitful.”

*³⁵ is Through the Holy Spirit which ‘proceeds from the Father’ (John 14:32). Jesus and the Father are not one and the same person (see note on John 10:5) for Jesus often prayed to his Father which he would hardly do if he were the same person. He also said, ‘The Son does nothing of himself, only what he has seen his Father doing’ (John 5:14), and ‘the Father is greater than I am,’ (John 14:10). The Father also came in a cloud (probably to shield his glory) on the mountain when Jesus was transfigured (Matt-Mark-Luke 17:23-30) and the three apostles present heard the Father speak. In addition Stephen in a vision for which he was shortly afterward stoned to death saw Jesus in heaven, standing at the right hand of the Father (Acts 6:48).

*⁶ Initially by means of the Holy Spirit, but eventually literally, in the future city of New Jerusalem which is to descend from heaven (Revelation chapter 17).



Jesus likened himself to a vine and those who follow his teachings to fruitful branches of the vine.

The Father glorified when you bear much fruit

¹⁸“If you abide in me and my words in you, you may ask whatever you will and it shall be given you.”

¹⁹“My Father is glorified when you bear much fruit, for you prove yourselves to be my disciples.”

Keep the commandments that your joy be complete

²⁰“As the Father has loved me, so have I loved you. Now abide in my love. If you keep my commandments you will abide in my love, just as I have kept my Father’s commandments and abide in his love.”

²¹“I have told you this that my joy may be in you, and that your joy may be complete.”

Greater love has no man than to lay down his life for his friends

²²“This is my commandment, that you love one another as I have loved you. ²³Greater love has no man than to lay down his life for his friends.”

Jesus calls the apostles his friends

²⁴“You are my friends if you do what I say. I no longer call you my servants for a servant knows not his master’s business.”

Jesus has made known to his apostles what he heard from his Father

²⁵“Instead I call you my friends, for all that I heard from my Father I have made known to you.”

The Father will give whatever they ask in Jesus’ name if they bear fruit

²⁶“You did not choose me but I chose you. I have appointed you to go and bear fruit that will endure. Then the Father will give you whatever you ask in my name.”

²⁷“Therefore this is my commandment: Love one another.”

The world will hate the apostles

²⁸“If the world hates you, know that it hated me first. If you belonged to the world it would love you as its own. But you do not belong to the world for I have chosen you out of the world and that is why the world hates you.”

²⁹“No servant is greater than his master. They have persecuted me so they will persecute you for they know not the One who sent me.”

³⁰“If I had not come and spoken to them and done among them what no one else has ever done, they would not be guilty of sin. ³¹But because they have seen the miracles they have no excuse for their sin. He who hates me hates my Father also.”

The apostles to testify of the truth by the power of the Holy Spirit

³²“When the Comforter comes whom I will send to you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth who proceeds from the Father, he will testify of me.”

³³“And you must also testify, for you have been with me from the beginning. ³⁴I tell you all these things that you will not go astray.”

Apostles will be killed as a `service to God’

³⁵“They will cast you out of the synagogues. Indeed the time is coming when whoever kills you will think he is offering a service to God.”

³⁶“They will do such things because they have not known the Father or me.”

Comforter will not come unless Jesus goes away

³⁷“I did not tell you these things at first, and now you are sorrowful in your hearts. ³⁸But truly it is for your good that I am going away. For unless I depart the Comforter will not come to you, but if I go I will send him to you.”

The Comforter will convict world of sin

³⁹“When the Comforter comes he will convict the world of sin, of righteousness and of judgement.”

⁴⁰“Of sin because men do not believe in me, of righteousness because I am going to the Father, and of judgement because the ruler of this world now stands condemned.”

The Holy Spirit will teach you all truth

⁴¹“I have much more to say to you, more than you can now bear, but when the Spirit of truth comes he will teach you all truth.”

⁴²“He will not speak of himself, but will speak what he hears from me and will tell you what is yet to come.”

All that belongs to the Father is mine

⁴³“He will bring glory to me by making known to you what is mine. All that belongs to the Father is mine.”

15

Jesus speaks of the joy his disciples will experience after his resurrection

¹Then Jesus said, “In a little while you will see me no more, and then after a little while you shall see me again.”

JOHN 15

²Some of the disciples said to one another, "What does he mean?"

³Jesus said to them, "You will weep and mourn while the world rejoices. But your grief will quickly turn to joy."

⁴"A woman giving birth suffers pain, for her hour has come, but when her child is born she forgets the suffering in her joy at having brought a child into the world."

⁵"So shall it be with you. Now is the time of your grief, but you shall see me again and will rejoice and no one can take your joy from you."

Ask and you shall receive

⁶"Then truly my Father will give you whatever you ask in my name. Ask and you shall receive, so that your joy may be complete."

Time coming when Jesus will speak plainly not figuratively

⁷"I have been speaking to you figuratively, but the time is coming when I shall no longer use this kind of language but will tell you plainly of the Father."

The apostles to be scattered and Jesus left alone

⁸"I came from the Father and entered the world. Now I am leaving the world and returning to the Father."

⁹The disciples said, "Now you are speaking plainly and without figures of speech. ¹⁰We know that you understand all things and we believe that you came from God."

¹¹Jesus answered, "Do you now believe? However the time has come for you to be scattered. ¹²You shall leave me all alone, yet I am not alone for my Father is with me."

In this world you shall have trouble

¹³"I tell you these things that in me you may have peace. In this world you shall have trouble but be of good cheer, I have overcome the world."

Jesus prays for the Father to glorify him with the glory he had before the world began

¹⁴Then Jesus looked up to heaven and prayed saying, "Father, the time has come to glorify your Son that your Son may glorify you. ¹⁵I have brought you glory upon the earth by completing the work you gave me to do. ¹⁶Now Father, glorify me in your presence with the glory I had with you before the world began."

Eternal Life is to know the Father and Jesus Christ

¹⁷"For you have allowed me to give Eternal Life to all those you have given me. ¹⁸This is Eternal Life, that they may know you the only true God and Jesus Christ whom you have sent."

Jesus prays for all those whom the Father has given him

¹⁹"I have revealed you to those whom you have given me, for I gave them the words

you gave me and they have obeyed your words."

²⁰"I pray for them for they are yours. All I have is yours and all you have is mine, and glory has come to me through them."

Jesus prays for a perfect oneness among his disciples just as he and the Father are one

²¹"I will not remain in the world for I am coming to you, but they will remain in the world. ²²O Holy Father protect them by the power of your name, the name you gave me, that they may be perfectly one as we are one."

Only the Son of Perdition has been lost

²³"While I was with them I protected them and kept them safe by the name you gave me. ²⁴None have been lost except the Son of Perdition,^{F*} that the scripture might be fulfilled."

Jesus prays that his followers be protected from the evil one

²⁵"My prayer is not that you take them out of the world, but that you protect them from the evil one."

²⁶"They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. Sanctify them by the truth, for your word is truth."

²⁷"As you sent me into the world I have sent them into the world."

Jesus prays that all who shall yet believe become one with the Father and Son

²⁸"My prayer is not for them alone. I pray also for all those who shall believe in me through their words, that all of them may be one, Father, just as you are in me and I am in you. May they also be one in us."

Believers to be given the same glory as Jesus

²⁹"The glory you have given me I give unto them, that they too may be one as we are one. I in them and you in me, that they may be completely united."

³⁰"Then the world will know that you sent me, and that you also love them as you love me."

³¹"Father I desire that those you have given me be with me where I am, to behold my glory which you gave me because you loved me, before the world began."

Love of Father and spirit of Jesus to be in believers

³²"Righteous Father, the world does not know you, but I know you and have made you known to these whom you have given me. ³³And I will continue to make you known in order that the love you have for me may be in them, and that I myself may be in them."

Jesus and his disciples go out to an olive grove

³⁴When Jesus had finished praying he said to his disciples, "Come now, let us depart."

^{*}24 Perdition means 'spiritual damnation.' Jesus is speaking of Judas Iscariot.

³⁵Then they left the upper room and crossed the Kidron Valley to an olive grove.

16

Judas leads a band of guards to Jesus

¹Now Judas knew the place, for Jesus often went there with his disciples. ²So Judas came to the grove, leading a band of guards and officers from the chief priests and Pharisees. They were carrying burning torches, lanterns and weapons.

They fall backwards at the words of Jesus

³Although Jesus knew all that was about to happen he said to them, **“Who is it you want?”** Judas the traitor was standing there with them.

⁴They answered, “Jesus of Nazareth.”

⁵Jesus said, **“I am he,”** and immediately they fell backward to the ground.

Peter attacks with a sword

⁶Again Jesus said to them **“Who is it you want?”** and again they replied, “Jesus of Nazareth.”

⁷Jesus said, **“I told you that I am he. If you are looking for me, let these men go.”**

⁸But Peter who had a sword, drew it and struck a servant of the high priest whose name was Malchus, cutting off his right ear.

⁹But Jesus commanded Peter saying, **“Put away your sword. Must I not drink the cup that the Father has given me?”**

Jesus arrested and taken to the house of the high priest

¹⁰Then they arrested Jesus and bound him and took him to the house of the high priest.

Peter and John follow Jesus into the courtyard

¹¹Peter and one other disciple^{F*} followed Jesus. Because this other disciple was known to the high priest, he was able to go with Jesus into the courtyard of the high priest.

¹²Peter had to remain outside the gate, but the other disciple went out and spoke to the servant girl who kept the gate and brought Peter inside.

Peter denies Jesus the first time

¹³The servant girl who kept the gate said to Peter, “You are not one of his disciples are you?”

Peter replied, “I am not.”

¹⁴Now the night was cold and the servants and guards stood around a charcoal fire they had made to keep warm. Peter also stood with them warming himself.

The high priest questions Jesus

¹⁵Meanwhile inside the house the high priest questioned Jesus about his disciples and his teaching.

¹⁶Jesus answered, **“I have spoken openly to the world. I always taught in synagogues or at the Temple where all the people come**

together. I said nothing in secret. Why question me? Ask those who heard me. They know what I said.”

Jesus is struck on the face by an official

¹⁷When Jesus said these words one of the officials nearby struck him on the face saying, **“Is that how you answer the high priest?”**

¹⁸Jesus replied, **“If I have spoken wrongly testify of the wrong. If I have spoken truthfully why do you strike me?”**



The courtyard of the high priest's palace in Jerusalem.

Peter denies Jesus two more times

¹⁹Now while Peter stood outside warming himself, those who were there with him said to him, **“Are you not also one of his disciples?”**

²⁰He denied it again saying, **“I am not!”**

²¹Then a servant of the high priest, a relative of the man whose ear Peter had cut off challenged him saying, **“Did I not see you with him in the olive grove?”** and again Peter denied it.

The cock crows

²²At that moment a cock began to crow.

17

Very early in the morning Jesus is taken before Pilate

¹Very early in the morning,^{F*} the chief priests and Pharisees led Jesus from Caiaphas the high priest to the palace of the Roman governor Pilate.

²To avoid uncleanness the Jews did not enter, for they wanted to be able to eat the Passover.^{F*}

*1 Before 6am (see verse 29 of this chapter), no doubt to avoid the crowds and opposition from those who believed Jesus to be a prophet. Pilate was probably roused from his bed, explaining the account of his wife's later dream that morning (Matt-Mark-Luke 33:20). Jesus was on the cross less than four hours later, before 10am (Matt-Mark-Luke 34:4).

*2 Entering the house of a Gentile defiled a Jew. The first Passover meal (the Seder) had already been eaten the previous evening, however a second Passover meal, also called the Seder and requiring purification was eaten the following evening. See *'The Jewish Faith'* p210, D. Cohn-Sherbok, SPCK, UK 1993. The feast of the Passover lasted eight days.

*11 John himself.

JOHN 18

³So Pilate came out to them and said, "What charge do you bring against this man?"

⁴They replied, "If he were not a wrongdoer we would not bring him to you."

⁵Pilate said, "Take him yourselves and judge him by your own Law."

⁶But they objected saying, "We have no legal right to execute a man. This man opposes payment of taxes to Caesar and claims to be the Christ, a king."

Pilate questions Jesus privately

⁷Pilate then went back inside the palace and summoned Jesus and said to him, "Are you the king of the Jews?"

⁸Jesus answered, "**Do you ask this of yourself or because others say it to you of me?**"

⁹Pilate replied, "Am I a Jew? It was your own people who handed you over to me. What have you done?"

¹⁰Jesus said, "**My kingdom is not of this world. If it were, my followers would fight to prevent my arrest.**"

¹¹Pilate said, "You are a king then?"

¹²Jesus answered, "**You say that I am a king, and for this I was born. I came into the world to testify of truth. Everyone who is on the side of truth believes in me.**"

Pilate finds Jesus innocent of the charge

¹³Pilate replied, "What is truth?" Then he went out again to the Jews and said, "I find no basis for the charge against this man."

Pilate threatens to release instead Barabbas the murderer

¹⁴"However it is customary for me to release to you one prisoner at the time of the Passover. Do you want me to release 'the King of the Jews' or Barabbas." Now Barabbas was a murderer.

The Jews choose Barabbas

¹⁵They shouted in reply, "Give us Barabbas!"

Pilate has Jesus flogged

¹⁶Then Pilate took Jesus and had him flogged.

The Roman soldiers mock and strike Jesus

¹⁷After the Roman soldiers had flogged Jesus they twisted together a crown of thorns and placed it on his head, and clothing him in a royal purple robe they mocked him again and again saying, "Hail king of the Jews!" and slapped him on the face.

¹⁸Then they returned him to Pilate.

Pilate tries to release Jesus

¹⁹Once more Pilate went out to the Jews and said, "I am bringing him out to you again. I find no basis for the charge against him."

²⁰Jesus was brought out wearing the crown of thorns and the purple robe. Pilate said to them, "Here is the man."

Priests and Pharisees cry out, 'Crucify him!'

²¹But as soon as the chief priests and the

Pharisees saw him they shouted, "Crucify him! Crucify him!"

²²Pilate answered, "You take him and crucify him. As for me I find no basis for the charge against him."

²³The Jews replied, "According to our Law he must die for he claims to be the Son of God."F*

Pilate again questions Jesus privately

²⁴When Pilate heard this his fear increased. He took Jesus back inside the palace and said to him, "Where do you come from?" But Jesus gave him no answer.

²⁵Pilate said, "You refuse to speak to me? Do you not realise that I have power to free you or crucify you?"

²⁶Jesus answered, "**You would have no power over me were it not given you from above. Therefore he who handed me over to you is guilty of a greater sin.**"

Pilate again tries to set Jesus free

²⁷Hearing this Pilate sought to release Jesus, but the Jews kept shouting, "If you free this man you are no friend of Caesar. Anyone who claims to be a king opposes Caesar."

²⁸When Pilate heard this he brought Jesus out and sat down on the judgement seat. ²⁹It was the day of PreparationF* during Passover Week, about the sixth hour.F*

³⁰Pilate said to the Jews, "Here is your king."

³¹They shouted, "Take him away! Crucify him!"

³²Pilate replied, "Shall I crucify your king?"

³³The chief priests answered, "We have no king but Caesar."

Pilate finally hands Jesus over to his soldiers to be crucified

³⁴Finally Pilate gave in to their demands and handed Jesus over to his soldiers to be crucified.

18

Jesus is crucified between two other men

¹The soldiers took Jesus and led him out carrying his own cross to the place of the Skull, which is also called Golgotha.

²There they crucified him along with two other men, one on either side.

Pilate orders a notice for the cross

³Pilate ordered that a notice be written in Aramaic, LatinF* and Greek and be fastened to the cross. It read: '*Jesus of Nazareth, the King of the Jews.*'

⁴Many read the sign, for the place where Jesus was crucified was near to the city.

*23 The Jews would have been correct according to the Law of Moses if Jesus had not been telling the truth (Leviticus 7:12-13).

*29 The Day of Preparation was the Friday before a Sabbath.

*29 About 6am Friday morning Roman time which is measured from midnight. (Jewish time is measured from 6am). John who was writing mainly for Greek Christians under Roman rule used Roman time in his gospel.

*3 Latin was the language of the Romans.

The chief priests protest about the wording of the notice

⁵The chief priests protested to Pilate saying, "Do not write he is 'the King of the Jews' but that he claimed to be 'the King of the Jews.'"

⁶Pilate answered, "What I have written I have written."

The clothes of Jesus divided among the four soldiers

⁷When the soldiers had crucified Jesus they took his clothes and divided them into four shares, one for each of them, with the undergarment remaining. ⁸This garment was seamless, woven in one piece from top to bottom.

⁹They said, "Let us not tear it but decide by lot who will get it." This happened that the scripture might be fulfilled which said, "**They cast lots for my clothing.**"

Jesus requests John to care for his mother

¹⁰Near the cross of Jesus stood his mother and her sister,^{F*} also Mary the wife of Clopas and Mary Magdalene.

¹¹When Jesus saw his mother there and the disciple whom he loved standing nearby, he said to his mother, "**Mother, behold your son,**" and to the disciple, "**Behold your mother.**" ¹²From that time on this disciple took her into his care.

Jesus sips sour wine to fulfil scripture

¹³Later, knowing that all was now completed and in order that the scripture might be fulfilled, Jesus said, "**I thirst.**"

¹⁴A jar of sour wine was there, so they soaked a sponge in it and put it on a hyssop stalk and lifted it to his lips and Jesus received the drink.

Jesus dies

¹⁵Then Jesus cried out, "**It is finished!**" And he bowed his head and gave up his spirit.



Golgotha (the place of the Skull) also known as Calvary, where Jesus died on a cross.

The legs of the other two men are broken

¹⁶Now it was the day of Preparation and the

next day was a High Sabbath.^{F*} ¹⁷Because the Jews did not want bodies left on crosses during the Sabbath, they asked Pilate to have the legs of those who had been crucified broken^{F*} and the bodies taken down.

¹⁸The soldiers therefore broke the legs of the two men who had been crucified with Jesus.

Jesus' side pierced with a spear

¹⁹But when they came to Jesus and saw that he was already dead, they did not break his legs, instead one of the soldiers pierced his side with a spear bringing a sudden flow of blood and water.

²⁰This happened that the scripture, "**Not one of his bones will be broken**" would be fulfilled. ²¹Another scripture says, "**They will look on the one they have pierced.**"

Joseph and Nicodemus take down the body of Jesus and place it in a nearby tomb

²²Later that day Joseph of Arimathea asked Pilate for the body of Jesus. ²³Now Joseph was a disciple of Jesus, but secretly for he feared the Jews.

²⁴Pilate gave him permission and he came and took the body down. ²⁵With him was Nicodemus a ruler of the Jews who earlier had visited Jesus at night.

²⁶Nicodemus brought a mixture of myrrh and aloes and the two of them wrapped the body of Jesus in strips of linen along with the spices, in accordance with Jewish burial customs.

²⁷Near to the place where Jesus was crucified was a garden containing a new tomb in which no one had ever been laid. ²⁸Because it was the Jewish day of Preparation and since the tomb was close by, they laid Jesus there.

19

Early Sunday morning the tomb is found open and empty

¹Very early, on the first day of the week^{F*} while it was still dark, Mary Magdalene and some other women went out to the tomb, but they saw that the stone had been rolled back from the entrance.

Mary Magdalene runs to tell the disciples

²Mary Magdalene came running back and said to Peter and the disciple Jesus loved, "They have taken the Lord out of the tomb and we do not know where they have put him!"

Peter and John run out to the empty tomb, see the burial linen

³So Peter and the other disciple ran out to the tomb. ⁴The other disciple outran Peter and reached the tomb first. He bent over and looked in at the strips of linen lying there.

^{*16} A High Sabbath was a Sabbath that fell on the day or during the week of a Feast, in this case the Passover.

^{*17} The breaking of legs greatly hastened the death of crucifixion victims.

^{*18} Sunday, the day after the Jewish Sabbath.

^{*10} Salome, the mother of the apostles James and John (Matt-Mark-Luke 34:27).

JOHN 20

⁵Then Peter arrived and went into the tomb. He also saw the strips of linen lying there and the burial cloth that had been around the head of Jesus. The cloth was folded up by itself, separate from the linen.

⁶Then the other disciple who had reached the tomb first also went inside. He saw and he believed.

⁷Then the two disciples returned to where they were staying.

Mary Magdalene returns to the tomb and sees two angels inside

⁸But Mary Magdalene remained outside the tomb weeping. As she wept she bent over to look again into the tomb. She saw two angels in white seated where the body of Jesus had been, one at the head and the other at the foot.

⁹They said to her, **“Woman, why do you weep?”**

¹⁰Mary replied, “They have taken my Lord away and I do not know where they have put him.”

Mary Magdalene sees the resurrected Jesus

¹¹Then Mary became aware of a man standing behind her but did not realise that it was Jesus.

¹²He said to her, **“Woman, why are you weeping? Whom are you looking for?”**

¹³Thinking he was the gardener she said, “Sir if you have carried him away tell me where you have put him, that I may go to him.”

¹⁴Jesus said to her, **“Mary.”**

¹⁵Mary Magdalene turned around and then cried out **“Teacher!”**

Jesus sends Mary to his disciples with a message

¹⁶Jesus said, “Do not cling to me for I have not yet returned to the Father. Go instead to my brethren and say to them, **‘I am returning to my Father and your Father, to my God and your God.’**”

¹⁷So Mary ran back to the disciples with the news saying, “I have seen the Lord!” And she told them what Jesus had said to her.



The interior of the tomb in which Jesus was resurrected.

Jesus appears to his disciples inside a locked room that same evening

¹⁸That same evening of the first day of the week, when the disciples were together with the doors locked for fear of the Jews, Jesus

came and stood among them and said, **“Peace be with you.”** ^{F*}

The disciples are filled with joy

¹⁹After he said this Jesus showed them his hands and his side. They were filled with joy when they saw the Lord.

²⁰Again Jesus said, **“Peace be with you. As the Father has sent me, I am sending you.”**

Jesus prepares his disciples to receive the Holy Spirit

²¹Then he blew his breath upon them and said, **“Receive the Holy Spirit.”**

²²**“If you forgive the sins of any they are forgiven. If you do not forgive their sins they are not forgiven.”**

Thomas who was not with them doubts

²³Now Thomas one of the Twelve, was not with them at the time Jesus appeared. When the other disciples said to him, “We have seen the Lord!” he replied, “Unless I put my finger where the nails were and put my hand into his side, I will not believe.”

Thomas sees the risen Jesus a week later

²⁴A week later the disciples were in the house again and Thomas was with them.

²⁵Though the doors were locked Jesus appeared and stood among them and said, **“Peace be with you.”**

²⁶Then he said to Thomas, **“See my hands, put your finger here. Reach out your hand and put it into my side. Doubt not but believe.”**

²⁷Thomas said to him, “My Lord and my God.”

Blessed are those who have not seen yet believed

²⁸Then Jesus said to him, **“Because you have seen me you have believed. Blessed are those who have not seen and yet have believed.”**

Many miracles of Jesus not recorded in this book

²⁹Jesus did many other miracles which are not recorded in this book. But all that is recorded is written that you may believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God and that by believing you may have Eternal Life in his name.

20

Jesus appears on the shore of lake Galilee after seven apostles spend a fruitless night fishing

¹After these things Jesus showed himself again to his disciples by the Lake of Galilee.

²Peter, Thomas, Nathanael, the sons of Zebedee ^{F*}and two other disciples were together and Peter said to them, “I am going fishing.”

³They said, “We will go with you.” So they got into the boat and fished all night, but caught nothing.

^{*18} A standard greeting among the Jews.

^{*2} The apostles James and John.

⁴Early in the morning as they were returning, Jesus stood on the shore of the lake but the disciples did not realise that it was Jesus.

Miracle of large catch of fish

⁵He called out to them, **“Friends, have you any fish?”**

They called back, **“No!”**

⁶Jesus replied, **“Cast your net on the right side of the boat and you will find some.”**

⁷When they did so, they were unable to haul in the net because of the large number of fish.

Peter leaps into the water and wades ashore

⁸Then the disciple whom Jesus loved said to Peter, **“It is the Lord.”**

⁹Peter immediately put his outer garment back on, for he had stripped for work, and leapt into the water.

¹⁰The other disciples followed him in the boat, towing the net full of fish, for they were not far from shore.

Jesus prepares breakfast for his apostles

¹¹When they landed they saw a fire of burning coals with fish on it, and some bread.

¹²Jesus said to them, **“Bring some of the fish you have just caught.”**

¹³Peter dragged the net ashore. It was full of many large fish, 153 of them, but even with so many the net had not torn.

¹⁴Jesus said to them, **“Come and have breakfast.”**

¹⁵None dared ask, **“Who are you?”** for they knew it was the Lord.

¹⁶Jesus took the bread and gave it to them and he did the same with the fish.

¹⁷This was now the third time Jesus had appeared to his disciples after he was raised from the dead.

Peter confirms his love for Jesus three times

¹⁸When they had finished eating, Jesus said to Peter, **“Simon,^{F*} do you truly love me more than these?”**

¹⁹Peter said, **“Yes Lord, you know I love you.”**

²⁰Jesus said, **“Feed my lambs.”**

²¹Again Jesus said, **“Simon, do you truly love me?”**

²²Peter answered, **“Yes Lord, you know that I love you.”**

²³Jesus said, **“Take care of my sheep.”**

²⁴A third time Jesus said to him, **“Simon, do you love me?”**

²⁵Peter was hurt that Jesus asked him a third time.^{F*} He said, **“Lord, you know all things. You know I love you.”**

²⁶Jesus said, **“Feed my sheep.”**

Peter to die by crucifixion

²⁷**“Truly, when you were a young man you dressed yourself and went wherever you wanted. But when you grow old another shall dress you and lead you where you do not want to go, and you will stretch out your hands.”**

²⁸Jesus said this to indicate the kind of death by which Peter would glorify God.^{F*}

²⁹Then Jesus said to him, **“Follow me.”**

John to remain on earth until Jesus returns

³⁰Peter turned and saw the disciple whom Jesus loved, standing behind him. Peter said to Jesus, **“Lord, what about him?”**

³¹Jesus answered, **“If I want him to remain until I return, what is that to you? You must follow me.”**

John must still eventually die

³²Because of these words the rumour spread among the brethren that this disciple would not die. But Jesus did not say that he would not die, he only said, **“If I want him to remain until I return, what is that to you?”^{F*}**

³³This is the disciple who testifies to these things and who wrote them down.

A testimony to the truth of John's gospel

³⁴We know that his (John's) testimony is true. Jesus did many other things as well and if every one of them were written down we suppose that even the whole world would not have room for all the books that could be written.



Fish breakfast on the shore of Lake Galilee

*28 Peter was crucified by the Romans during the reign of the emperor Nero. He is said to have insisted on being crucified upside down, claiming he was unworthy to die as Jesus did.

*32 There is no record of the death or burial of John, and many believe he was translated as was Moses and Elijah, both of whom appeared to Jesus and his three apostles at the time of the transfiguration. To be translated is understood to be a temporary state in which the physical body has its life prolonged so that it is able to appear on earth at will, like an angel, in order to carry out a special mission on earth. However, a translated body must still eventually die in order to attain the higher state of full resurrection, hence John's statement that he must die. All of the other apostles were put to death.

*18 Simon was Peter's original name.

*25 Jesus was probably allowing Peter to atone for denying him three times.

ACTS

The book of Acts (full title 'The Acts of the Apostles') covers the first 30 years of the church of Jesus Christ. Its importance cannot be overstated, the New Testament would be extremely the poorer without it.

The first part of the book gives an account of the heady, early years in Jerusalem following the baptism of the Holy Spirit on the day of Pentecost and provides a fascinating insight into how the early church operated, ie, sharing of possessions, miraculous healings, apostles freed from prison by an angel, the shaking of buildings, etc.

Then comes the inevitable persecution. This commences in earnest with the stoning to death of Stephen. At his death scene we are introduced to Saul, later known as Paul. Saul, aged about 26, energetically steps up the persecution of the young church and imprisons many of the believers. However it is not long before Saul, in a dramatic vision on the road to Damascus is called by Jesus to become a powerful new apostle.

The second half of the book covers Paul's eventful life as a missionary as he takes the gospel to both Jews and Gentiles in other lands. Paul's indefatigable missions have inspired Christian missionaries for centuries.

Acts is an exciting, well written and fast moving book, full of variety and precise, clear detail, especially during the eyewitness accounts of the author Luke who at times was Paul's missionary companion. He was with Paul on the shipwreck which he graphically describes in chapter 24. Luke wrote this book in Rome about 62 AD.

AUTHOR

Luke, a Syrian of Antioch, a physician and missionary companion of Paul.

God did extraordinary miracles through Paul. Even handkerchiefs that had touched his skin were taken to the sick and their illnesses were cured and the unclean spirits left them. Acts 18:19.

CONTENTS

	Chapter		
Introduction by the author Luke	1	Peter and John released	4
Apostles to wait for baptism of the Holy Spirit	1	Believers pray and the building shakes	4
Holy Spirit to give the apostles power	1	All the believers filled with the Spirit	4
Jesus taken up from the Mount of Olives	1	Apostles continue to testify powerfully of Jesus	4
Jesus to one day return again the same way	1	All believers one in heart and mind	5
Apostles wait and pray in Jerusalem	1	Believers share everything they have	5
New apostle to be chosen to replace Judas	1	Ananias lies to the Holy Spirit	5
Matthias chosen by prayer and lot	1	Ananias and his wife die	5
Holy Spirit comes on the day of Pentecost	2	More believers than ever are added to the church	5
Foreign Jews hear apostles speak their languages	2	Peter healed all sick and those with demons	5
Some think the apostles drunk	2	Apostles imprisoned because of jealousy	5
Peter addresses the crowd	2	Apostles freed by an angel during the night	5
Peter testifies of Jesus	2	Sanhedrin assemble for the trial	5
The crowd ask apostles what they should do	2	Prison found empty	5
Peter replies 'Repent and be baptised'	2	Apostles brought before the Sanhedrin	5
3000 Jews baptised that day	2	Peter again testifies of Jesus	5
Many miracles done by apostles	2	Jewish leaders become enraged	5
Believers share everything in common	2	Decide to put the apostles to death	5
Peter heals a man crippled from birth	3	Gamaliel speaks up for the apostles	5
People come running to see the healed man	3	Apostles are flogged then released	5
Peter accuses the Jews of killing Jesus	3	Apostles rejoice at being worthy to suffer	5
The cripple healed by faith in Jesus	3	Care of the Greek Jewish widows neglected	6
Repent and turn to God	3	Seven spirit-filled men to be given the task	6
Jesus the prophet foretold by Moses	3	The Seven called and ordained	6
Peter and John arrested	4	Many Jewish priests join the Church	6
Peter and John brought before the Sanhedrin	4	Stephen one of the Seven does great miracles	6
Peter full of the Holy Spirit testifies of Jesus	4	Stephen arrested and put on trial	6
Sanhedrin astonished at apostles' boldness	4	Stephen's face glows like an angel	6
Apostles forbidden to speak in name of Jesus	4	Stephen relates the history of Israel	6

Abraham's descendants	6	Paul and Barnabas go on to Galatia	12
Israel in Egypt	6	Paul invited to speak in synagogue of Pisidian	12
Birth of Moses	6	Paul relates history of Israel	12
Idolatry in the desert	6	The Saviour Jesus a descendant of David	12
Building of the Temple	6	Paul tells of death and resurrection of Jesus	12
Stephen strongly rebukes Jewish leaders	6	Forgiveness of sins only possible through Jesus	12
Stephen sees Jesus in heaven	6	Paul and Barnabas invited back next week	12
Jesus standing at right hand of the Father	6	Jews jealous of Gentiles who listen to Paul	12
Stephen stoned to death for blasphemy	6	Paul and Barnabas turn to the Gentiles	12
Stephen prays for those who are stoning him	6	Many Gentiles believe	12
A young man Saul approves of Stephen's death	6	Jews stir up the people	12
Saul begins to destroy the church	7	The people drive out Paul and Barnabas	12
Believers scatter but preach wherever they go	7	Jews at Iconium also stir up the people	13
Philip does miracles in Samaria	7	Paul and Barnabas do miracles at Iconium	13
Simon the sorcerer	7	A plan devised to stone Paul and Barnabas	13
Simon astonished at miracles of Philip	7	Man crippled from birth healed in Lystra by Paul	13
Peter and John sent to Samaritans	7	Paul and Barnabas proclaimed gods	13
That Samaritans might receive the Holy Spirit	7	Paul stoned and dragged outside city as dead	13
Simon offers money for power to give Holy Spirit	7	Believers revive Paul	13
Peter rebukes Simon	7	Large number of believers won in Derbe	13
Philip sent to teach an Ethiopian eunuch	7	Former cities revisited and strengthened	13
Philip tells eunuch the good news about Jesus	7	Elders appointed in the churches	13
Philip baptises the eunuch	7	Paul and Barnabas complete their first mission	13
The Spirit carries Philip away	7	Some Jews teach Gentiles must be circumcised	14
Saul goes to Damascus to persecute believers	8	Paul and Barnabas sent to Jerusalem for a ruling	14
Jesus appears to Saul in a bright light on the way	8	Pharisees say Gentiles should obey Law of Moses	14
Saul stricken with blindness	8	Peter says it is by grace of Jesus we are saved	14
Lord appears to Ananias	8	Not by the Law of Moses	14
Ananias visits Saul and heals his blindness	8	James gives his decision	14
Saul begins to preach about Jesus	8	Gentiles to abstain from sexual immorality	14
Saul's life threatened	8	Also to abstain from defiled food and blood	14
Saul escapes and returns to Jerusalem	8	The written decision sent by Judas and Silas	14
Barnabas introduces Saul to the apostles	8	Judas and Silas prophets	14
Greek Jews in Jerusalem try to kill Saul	8	Paul and Barnabas decide on a second mission	14
Saul returns to his home city Tarsus	8	They plan to revisit first mission converts	14
Church in Israel enjoys peace and grows	8	Paul refuses to take Mark	14
Peter heals a paralysed man in Lydda	8	Barnabas takes Mark and Paul takes Silas	14
Peter raises a dead woman in Joppa	8	Paul meets Timothy at Lystra	15
Many people in Joppa believe in Lord	8	Timothy is circumcised and joins Paul	15
Cornelius a God-revering Roman centurion	9	The churches are strengthened and grow	15
Angel in shining clothes appears to Cornelius	9	Holy Spirit guides the missionaries	15
Cornelius told by the angel to send for Peter	9	Paul has a vision to go to Macedonia	15
Peter shown a vision of unclean animals	9	Lydia believes and all her household are baptised	15
God can make the unclean clean	9	Slave girl has spirit of fortune-telling	15
Peter goes to teach Cornelius in Caesarea	9	She follows Paul and Silas testifying about them	15
Cornelius gathers his Gentile relatives and friends	9	Paul casts out the spirit	15
God accepts people from all nations	9	Owners of the slave girl seize Paul and Silas	15
Holy Spirit falls on the Gentiles as Peter speaks	9	Paul and Silas flogged and imprisoned	15
The Gentiles are baptised	9	Prison doors open miraculously	15
Peter tells the Jerusalem brethren what happened	10	Paul stops jailer from taking his own life	15
The gospel spreads wider afield	10	Jailer and his family baptised that night	15
Barnabas sent to Antioch	10	Judges apologise to Paul and Silas	15
Barnabas brings Saul to Antioch to assist him	10	Paul and Silas leave for Thessalonica	15
Agabus prophesies a famine	10	Paul and Silas try to reason with the Jews	16
Believers at Antioch assist those in Judea	10	Jealous Jews form a mob and start a riot	16
King Herod kills the apostle James	11	Jason and other believers dragged before officials	16
Peter imprisoned by Herod	11	Paul and Silas escape	16
Peter freed from prison by an angel	11	Many Jews and Greeks at Berea believe	16
Peter goes to the house of the mother of Mark	11	Thessalonian Jews come and stir up the people	16
Believers astonished to see Peter	11	Paul taken to Athens for safety	16
Uproar among prison guards	11	Paul dismayed to see Athens full of idols	16
King Herod dies because of pride	11	Philosophers take Paul to speak to the Areopagus	16
Barnabas and Saul called on a mission	12	Paul speaks of the unknown God	16
Barnabas and Saul go to Cyprus	12	God does not live in man-made Temples	16
Opposition from Elymas the sorcerer	12	God hopes that men will seek him	16
Elymas struck blind	12	We are the offspring of God	16
Governor of Cyprus believes	12	Repent for God will judge the world by Jesus	16
Mark returns to Jerusalem	12	Some philosophers scoff at resurrection	16

ACTS

A few philosophers believe	16	Paul struck on the mouth by order of high priest	21
Paul leaves Athens and goes to Corinth	17	Paul divides the Sanhedrin	21
Paul works for a time at his trade of tent maker.....	17	Paul taken back into barracks	21
Silas and Timothy rejoin Paul	17	Lord appears to Paul	21
Jews again oppose Paul and he rejects them	17	Lord tells Paul he must testify in Rome	21
Lord appears to Paul and encourages him	17	Forty Jews take an oath to kill Paul	21
Jews charge Paul before the Roman governor.....	17	Paul's nephew informs him of plot	21
Governor rejects the charge	17	Commander decides to send Paul to Caesarea	21
Jews beat their own synagogue ruler	17	Commander's letter to Felix	21
Paul ends his second mission	17	Paul sent off to Caesarea that night	21
Paul shaves his head because of a vow	17	Jewish leaders travel down to Caesarea	22
Paul tells the Jews at Ephesus he hopes to return ..	17	Jewish leaders bring charges against Paul	22
Paul visits Jerusalem then returns to Antioch	17	Tertullus the lawyer praises Felix	22
Paul departs on his third mission	18	Paul accused of riots and desecrating the Temple ..	22
Apollos teaches at Ephesus	18	Paul denies charges	22
Way of God explained more fully to Apollos	18	Paul speaks of his beliefs	22
Apollos leaves Ephesus	18	Felix adjourns hearing without a decision	22
Apollos a powerful speaker	18	Paul kept under guard but given some freedom	22
Paul arrives in Ephesus	18	Felix and his Jewish wife hear Paul.....	22
Finds believers who have not heard of Holy Spirit ..	18	Paul speaks about his faith in Jesus Christ	22
Paul rebaptises the believers	18	Felix hopes Paul will bribe him for his release	22
The believers speak in tongues and prophesy	18	Felix succeeded as governor by Festus	22
Paul tries to persuade the Jews in Ephesus	18	Festus urged by Jews to return Paul to Jerusalem	23
Paul teaches daily for two years in a lecture hall	18	Jews plan to kill Paul	23
Great miracles done through Paul	18	Festus convenes a court in Caesarea	23
Jewish exorcists try to use name of Jesus	18	Jews unable to prove charges against Paul	23
Seven sons of Sceva violently attacked by demon ..	18	Paul appeals to Caesar	23
Valuable sorcery scrolls burned	18	King Agrippa and Bernice ask to hear Paul	23
Paul plans to return to Jerusalem then visit Rome ..	18	Hearing convened with great pomp	23
A maker of silver shrines creates a disturbance	18	Paul begins his defence	23
Whole city of Ephesus in an uproar	18	Paul speaks of his earlier persecution of church	23
The city scribe finally quietens crowd	18	Testifies of his vision on road to Damascus	23
Paul ends his third mission	18	Festus calls Paul mad	23
Paul sets out for Jerusalem	19	Agrippa surprised at Paul's haste to convert him	23
Stops at Macedonia on the way	19	Paul not deserving of imprisonment	23
Paul and his companions stay a week at Troas	19	Paul taken on ship for Rome	24
Boy falls from a third story window and dies	19	Difficult sailing conditions	24
Paul restores boy to life	19	Paul prophesies disaster if they continue sailing	24
Paul farewells Ephesian leaders at Miletus	19	Ship attempts to sail on to Phoenix	24
Ephesian leaders will not see Paul there again	19	Hurricane-force wind drives ship out to sea	24
Prophetic warning against false teachers	19	The storm continues for many days	24
More blessed to give than to receive	19	An angel visits Paul	24
All weep as they embrace and farewell Paul	19	Paul assured of safety of all on the ship	24
Paul stops a week at Tyre	20	The sailors sense land near by	24
Farewells on beach	20	The sailors plan to escape in the lifeboat	24
Paul stays with Philip at Caesarea	20	Soldiers cut the lifeboat free and let it go	24
Agabus prophesies Paul's imprisonment	20	Paul prophesies that no life will be lost	24
Paul prepared to die for Lord Jesus	20	276 people on board the ship	24
Paul and his companions arrive in Jerusalem	20	The sailors try to run ship aground on a beach	24
They report to James the presiding elder	20	Ship strikes a sandbar and begins to break up	24
Paul warned of ill feelings toward him	20	Prisoners lives spared	24
Paul advised to be seen obeying Law of Moses	20	All reach land safely	24
Paul seized by visiting Jews from Asia	20	Land is island of Malta	25
All Jerusalem aroused	20	Paul bitten by viper driven out of a fire on beach	25
Roman commander rescues Paul from death	20	Islanders awed when Paul unaffected by poison	25
Paul arrested and bound with chains	20	Publius the chief man of the island cares for Paul ..	25
Commander tries to obtain the truth	20	All sick on the island healed by Paul	25
Paul speaks to the crowd	20	Islanders honour Paul and his companions	25
Paul tells of his vision on the road to Damascus	20	Paul arrives in Rome	25
Lord appeared to him in Jerusalem	20	Paul allowed to live with one soldier to guard him ..	25
Jews angered when Paul mentions the Gentiles	20	Paul speaks with the Jewish leaders in Rome	25
Commander orders that Paul be flogged	20	Jewish leaders want to hear more	25
Paul informs commander he is a Roman citizen	20	Paul teaches large number of Jews about Jesus	25
Commander becomes alarmed, Paul not flogged	20	Some believe but most do not	25
Paul taken before the Sanhedrin	21	Paul stayed in Rome two years	25

Bold The Lord or an angel speaking.
Bold italics A prophet speaking under inspiration.

1

Introduction by the author Luke

¹In my first book Theophilus,^{F*} I wrote of all that Jesus did, until the day he was taken up into heaven after giving instructions to the apostles he had chosen.

Jesus tells his apostles to wait for the baptism of the Holy Spirit

²After his death he showed himself to these men over a period of forty days and gave many convincing proofs that he was alive. ³While eating with them in Jerusalem^{F*} he said, “**Do not leave Jerusalem but remain and await the gift my Father has promised. John baptised with water but in a few days you will be baptised with the Holy Spirit.**”

The Holy Spirit to give the apostles power

⁴They said to him, “Lord are you going to restore the kingdom to Israel at this time?”

⁵Jesus answered, “**It is not for you to know the times the Father has set. You will receive power when the Holy Spirit comes upon you and will be my witnesses in Jerusalem and in all Judea and Samaria, and to the ends of the earth.**”

Jesus taken up from the Mount of Olives

⁶After Jesus said this he was taken up from the Mount of Olives a short distance from Jerusalem before their very eyes, and a cloud hid him from sight.



The Mount of Olives from which Jesus was taken up into heaven and to where he will return at his second coming (Zechariah 5:18). Jerusalem is in the foreground.

Jesus to one day return again the same way he went

⁷The apostles were still gazing intently into the sky when two angels dressed in white suddenly stood beside them. ⁸They said, “**Men**

*1 Luke's gospel was also addressed to Theophilus.

*3 This appearance would have had to take place after the visit of Jesus to his apostles on the shore of Lake Galilee (Matt-Mark-Luke 35:18 and John chapter 20). The apostles must have returned again to Jerusalem from Galilee, probably to attend the Feast of Pentecost or Feast of Harvest as it is known in the Old Testament which all Jewish males were commanded to attend (Exodus 12:43-45 and Acts 19:11).

of Galilee why do you stand here looking up into the sky? This same Jesus who has been taken from you into heaven will return again in the same way in which you have seen him go.”^{F*}

The apostles and believers wait and pray in Jerusalem

⁹Then the apostles went back into Jerusalem, to the upper room where they were staying.

¹⁰They were Peter, James, John, Andrew, Philip, Thomas, Matthew, Nathanael, James (son of Alphaeus), Simon and Thaddeus.

¹¹They devoted themselves to prayer together with the women, including Mary the mother of Jesus and with his brothers. ^{F*}

A new apostle to be chosen to replace Judas

¹²In those days Peter stood up among the brethren (a group numbering about 120) and said, “Brethren, the scripture had to be fulfilled which the Holy Spirit spoke long ago through the mouth of David in the book of Psalms concerning Judas saying, ‘**May another take his place of leadership.**’ He was one of our number but he betrayed Jesus.”

¹³(Now the money Judas got for his wickedness was used to buy the field where he fell headlong and his body burst open and his intestines spilled out.^{F*} It is now called the Field of Blood.)

¹⁴“Therefore it is necessary to choose another, who has been with us the whole time the Lord Jesus was among us, to be a witness with us of his resurrection.”

Matthias chosen by prayer and lot

¹⁵So they put forward the names of two men, Joseph and Matthias then they prayed saying, “O Lord you who know the hearts of all men, show us which of these two you have chosen to take over the apostleship which Judas turned aside from to go where he belongs.”

¹⁶Then they cast lots and the lot fell to Matthias, so he was added to the eleven apostles.

2

The Holy Spirit comes on the day of Pentecost

¹When the day of Pentecost had come^{F*} they were all together in one place when suddenly there came a sound like the rush of a strong wind and it filled the whole house where they were sitting.

*8 Jesus is to return again to the Mount of Olives at his second coming (Zechariah 5:18).

*11 Although the four brothers of Jesus (Matt-Mark-Luke 14:49) did not believe in him while he was alive (John 7:4) at least two of them, James and Jude did after his resurrection. James (not the apostle James) became the presiding church leader or bishop in Jerusalem (Acts 14:11).

*13 Traditionally Judas hung himself on a tree, but the branch or rope broke and he fell heavily down into the valley of Hinnom causing his stomach to burst open.

*1 Pentecost (meaning fifty) was the Greek name for the Feast of the Harvest and came 50 days after Passover (Exodus 12:45) in this case on a Sunday.

ACTS 3

²And there appeared what looked to them like tongues of fire that separated to rest on each of them. And they were all filled with the Holy Spirit and began to speak in other languages as the Spirit enabled them.

Jews from other nations hear the apostles speak their own languages

³Now staying in Jerusalem were devout Jews from every nation under heaven, and at the sound a large crowd gathered. But the Jews were bewildered for each one heard these men speaking in his own language.

⁴They said to one another in amazement, "Are not all these men who speak Galileans? How is it then that each one of us hears them in his own native language, Parthians, Medes, Mesopotamians, Asians, Egyptians, Libyans, Romans, Cretans and Arabians?" ⁵Both Jews and converts to Judaism, we hear them declaring the wonders of God in our own tongue. What does this mean?" ^{F*}

Some think the apostles are drunk

⁶However some mocked saying, "These men have had too much new wine."

Peter addresses the crowd

⁷Then Peter, standing with the other eleven apostles addressed the crowd saying, "Fellow Jews, hear what I have to say. These men are not drunk as it is only the third hour.^{F*} ⁸No, this is what was spoken of through the prophet Joel, 'And it shall come to pass in the last days that I will pour out my Spirit upon all mankind. Your sons and daughters will prophesy, your old men will dream dreams and your young men will see visions.'

Peter testifies of Jesus

⁹"Men of Israel, Jesus of Nazareth was a man sent from God to you, and proved himself by the miracles which God did through him as you yourselves know. Yet he was handed over to you and with God's foreknowledge and the help of lawless men, you put him to death by nailing him to a cross."

¹⁰"But God has raised him from the dead and we are his witnesses. He is exalted at the right hand of God and has received from the Father the promised Holy Spirit and has poured out upon us what you now see and hear."

The crowd ask the apostles what they should do

¹¹When the crowd heard this they were cut to the heart. Then they said to Peter and the other apostles, "Brethren what shall we do?"

Peter replies, 'Repent and be baptised'

¹²Peter replied, "Repent and be baptised in the name of Jesus Christ, every one of you for

the forgiveness of your sins and you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit."

¹³"The promise is for you and your children and for all who are far off, all whom the Lord our God will call."

¹⁴And with many other words Peter warned them and pleaded with them saying, "Save yourselves from this corrupt generation."

3000 Jews baptised that day

¹⁵Those who accepted the message were baptised and about 3000 were added to the church that day.

¹⁶They devoted themselves to the teaching of the apostles and to fellowship and to the breaking of bread and prayer.

Many miracles done by the apostles

¹⁷Many miracles were done by the apostles and everyone was filled with awe.

All the believers are one and share everything in common

¹⁸All the believers were one, and shared everything in common, selling their possessions and giving to one another as each had need.

¹⁹Every day they continued to meet together in the Temple courtyards. And they broke bread together in their homes, eating with glad and sincere hearts, praising God and enjoying the favour of the people. ²⁰And the Lord added to their number daily.

3

Peter heals a man crippled from birth

¹Now when Peter and John were going up to the Temple at the ninth hour,^{F*} the time of prayer, a man crippled from birth was being carried to the Temple gate called Beautiful.

²He sat there every day to beg and seeing Peter and John he asked them for money. They looked intently at the man and then Peter said to him, "Look at us."

³The man did so, expecting to receive something but Peter said, "**Silver or gold I have not, but what I do have I give you. In the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, walk.**"

⁴And taking him by the right hand he helped him up. Immediately the man's feet and ankles became strong and he leapt to his feet and began to walk. Then he went with them into the Temple courtyard, walking and leaping and praising God.

The people come running to see the healed man

⁵All the people saw him and recognised him as the cripple who every day sat begging at the Temple gate. They were astonished at the miracle. ⁶As the beggar clung to Peter and John in Solomon's Porch all the people came running toward them.

Peter accuses the Jews of killing Jesus

⁷Peter said to the people, "Men of Israel, why

*5 Paul said with regard to this gift of the Holy Spirit of speaking in tongues in public that its main purpose was as a 'sign for unbelievers' (1 Corinthians 7:38). Its effectiveness is well demonstrated on this day of Pentecost when 3000 accepted Peter's message and were baptised.

*7 About 9 am. Jews normally fasted on festival days until after the morning synagogue service which usually began at 9 am.

*1 About 3 pm.

do you stare at us, as if by our own power or godliness we made this man walk?"

⁸"The God of our fathers glorified his son Jesus, yet you handed him over to be killed, and disowned him before Pilate, though he desired to free him."

⁹"You disowned the Holy One and preferred that a murderer be released to you. You killed the giver of Eternal Life. ¹⁰But God has raised him from the dead and we are witnesses of this."

The cripple healed by faith in Jesus

¹¹"And this man, whom you see and know has been completely healed by faith in the name of Jesus."

¹²"Now brethren I know that you acted in ignorance as did your leaders, for this was how God fulfilled what the prophets foretold, that his Christ would suffer."

Repent and turn to God

¹³"Repent then, and turn to God so that your sins may be wiped out, for a day of renewal is coming from God as promised long ago through his holy prophets."

¹⁴"He will again send the Christ, even Jesus who must remain in heaven until that day when God will restore all things."

Jesus is the prophet foretold by Moses

¹⁵"For Moses said to our fathers, *'Jehovah your God will raise up for you a prophet like me from among your own people. You must heed everything he tells you.* ¹⁶*Anyone who does not heed him, I myself will hold accountable.*"

¹⁷"Indeed all the prophets from Samuel onward have foretold these days."

4

Peter and John arrested

¹Then the priests and Sadducees^{F*} came with the captain of the Temple guard. They were greatly annoyed that Peter and John were proclaiming to the people that Jesus had been resurrected from the dead.

²They arrested Peter and John and imprisoned them. But many who had heard them believed and the number of men who were now believers grew to about 5000.

Peter and John brought before the Sanhedrin

³The next day the Sanhedrin^{F*} met and Peter and John were brought before them. They said to the apostles, "By what power or name was this man healed?"

Peter full of the Holy Spirit testifies of Jesus

⁴Peter, filled with the Holy Spirit said to them, "Rulers and elders of the people, it was by the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth whom you crucified, but whom God raised from the dead,

that this cripple was healed."

⁵"This Jesus is *'The stone you builders rejected which has become the capstone.'*"^{F*}

⁶"Salvation is found in no one else for there is no other name given by which we can be saved."

The Sanhedrin are astonished at the boldness of Peter and John

⁷When the chief priests and elders heard the boldness of Peter and John, and knowing they were uneducated ordinary men, they were astonished. But since they could see the man who had been healed standing there, there was nothing they could say.

⁸They ordered Peter and John to withdraw from the room then they counselled together saying, "What are we to do with these men? All Jerusalem know they have done a great miracle. We cannot deny it. ⁹But to stop this thing from spreading further we must order these men to speak no longer in this name."

Apostles forbidden to speak any more in name of Jesus

¹⁰So they called Peter and John back in again and ordered them not to speak or teach any more in the name of Jesus.

¹¹But they replied, "Judge for yourselves whether it is right in God's eyes to obey you rather than God. We must speak of what we have seen and heard."

Peter and John released

¹²However after further threats they let them go for they could find no way to punish them. All the people were praising God because of what had happened. ¹³The man who had been healed was over forty years of age.

The believers pray and the building shakes and they are all filled with the Spirit

¹⁴After they were released, Peter and John returned to the believers and reported all that the chief priests and elders had said to them.

¹⁵When the believers heard, they raised their voices to God and prayed, "O Lord Almighty, hear their threats yet continue to allow your servants to speak your word with boldness. Stretch out your hand to perform miracles through the name of your holy son Jesus."

¹⁶After they had prayed, the building in which they were gathered was shaken and they were all filled with the Holy Spirit and spoke the word of God boldly.

The apostles continue to testify powerfully of Jesus

¹⁷With great power and graciousness the apostles continued to testify of the resurrection of the Lord Jesus.

5

All the believers one in heart and mind and share everything they have

¹All the believers were one in heart and mind,

*1 The Sadducees were a priestly religious group, predominantly of the wealthy ruling class.

*3 The Sanhedrin was a Jewish governing body of seventy elders, presided over by the high priest.

*5 This prophecy Peter quoted is found in Psalms 95:1.

ACTS 5

and no one claimed his possessions as his own but all shared everything they had.

²There were no needy among them, for from time to time those who owned lands or houses sold them and brought the money from the sale and laid it at the apostles' feet and it was distributed to anyone who had need.

Ananias lies to the Holy Spirit

³Barnabas sold a field he owned and laid the money at the apostles' feet. ⁴And a man named Ananias together with his wife Sapphira also sold some land. But with his wife's knowledge Ananias secretly kept back part of the money for himself. He brought the rest and laid it at the apostles' feet.

⁵Peter said to him, ***"Ananias, how is it that Satan has so filled your heart that you have lied to the Holy Spirit and have kept for yourself some of the money you received for the land?"***

⁶***"Did it not belong to you before it was sold? And after it was sold was not the money at your disposal? Why then did you lie? You have not lied to man but to God."***

Ananias and his wife die

⁷When Ananias heard these words he fell down and died. And great fear came on all who heard what happened. ⁸Then the young men wrapped up his body and carried him out and buried him.

⁹About three hours later his wife came in not knowing what had happened. Peter said to her, "Is this the full price you and Ananias got for the land?"

She replied, "Yes that is the full price."

¹⁰Peter said to her, ***"How could you have agreed together to put the Spirit of the Lord to the test? The feet of the young men who buried your husband are at the door. They will carry you out also."***

¹¹At these words she also fell down at Peter's feet and died. Then the young men came in and carried her out and buried her beside her husband.

More believers than ever added to the church

¹²Many miracles were done among the people by the apostles, and all the believers would meet together in Solomon's Porch.^{F*}

¹³The rulers dared not join them but they were highly regarded by the people of Jerusalem. And more men and women than ever believed and great numbers were added to the Lord.

All the sick and those tormented by demons healed by Peter

¹⁴They would carry their sick into the streets on beds and mats so that at least Peter's shadow might fall on some of them as he passed by.

¹⁵A great many also came from towns around

Jerusalem bringing the sick and those tormented by demons, and all were healed.

The apostles are imprisoned by the Sadducees because of jealousy

¹⁶Soon the high priest and all those with him who were of the sect of the Sadducees were filled with jealousy. So they arrested the apostles and put them in prison.

The apostles freed by an angel during the night

¹⁷But during the night an angel opened the doors of the prison and brought the apostles out saying, ***"Go into the Temple courtyards and teach the people the full message of Eternal Life."***

¹⁸At daybreak the apostles entered the courtyards of the Temple as they had been told and began to teach the people.



Solomon's Porch is recreated in this model of Herod's Temple.

The Sanhedrin assemble for the trial but find the prison empty

¹⁹Meanwhile the Sanhedrin assembled and sent to the prison for the apostles. But the officers returned and reported, "We found the prison locked and the guards at the doors but when we opened them we found no one inside."

²⁰Then someone came in and announced, "The men you imprisoned are in the Temple courtyards teaching the people."

The apostles brought before the Sanhedrin

²¹The captain of the Temple guard immediately took his men and brought in the apostles, but not with force for they feared the people would stone them.

²²They had the apostles stand before the Sanhedrin to be questioned by the high priest. He said to them, "Did we not give you strict orders not to teach in this name? Yet you have filled Jerusalem with your teaching. ²³You are determined to make us guilty of this man's blood."

Peter again testifies of Jesus

²⁴But Peter and the apostles replied, "We must obey God rather than men. ²⁵The God of our forefathers raised Jesus from the dead whom you put to death on a tree. He has exalted him to his own right hand as Prince and Saviour that he might give repentance and

*12 Solomon's Porch was an impressive cedar-lined walkway along the eastern wall of the outer temple courtyard with the roof supported by rows of stone columns nine metres high.

forgiveness of sins to Israel.”

²⁶We are witnesses of these things and so is the Holy Spirit whom God has given to those who obey him.”

The Jewish leaders become enraged and want to put the apostles to death

²⁷When the Sanhedrin heard this they were enraged and decided to put the apostles to death.

Gamaliel speaks up for the apostles

²⁸But a Pharisee named Gamaliel, a teacher of the Law who was honoured by all the people stood up in the Sanhedrin and asked that the apostles be put outside for a while.

²⁹Then he said, “Men of Israel, consider carefully what you intend doing to these men. Some time ago Theudas appeared, claiming to be someone of importance and about 400 men gathered to him. ³⁰He was slain and his followers dispersed and it all came to nothing.”

³¹“After him, Judas of Galilee appeared and drew away some of the people after him. He too perished and his followers scattered.”

³²“Therefore in this present case I advise you to leave these men alone. If their purpose is of human origin it will fail. But if it is from God you will be unable to stop them. You may even find yourselves fighting against God.”

The apostles are flogged then released

³³His speech persuaded them against putting the apostles to death, however they called the apostles back in and had them flogged. Then they again ordered them not to speak in the name of Jesus and let them go.

The apostles rejoice at being worthy to suffer

³⁴The apostles left the Sanhedrin rejoicing that they had been counted worthy of suffering disgrace for the name of Jesus.

³⁵And day after day in the Temple courtyards, and from house to house they never stopped teaching and proclaiming the good news that Jesus is the Christ.

6

Widows of the Greek Jews neglected

¹In those days when the believers were increasing rapidly, the Greek Jews complained that their widows were being neglected in the daily distribution of food.

The task of looking after the widows to be given to seven Spirit-filled men

²So the Twelve gathered the church together and said to them, “It is not right for us to neglect the ministry of the word of God in order to wait on tables.”

³“Therefore brethren, choose seven men from among you who are known to be full of the Spirit and of wisdom and we will turn this task over to them. ⁴Then we will be able to give our full attention to prayer and the ministry of the word.”

The Seven called and ordained

⁵This proposal pleased the church, so they chose Stephen a man full of faith and of the Holy Spirit, and also Philip, Procorus, Nicanor, Timon, Parmenas and Nicolas, a convert to Judaism. ⁶They presented these men to the apostles who prayed and laid their hands upon them.

Many Jewish priests join the Church

⁷So the word of God spread and the number of believers in Jerusalem increased rapidly. A great number of priests also became obedient to the faith.

Stephen one of the Seven does great miracles

⁸Now Stephen, one of the Seven was a man full of God’s grace and power and he did great miracles among the people.

Stephen arrested and put on trial

⁹However opposition arose from members of the synagogue of Freedmen (as it was called). These men, who were Jews from other nations began to dispute with Stephen, but they could not prevail against his wisdom or the Spirit by which he spoke.

¹⁰So they stirred up the elders and teachers of the Law who arrested Stephen and brought him before the Sanhedrin.

¹¹False witnesses there testified against him saying, “This man never ceases to blaspheme. He says that Jesus of Nazareth is to destroy Jerusalem and change the customs that Moses handed down to us.”

¹²The high priest said to Stephen, “Are these things so?”

Stephen’s face glows like an angel

¹³Then all who sat in the Sanhedrin saw the face of Stephen glowing, like the face of an angel.

Stephen relates the history of Israel

¹⁴Stephen replied, “Brethren and fathers, hear me. The God of glory appeared to our father Abraham and said, ‘**Leave your country and people and go to the land I will show you.**’ And God sent him to Canaan to this land where we are now living.”

¹⁵“He gave Abraham no inheritance at that time but promised him that he and his descendants would possess the land, even though at that time Abraham was childless.”

Abraham’s descendants

¹⁶“God said to him, ‘**Your descendants will be strangers in Egypt and shall be enslaved and mistreated 400 years. But I will punish Egypt and they shall come out of that land and worship me in this place.**’ ¹⁷Then he gave Abraham the covenant of circumcision.”

¹⁹“Abraham became the father of Isaac. Isaac became the father of Jacob* who became the father of the twelve patriarchs.”

Israel in Egypt

¹⁸“Because the patriarchs were jealous of

*17 Jacob was also later known as Israel.

ACTS 6

their brother Joseph they sold him as a slave into Egypt. But God was with him and gave him wisdom and made him vizier over all Egypt and Pharaoh's palace."

²⁰"Then a famine struck both Egypt and Canaan and our fathers could not find food. ²¹When Jacob heard there was grain in Egypt he sent our fathers on their first visit. ²²On their second visit Joseph told his brothers who he was and Pharaoh learned of Joseph's family."

²³"After this Joseph sent for his father Jacob, and his whole household seventy-five in all went down to live in Egypt where he and our fathers died."

²⁴"As the time drew near for God to fulfil his promise to Abraham the number of our people in Egypt greatly increased.

²⁵Then another king who knew not Joseph became ruler of Egypt. He dealt treacherously with our people and oppressed them by forcing them to abandon their new born infants to die."

Birth of Moses

²⁶"At that time Moses was born. When he was exposed to the elements Pharaoh's daughter took him and raised him as her own son."

²⁷"Moses was educated in all the wisdom of Egypt and was powerful in word and deed. ²⁸When he was forty years old he saw one of his fellow Israelites being mistreated by an Egyptian and he killed the Egyptian. ²⁹Then Moses fled to Midian where he settled as a foreigner and had two sons."

³⁰"Forty years passed by, then an angel of Jehovah appeared to Moses in a flame of fire in a bush in the desert near Mount Sinai."

³¹"When Moses went to look more closely he heard the voice of Jehovah say to him, **'I have heard the groaning of my people in Egypt and have come down to set them free. I shall send you back to Egypt.'**

³²"Moses was sent to be their deliverer by God himself, through the angel who appeared in the bush."^{F*}

³³"Moses led them out of Egypt, doing wonders and miracles in Egypt and at the sea and for forty years in the desert."

³⁴"This is the Moses who said to the Israelites, **'God will raise up for you a prophet like me from your own people.'**

³⁵"But our fathers refused to obey Moses. They rejected him and in their hearts turned back to Egypt. ³⁶They said to Aaron, 'Make us a god who will go before us. As for this Moses who led us out of Egypt, we know not what has happened to him.'

Idolatry in the desert

³⁷"They made an idol in the form of a calf and held a celebration in honour of what their hands had made."

³⁸"So God turned away from them, and as is written in the book of the Prophets he said, **'Did you bring me sacrifices and offerings when you wandered forty years in the desert O Israel? ³⁹Because you have lifted up idols you made to worship I will send you into exile beyond Damascus.'**

The building of the Temple

⁴⁰"Having received the Tabernacle, our forefathers under the leadership of Joshua brought it with them when they took this land from the nations God drove out before them."

⁴¹"It remained in the land until the time of David who enjoyed God's favour and asked that he might build a house for God. But it was Solomon who built the Temple."

⁴²"However the Most High does not live in Temples made by men. As the Lord through the prophet says, **'Heaven is my throne and the earth is my footstool. Did not my hand make all these things?'**

Stephen strongly rebukes the Jewish leaders

⁴³"You stiff-necked men, uncircumcised in heart and ears, you are just like your fathers! You always resist the Holy Spirit!"

⁴⁴"Was there ever a prophet your fathers did not persecute? ⁴⁵They even killed those who foretold the coming of the Righteous One, and now you have betrayed and murdered him."

⁴⁶"You have received the Law but have not kept it."

Stephen sees Jesus in heaven standing at the right hand of the Father

⁴⁷"When the Sanhedrin heard these words they were enraged and ground their teeth.

⁴⁸But Stephen, full of the Holy Spirit looked up to heaven and saw a vision of the glory of God and Jesus standing at his right hand.

⁴⁹He cried out, **"I see the heavens open and the Son of Man standing at the right hand of God."**

The Jewish leaders stone Stephen to death for blasphemy

⁵⁰At this they covered their ears^{F*} and shouting at the top of their voices rushed at Stephen and dragged him out of the city and began to stone him.

Stephen prays for those who are stoning him

⁵¹While they were stoning him Stephen prayed saying, "Lord Jesus receive my spirit."

⁵²Then he fell to his knees and cried out, "Lord do not hold this sin against them." When he had said this he died.

A young man Saul approves of Stephen's death

⁵³The witnesses laid their clothes at the feet of a young man named Saul who gave his approval to the death of Stephen.

*32 Other scriptures reveal that the angel who appeared in the burning bush and who afterward spoke face to face with Moses as Jehovah, was the pre-mortal Jesus Christ speaking in the name of God the Father (for further details see note on John 1:8).

*50 They covered their ears in order not to hear what they considered to be blasphemy, the most serious charge of all in the Jewish courts.



St Stephen Gate at Jerusalem, near the spot where Stephen was stoned.

7

Saul begins to destroy the church

¹Godly men buried Stephen and mourned deeply for him. And on that day great persecution broke out against the believers at Jerusalem. ²Saul began to destroy the church. Going from house to house he dragged off both men and women and cast them into prison.

The believers scattered but preach the word wherever they go

³All the believers except the apostles were scattered throughout Judea and Samaria. ⁴However, those who were scattered preached the word wherever they went.

Philip does miracles in Samaria

⁵Philip, one of the Seven went to a city in Samaria and proclaimed the Christ there.

⁶When the crowds heard the words of Philip and saw the miracles he did, they heeded his teaching.

⁷With shrieks, demons came out of many and others who were paralysed or crippled were healed, so there was great joy in that city.

Simon the sorcerer

⁸Now for some time a man named Simon had practiced sorcery in that city and had amazed all the people of Samaria. ⁹He boasted he was somebody great and the people believed he had power from God.

Simon is astonished at the miracles of Philip

¹⁰But when Philip preached the good news of the kingdom of God and the name of Jesus Christ, the people were baptised, both men and women and Simon himself also believed and was baptised.

¹¹Afterward Simon followed Philip everywhere, astonished at the miracles he saw.

Peter and John sent that the Samaritans might receive the Holy Spirit

¹²When the apostles in Jerusalem heard that Samaria had accepted the word of God, they sent Peter and John to them.

¹³When Peter and John arrived they prayed that the people might receive the Holy Spirit, for as yet the Holy Spirit had not come upon any of them. ¹⁴Then they laid their hands on those who had been baptised and they received the Holy Spirit.

Simon offers money to apostles for power to give the Holy Spirit

¹⁵When Simon saw that the Spirit was given by the laying on of the apostles' hands he offered them money saying, "Give me this power also, that all upon whom I lay my hands will receive the Holy Spirit."

Peter rebukes Simon

¹⁶But Peter said to him, "May your money perish with you for thinking you could buy the gift of God."

¹⁷You have no part in this ministry for your heart is not right before God. ¹⁸Therefore repent of this wickedness and pray to the Lord. Perhaps he will forgive you for having such a thought in your heart, for I see that you are full of jealousy and still captive to sin."

¹⁹Simon said, "Pray to the Lord that none of what you have said will happen to me."

²⁰Peter and John then returned to Jerusalem preaching the gospel along the way in many other Samaritan towns.

Philip sent by angel to teach an Ethiopian eunuch

²¹Now an angel of the Lord said to Philip, "**Go south to the road leading to Gaza.**"

²²Philip did so and saw an Ethiopian eunuch, an important official in charge of the treasury of Candace queen of the Ethiopians. ²³This man had been to Jerusalem to worship and was on his way home. He was sitting in his chariot reading from the book of Isaiah the prophet.

²⁴The Spirit said to Philip, "**Go up to the chariot.**"

²⁵Philip ran up to the chariot and heard the man reading Isaiah the prophet. So he said to him, "Do you understand what you are reading?"

²⁶The eunuch replied, "How can I unless someone explain it to me?" And he invited Philip to come up and sit with him.

²⁷The eunuch was reading this passage of scripture, "**He shall be oppressed and afflicted yet not open his mouth. He will go like a lamb to the slaughter. ²⁸After arrest and judgement he shall be led away and no one will speak of his descendants, for he shall be cut off from the land of the living.**"

Philip tells the eunuch the good news about Jesus

²⁹The eunuch said to Philip, "Who is the prophet speaking about, himself or someone else?"

³⁰Then Philip beginning with that passage of scripture told him the good news about Jesus.

Philip baptises the eunuch

³¹As they travelled along they came to some

ACTS 8

water. The eunuch said, "Look, here is water. What is to prevent me from being baptised?"

³²So he gave orders to stop the chariot. Then both the eunuch and Philip went down into the water and Philip baptised him.

The Spirit carries Philip away

³³When they came up out of the water the Spirit of the Lord suddenly carried Philip away and the eunuch did not see him again, but he went on his way rejoicing.

³⁴Philip reappeared at Azotus^{F*} and travelled about the coast, preaching the gospel in all the towns round about until he reached Caesarea.

8

Saul departs for Damascus to persecute believers there

¹Meanwhile Saul was still breathing out murderous threats against the believers of the Lord.

²He went to the high priest and obtained letters to the synagogues in Damascus so that if he found any there who belonged to the Way,^{F*} whether men or women he might bring them back as prisoners to Jerusalem.

Jesus appears to Saul in a bright light on the road to Damascus

³As Saul neared Damascus on his journey he was suddenly enveloped in a bright light from heaven. He fell to the ground and heard a voice say to him, "**Saul, Saul, why do you persecute me?**"

⁴Saul answered, "Who are you Lord?"

⁵The Lord said, "**I am Jesus whom you are persecuting. Now arise and enter the city and you will be told what you must do.**"

⁶The men travelling with Saul stood there speechless, hearing the voice but seeing no one.^{F*}

Saul stricken with blindness

⁷Saul arose from the ground, and although his eyes were open he could not see. ⁸So they led him by the hand into Damascus and for three days he fasted, not eating or drinking anything.

The Lord appears to Ananias

⁹Now in Damascus there was a believer named Ananias. The Lord spoke to him in a vision saying, "**Ananias, go to the house of Judas on Straight Street and ask for a man named Saul. ¹⁰He is praying and in a vision has seen you come and lay your hands upon him to restore his sight.**"

¹¹Ananias answered, "O Lord, I have heard many reports about this man and the harm he has done to your saints^{F*} in Jerusalem. Now

he has come here with authority from the chief priests to arrest all who call on your name."

Ananias visits Saul and heals his blindness

¹²The Lord said, "**Go! This man is my chosen instrument to carry my name before the Gentiles and their kings and the people of Israel. ¹³He will suffer much for my name.**"

¹⁴So Ananias found the house and laying his hands upon Saul he said, "Brother Saul, Jesus who appeared to you on the road as you were coming here has sent me so that you may see again and be filled with the Holy Spirit."

¹⁵Immediately something like scales fell from Saul's eyes and he could see again. ¹⁶He arose and was baptised and after taking some food regained his strength.

Saul begins to preach Jesus

¹⁷Saul spent several days with the believers in Damascus and then began to preach Jesus in the synagogues proclaiming, "He is the Son of God."

¹⁸All those who heard him were astonished and said, "Is not this the man who created havoc in Jerusalem among those who call on this name?"

Saul's life threatened

¹⁹Yet Saul became more and more powerful and confounded the non-believing Jews in Damascus by proving that Jesus was the Christ.



Straight Street in Damascus where Ananias was sent by the Lord to restore Paul's sight.

²⁰However after many days the non-believing Jews in Damascus conspired to kill Saul and day and night they kept watch on the city gates.

Saul escapes and returns to Jerusalem

²¹But Saul learned of their plans, so his followers took him by night and lowered him in a basket through an opening in the city wall.

²²Saul returned to Jerusalem and attempted to join the believers there, but they were afraid of him and did not believe he was a disciple.

*34 Azotus was the former Philistine city of Ashdod on the Mediterranean coast of Israel.

*2 The church of Jesus Christ is several times referred to as 'the Way' from this point on.

*6 It appears that Saul actually saw Jesus, see the following verses 14 and 23.

*11 The term 'saints' refers to all who belonged to the early church.

Barnabas introduces Saul to the apostles

²³However Barnabas took Saul to the apostles and told them how on his journey to Damascus Saul had seen Jesus and the Lord had spoken to him, and how in Damascus he had preached fearlessly in the name of Jesus.

²⁴So from that time on Saul moved about the church freely in Jerusalem, speaking boldly in the name of the Lord.

Greek Jews in Jerusalem try to kill Saul

²⁵He also preached and disputed with the Greek Jews, but they resolved to kill him.

Saul returns to his home city Tarsus

²⁶When the brethren learned of this they took Saul to the seaport city of Caesarea and sent him off by ship to Tarsus.^{F*}

The church in Israel enjoys peace and grows in numbers

²⁷Meanwhile the church throughout Judea, Galilee and Samaria was enjoying a time of peace. It was strengthened and encouraged by the Holy Spirit and grew in numbers.

Peter heals a paralysed man in Lydda

²⁸Peter travelled about visiting the saints. ²⁹In Lydda he found a paralysed man named Aeneas who had been bedridden eight years. ³⁰Peter said to him, ***“Aeneas, Jesus Christ heals you. Arise and make your bed.”***

³¹Immediately Aeneas arose and was healed, and all who lived in Lydda saw him and turned to the Lord.

Peter raises a dead woman in Joppa

³²In Joppa there was a believing woman named Tabitha who was always doing good and helping the poor. ³³About this time she became sick and died and her body was washed and placed in an upper room.

³⁴When the church in Joppa heard that Peter was nearby in Lydda, they sent two men with the request, “Please come at once.” So he went with them.

³⁵When Peter arrived he was taken upstairs to the room. Widows were standing around wailing and they showed Peter the clothing that Tabitha had made while she was still alive.

³⁶But Peter sent them all out of the room and he knelt and prayed. Then he turned to the dead woman and said, ***“Tabitha arise!”***

³⁷The woman opened her eyes and seeing Peter she sat up. Peter took her by the hand and helped her to her feet. ³⁸Then he called in the believers and the widows and presented her to them alive.

Many people in Joppa believe in the Lord

³⁹This became known all over Joppa and many people believed in the Lord. Peter stayed in Joppa for many days with a tanner named Simon.

Cornelius a God-revering Roman centurion

¹At Caesarea^{F*} there was a Roman centurion^{F*} named Cornelius. He and all his family were devout and revered God.^{F*} ²He gave generously to those in need and prayed to God regularly.

An angel in shining clothes tells Cornelius to send for Peter

³One day about mid-afternoon Cornelius had a vision. He saw an angel of God in shining clothes who said to him, ***“Cornelius, your prayers and gifts to the poor have come up as an offering to God. Now send men to Joppa to bring back to you a man named Peter. He is staying with Simon the tanner whose house is by the sea.”***

⁵Cornelius immediately called two of his attendants and a devout soldier. He told them what had happened and sent them to Joppa.

Peter shown a vision of unclean animals

⁶About noon the next day, as the three men were approaching Joppa, Peter went up on the roof to pray. ⁷Then he felt hungry and desired something to eat.

⁸While food was being prepared, Peter fell into a trance and saw the heavens opened and something like a large sheet being let down to earth by its four corners. It contained all kinds of animals and reptiles and birds of prey.^{F*}

God can make the unclean clean

⁹Then a voice said, ***“Arise Peter, kill and eat.”***

¹⁰Peter replied, “Surely not Lord, I have never eaten anything unclean.”

¹¹The voice said, ***“Do not call unclean what God has made clean.”***

¹²This happened three times and the sheet was taken back up to heaven.



The roof top of Simon the Tanner in Joppa (now Jaffa) where Peter saw his vision.

*1 Caesarea was an important port city on the Mediterranean coast north of Joppa. It was the headquarters of the Roman military garrison and governor.

*1 A centurion was the commander of a hundred men in the Roman army.

*1 Most likely the Jewish God Jehovah, as the Romans were Polytheists, believers in multiple gods.

*8 Most animals, all reptiles, and all birds of prey were designated as unclean in the Old Testament and therefore not to be eaten (Leviticus 3:1-11).

*26 Tarsus was the principal city of Cilicia (now part of Turkey) and was the place of Saul's birth.

ACTS 10

Peter goes to teach Cornelius in Caesarea

¹³As Peter was pondering the meaning of the vision, the three men sent by Cornelius stopped outside the house and called out asking if Peter was staying there.

¹⁴The Holy Spirit said to Peter, “**Three men are looking for you. Go with them for I have sent them.**”

¹⁵Peter went down and said to the men, “I am the man you are looking for. Why have you come?”

¹⁶The men replied, “We have come from Cornelius the Roman centurion in Caesarea. He is a righteous and God-revering man who is respected by all the Jewish people. ¹⁷A holy angel told him to send for you to come to his house so he could hear what you have to say.”

¹⁸Peter invited the men to stay that night and the next day he started out with them for Caesarea. Some of the brethren from Joppa also went with him.



The street of Simon the Tanner in Joppa where Peter stayed.

Cornelius gathers his Gentile relatives and friends for Peter to teach

¹⁹The following day they arrived in Caesarea. Cornelius was expecting them and had called together all his Gentile relatives and friends.

²⁰As Peter entered the house Cornelius fell down at his feet in reverence. But Peter said, “Arise, I am only a man like yourself.”

God accepts people from all nations

²¹Then Peter addressed the large gathering of Gentiles saying, “You are aware that it is against our Jewish Law for a Jew to associate with a Gentile^{F*} or to enter his house. ²²But God has shown me that I should not call any man unclean. I now know that God shows no favouritism but accepts men from all nations who revere him and do what is right.”

²³Then Peter taught them the good news of

peace through Jesus Christ who is Lord of all.

The Holy Spirit falls on the Gentiles while Peter is still speaking

²⁴While Peter was still speaking, the Holy Spirit fell on all who heard the message. ²⁵The Jewish believers who had come with Peter were astonished that the gift of the Holy Spirit was poured out even upon the Gentiles. ²⁶For they heard them speaking in tongues and praising God.

The Gentiles are baptised

²⁷Then Peter said, “What is to prevent these people from being baptised with water? They have received the Holy Spirit just as we have.”

²⁸So he commanded them to be baptised in the name of Jesus Christ. Then they asked Peter to remain with them a few days.

10

Peter relates to the Jerusalem brethren his vision and what happened afterward

¹Now the apostles and brethren in Jerusalem soon heard what had happened and when Peter returned to Jerusalem the circumcised believers^{F*} criticised him saying, “We heard that you entered the house of uncircumcised men and ate with them.”

²So Peter related to them his vision of the unclean creatures and what the Lord had said to him.

³Then Peter said, “As I pondered the vision, three men who had been sent to me from Caesarea came to the house where I was staying. ⁴The Spirit told me to go with them so I went, and these six brethren also went with me and we entered the man’s house.”

⁵“As I began to teach them the Holy Spirit fell upon them, just as it fell upon us at the beginning. So if God gave them the same gift he gave us who believed in the Lord Jesus Christ, who am I to oppose God?”

⁶When they heard this they had no further objections and praised God saying, “So God has granted even the Gentiles repentance unto Eternal Life.”

The gospel spreads wider afield

⁷Now the believers who had been scattered by the persecution at the time of Stephen had travelled as far as Tyre, Sidon, and the island of Cyprus and also to Antioch in Syria.

⁸They had spread the message of the Lord Jesus, but only to the Jews. Now some of the believers in Antioch began preaching the good news to the Greeks.

⁹The Lord’s hand was with them and large numbers believed and turned to the Lord.

Barnabas sent to Antioch

¹⁰News of this reached the church at Jerusalem, so they sent Barnabas to Antioch.

¹¹When he arrived and saw the evidence of

*²¹ Since the Babylonian exile a Gentile has been defined by Jews as any person not born of a Jewish mother.

*¹ ie Jewish believers.

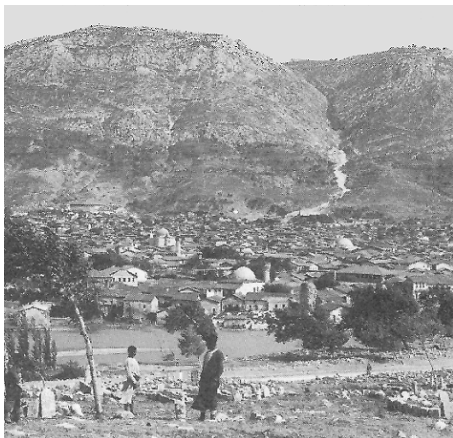
the grace of God he was glad, and encouraged them to remain true to the Lord with all their hearts.

Barnabas brings Saul to Antioch to assist him

¹²Barnabas was a good man, full of faith and the Holy Spirit and a great number of people were brought to the Lord.

¹³Then Barnabas went to the city of Tarsus to find Saul and brought him to Antioch. And for a whole year Barnabas and Saul stayed with the church at Antioch and taught great numbers of people. ^{F*}

¹⁴The believers were first called Christians at Antioch.



Antioch in Syria where large numbers joined the church.

Agabus prophesies a famine

¹⁵During this time a prophet named Agabus came from Jerusalem to Antioch and prophesied that a severe famine would soon spread over the entire Roman world. ^{F*}

The believers at Antioch assist those in Judea

¹⁶So the believers at Antioch decided to provide help for their brethren living in Judea by sending them money by Barnabas and Saul, each according to their means.

11

King Herod kills the apostle James

¹It was about this time that Herod^{F*} the king arrested some who belonged to the church, and he had the apostle James, the brother of John put to death with the sword.

*13 Luke the author of this book of Acts is believed to have been a native of Antioch.

*15 A local famine occurred in Judah soon after this prophecy, and a few years later in 46 AD a severe famine affected much of the Roman empire, and lasted three years.

*1 This was Herod Agrippa 1, grandson of the vassal-king Herod the Great who had governed all Israel at the time of the birth of Jesus, and nephew of the Herod who killed John the Baptist. By shrewd diplomacy Herod Agrippa 1 now reigned as king over all Israel but still under the supervision of a Roman governor.

Peter imprisoned by Herod

²When Herod saw that this pleased the Jewish leaders he also imprisoned Peter during the Passover feast. ³He intended bringing him out for public trial after the Passover but the church was earnestly praying for Peter.

Peter freed from prison by an angel

⁴The night before Herod was to bring him to trial, Peter was sleeping between two soldiers and bound with chains. There were also guards at the prison entrance.

⁵Suddenly a light shone in his prison cell and an angel appeared. The angel tapped Peter on his side and awoke him and said to him, **“Quickly, arise.”** And the chains fell off Peter’s wrists.

⁶The angel said, **“Put on your clothes and sandals.”** When Peter had done so the angel said, **“Wrap your cloak around yourself and follow me.”**

⁷Peter followed the angel out of the prison but it seemed to him as a dream. ⁸They passed by the first and second guards and came to the iron gate leading out into the city. It opened for them all by itself and they walked through. ⁹When they had walked the length of one street the angel disappeared.

Peter goes to the house of the mother of Mark

¹⁰Peter came to himself and went to the house of Mary the mother of Mark, where many believers had gathered and were praying.

¹¹He knocked at the door and a servant girl named Rhoda came to see who it was. ¹²When she recognised Peter’s voice she became so excited that she ran back to the others without opening the door and cried out, **“Peter is at the door!”**

¹³They said to her, **“You are out of your mind.”** But she kept insisting it was true. So they said, **“It must be his spirit.”**

The believers astonished to see Peter

¹⁴Peter kept on knocking, and when they opened the door and saw him they were all astonished.

¹⁵Peter motioned for silence and described to them how the Lord had brought him out of prison. ¹⁶Then he said, **“Tell James^{F*} and the other brethren about this,”** and he left for another place.

An uproar among the prison guards

¹⁷In the morning there was an uproar among the prison guards over what had become of Peter.

¹⁸After Herod had a thorough search made for him and did not find him he ordered that the guards be executed. ¹⁹Then he returned to his palace in Caesarea.

King Herod dies because of pride

²⁰Shortly afterward, Herod sat on his throne

*16 James was a brother of Jesus and author of the book of James. He appears to have been the presiding elder (or presiding bishop) of the church and stayed at Jerusalem, as opposed to the Twelve who travelled widely. James the apostle had previously been killed (Acts 11:1).

ACTS 12

wearing his royal robes and delivered a fine address to some people who had come to him from Tyre and Sidon.

²¹When he had finished speaking they cried out, "The voice of a god not of a man."²²And immediately, because Herod did not give the honour to God, an angel struck him down and he was eaten by worms and died.^{F*}



Key towns of the early church based in Jerusalem.

12

Barnabas and Saul called on a mission from Antioch

¹The word of God continued to spread.

²After Barnabas and Saul had assisted the saints in Jerusalem they returned again to Antioch taking Mark^{F*} with them.

³In the church at Antioch there were prophets and teachers; Barnabas, Saul, Simeon, Lucius and Manaen. ⁴While they were fasting and worshipping the Lord, the Holy Spirit said to them, "**Set apart Barnabas and Saul for a mission to which I have called them.**"

Barnabas and Saul go to Cyprus

⁵So after fasting and praying they laid their

*21 The Jewish historian Josephus reports that king Herod was struck by a violent stomach pain immediately after his speech and had to be carried out of the hall. He died five days later at the age of 54.

*2 Author of the gospel of Mark.

hands on Barnabas and Saul and sent them off. ⁶Mark went with them as their helper.

⁷They sailed to Cyprus and there taught the word of God in the Jewish synagogues.

Opposition from Elymas the sorcerer

⁸They taught throughout the island until they came to Paphos. There they found a Jewish sorcerer named Elymas who was with the Roman governor Sergius Paulus.

⁹The governor was an intelligent man and had sent for Barnabas and Saul as he wanted to hear the word of God. ¹⁰But Elymas the sorcerer opposed them and tried to turn the governor from accepting the faith.

Elymas struck blind

¹¹Then Saul who is also called Paul,^{F*} filled with the Holy Spirit, looked intently at Elymas and said to him, "**You son of the devil and enemy of all that is right, full of all kinds of deceit and trickery, cease to pervert the ways of the Lord.**"

¹²"**Now the hand of the Lord is against you. You will be blind for a time, unable to see the sun.**"

¹³Immediately blindness came upon Elymas and he groped about seeking for someone to lead him by the hand.

The governor of Cyprus believes

¹⁴When the governor saw this he believed, for he was astonished at the teaching about the Lord.



A settlement on the island of Cyprus, the first place visited by Paul on his first mission.

Mark returns to Jerusalem but Paul and Barnabas go on to Galatia

¹⁵From there Paul and his two companions sailed to Perga in Pamphylia. Mark however left them at this point and returned to Jerusalem. ¹⁶But Paul and Barnabas continued overland to Pisidian in Galatia.

Paul invited to speak in the Jewish synagogue of Pisidian

¹⁷On the Sabbath they entered the synagogue and sat down. After the reading from the scriptures the synagogue officials sent a message to them saying, "Brethren if you have a word of encouragement for the people, speak up."

Paul relates the history of Israel

¹⁸So Paul stood and said, "Men of Israel and

*11 Paul was a name more acceptable to Greeks and Romans than Saul which was clearly Jewish. He is referred to as Paul from this point on in the Bible.

you Gentiles who worship God, hear me.”

¹⁹“The God of Israel chose our forefathers, and made our people prosper during their stay in Egypt, and with mighty power he led them out of that land.”

²⁰“He put up with them for forty years in the desert and then after overthrowing seven nations in Canaan, he gave that land to his people as their inheritance. ²¹All this took about 450 years.”

The Saviour Jesus a descendant of David

²²“After this, God gave them judges, until the time of Samuel the prophet.”

²³“Then the people asked for a king and he gave them Saul, who ruled for forty years.”

²⁴“After removing Saul he made David their king saying, **‘I have found in David a man after my own heart. He will do all I desire him to do.’**

²⁵“And now from a descendant of David, God has brought to Israel the Saviour Jesus, as he promised.

Paul tells of the death and resurrection of Jesus

²⁶“Brethren, descendants of Abraham and you God-revering Gentiles, it is to all of us that this message of salvation has been sent.”

²⁷“Because the people of Jerusalem and their rulers did not recognise Jesus, they killed him and fulfilled the words of the prophets that are read every Sabbath. ²⁸They insisted that Pilate put him to death, though he found no cause for a death sentence.”

²⁹“But God raised him from the dead and for many days he was seen by those who had been with him. ³⁰They are his witnesses and we bring you the good news that God promised our fathers.”

Forgiveness of sins only possible through Jesus, not Moses

³¹“Therefore my brethren, through Jesus the forgiveness of sins is proclaimed to you. Through Jesus, you who believe are set free from all that you could not be set free from by the Law of Moses.”

Paul and Barnabas invited back next week

³²As Paul and Barnabas were leaving the synagogue the people urged them to return again the next week and speak further of these things. Many also followed Paul and Barnabas, who spoke with them further.

The Jews become jealous of the large crowd of Gentiles who come to listen to Paul

³³On the next Sabbath almost the whole city of Pisidian gathered to hear the word of the Lord.

³⁴But when the Jews saw the vast crowd of Gentiles they became jealous^{F*} and argued blasphemously against the words of Paul.

Paul and Barnabas turn to the Gentiles

³⁵Paul and Barnabas answered them boldly. But finally they said to the Jews, “We had to speak the word of God to you first, but since you reject it and show yourselves unfit for Eternal Life, we now turn to the Gentiles. ³⁶For the Lord said through Isaiah, **‘I have made you a light for the Gentiles that you may bring salvation to the ends of the earth.’**”

Many Gentiles believe

³⁷When the Gentiles heard this they were glad and honoured the word of the Lord, and all who were appointed for Eternal Life believed. ³⁸And the word of the Lord spread throughout all the region.

The Jews stir up the people to drive out Paul and Barnabas

³⁹But the Jews stirred up persecution against Paul and Barnabas by inciting the leading men and women of the city and they were driven out from Pisidian.

Paul and Barnabas go on to Iconium

⁴⁰Paul and Barnabas shook the dust from their feet in protest against them and went on to Iconium. ⁴¹However the believers in Pisidian were filled with joy and with the Holy Spirit.

13

The Jews at Iconium also stir up the people

¹At Iconium, Paul and Barnabas spoke so effectively in the synagogue that a great number of Jews and Gentiles believed.

²But the Jews who refused to believe, stirred up the Gentiles and poisoned their minds against them.

Paul and Barnabas do miracles at Iconium

³However they spent a long time there, speaking boldly for the Lord who confirmed their message by enabling them to do miracles.

A plan devised to stone Paul and Barnabas

⁴The people of Iconium were divided, some sided with the Jews and others with the apostles.^{F*}

⁵Then a plan was devised to stone Paul and Barnabas, but they heard of it and departed for Lystra where they continued to preach the good news.

A man crippled from birth healed in Lystra by Paul

⁶In Lystra there was a man crippled from birth in both feet who had never walked.

⁷He listened as Paul spoke and Paul saw that he had faith to be healed so he cried out, **“Stand up on your feet!”** And the man leapt up and began to walk.

Paul and Barnabas proclaimed gods

⁸When the crowd saw this miracle they

*34 The Jews had long regarded themselves as the chosen people of the Lord and therefore spiritually superior to the Gentiles. Apparently many of them found it difficult to accept Paul's message of equal salvation for all.

*4 Here Paul and Barnabas are first called apostles. It is not certain whether they replaced those of the Twelve who had been killed, or the term is used in a general missionary sense. Barnabas was very prominent in the early church and is reported to have been the author of the book of Hebrews.

ACTS 14

shouted, "The gods have come down to us in human form!"

⁹Barnabas they called Zeus, and Paul they called Hermes, as he was the chief speaker.

¹⁰Then the priest of Zeus whose temple was at that city brought bulls to the city gates to offer sacrifice to them.



Zeus, head of the Greek gods.

¹¹When the two apostles heard of this they tore their clothes and rushed into the crowd shouting, "Why are you doing this? We are only men like you! ¹²We are bringing you good news, telling you to turn away from worthless things like this, to the living God! To him who made the heavens and earth and everything in them!"

¹³But even with these words they had difficulty restraining the crowd from sacrificing to them.

Paul stoned and dragged outside the city as dead

¹⁴Then some Jews from Pisidian and Iconium arrived and turned the crowd against them.

¹⁵They stoned Paul and dragged him outside the city believing him to be dead.

The believers revive Paul

¹⁶But after the believers had gathered around Paul, he recovered and went back into the city.

A large number of believers won in Derbe

¹⁷The next day he and Barnabas left for Derbe. They preached the good news in that city and won a large number of believers.

Former cities revisited and strengthened

¹⁸Then they returned again through Lystra, Iconium and Pisidian to strengthen the believers and encourage them to remain true to the faith. ¹⁹They said to them, "We must all go through many persecutions to enter the kingdom of God."

Elders appointed in the churches

²⁰Paul and Barnabas appointed elders in the

churches and with prayer and fasting set them apart to the Lord.

Paul and Barnabas complete their first mission and return to Antioch

²¹Then they sailed back to Antioch where they had first been set apart for their mission which they had now completed.

²²On arriving back they gathered the church together and reported all that God had done through them and how he had opened the door to the Gentiles.



Paul's first mission.

14

Some Jewish believers teach that Gentile converts must be circumcised

¹Soon after this some Jewish believers came to Antioch from Judea and began teaching the brethren saying, "Unless you are circumcised as taught by Moses, you cannot be saved."

Paul and Barnabas sent to the church in Jerusalem for a ruling on this question

²Paul and Barnabas sharply disputed this teaching, and after much debate they were appointed by the church leaders in Antioch to travel to Jerusalem and consult with the apostles and elders^{F*} about this question.

³When Paul and Barnabas arrived in Jerusalem they were welcomed by the church and the apostles and elders. They reported everything God had done through them for the Gentiles.

Pharisee believers maintain that Gentiles should obey all the Laws of Moses

⁴But some of the believers who were Pharisees stood up and said, "The Gentile believers should be circumcised and obey the Law of Moses."

⁵So the apostles and elders met to consider this question.

Peter says it is by the grace of Jesus we are saved not the Law of Moses

⁶After much debate Peter stood up and said, "Brethren you know that God decided that the Gentiles should first hear the message of the gospel from my lips. ⁷He who knows all hearts showed that he accepted them by giving the

^{*}2 The elders in this cases were the leaders of the church in Jerusalem presided over by James the brother of Jesus Christ.

Holy Spirit to them just as he did to us. ⁸He made no distinction between us and them, for he purified their hearts by their belief.”

⁹“Now then, why question God’s judgement by putting on the necks of the Gentiles a yoke which neither we nor our fathers have been able to bear?”

¹⁰“It is through the grace of our Lord Jesus that we Jews are saved, and so also with the Gentiles.”

James the presiding elder of the church gives his decision

¹¹When they had all finished speaking James arose and gave his decision^{F*} saying, “It is my judgement that we should not make it difficult for the Gentiles who are turning to the Lord.”

Gentiles to abstain from sexual immorality and defiled food and blood

¹²“Let us write to them instructing them to abstain from sexual immorality, from food defiled by idols, and from the meat of unbled animals and from eating blood.”

A written decision sent to the Gentiles by Judas and Silas

¹³Then the apostles and elders chose Judas and Silas, two men who were leaders among the brethren, to return to Antioch with Paul and Barnabas. With them they also sent this following letter.

¹⁴“To the Gentile believers in Antioch, Syria and Cilicia: Greetings from the apostles and elders your brethren.”

¹⁵“We have heard that some went out from us without our authorisation and disturbed you, troubling your minds by what they said. So we have sent Judas and Silas to you with our dear friends Barnabas and Paul to confirm by word of mouth what we are writing.”

¹⁶“It seems good to the Holy Spirit and to us, not to burden you with anything beyond the following requirements. You are to abstain from food sacrificed to idols, from the meat of unbled animals, from blood, and from sexual immorality.”

¹⁷“If you keep yourselves from these you will do well. Farewell.”

¹⁸The men were sent off and after travelling to Antioch they gathered the church together and delivered the letter. ¹⁹The people heard it read and were pleased with the message.

Judas and Silas prophets

²⁰Judas and Silas who were prophets^{F*} also

*¹¹ James was the brother of Jesus and the presiding elder (or presiding bishop) of the whole church. Paul wrote that the resurrected Jesus personally appeared to James (1 Corinthians 8:4). By James giving the final decision on an important matter of church policy such as the one under discussion the authority of his office would appear to exceed that of Peter and the other apostles. However this can be explained by the differing duties of their callings. An apostle’s calling was to travel and establish new churches and build up existing ones, not to be tied down in church administration. Whereas the calling of the presiding elder (or presiding bishop) was to preside over and regulate the affairs of the church as a whole.

*²⁰ ie, They had the gift of prophecy by the power of the Holy Spirit.

said much to encourage and strengthen the brethren. Silas remained in Antioch.

Paul and Barnabas decide on a second mission to revisit their first mission converts

²¹Some time later Paul said to Barnabas, “Let us return and visit the brethren in the places where we preached the word of the Lord and see how they are doing.”

Paul refuses to take Mark

²²Barnabas desired to take Mark with them again, but Paul did not think it wise as he had deserted them in Pamphylia.

Barnabas takes Mark and Paul takes Silas

²³They had such a strong disagreement about this that they parted company. Barnabas took Mark and sailed for Cyprus and Paul took Silas and went by way of Cilicia to strengthen the churches in Galatia.

15

Paul meets Timothy at Lystra

¹Paul went first to Derbe, and then on to Lystra where a brother named Timothy lived. ²His mother was a Jew and a believer but his father was a Greek. The brethren at Lystra spoke well of him.

Timothy is circumcised and Paul takes him along with him

³Paul decided that Timothy should accompany them but first he took him and circumcised him because of the Jews in those places, for they knew that his father was a Greek.

The churches are strengthened and grow in numbers

⁴As they travelled from town to town they delivered the decision reached by the apostles and elders in Jerusalem for the Gentile believers to obey. ⁵So the churches were strengthened in the faith and grew daily in numbers.

The Holy Spirit guides the missionaries

⁶Paul and his two companions travelled throughout Galatia having been forbidden by the Holy Spirit from preaching the word in the province of Asia at that time.^{F*}

⁷Also when they tried to enter Bithynia the Spirit of Jesus^{F*} prevented them, so they went down to Troas.

Paul has a vision to go to Macedonia

⁸At Troas during the night Paul had a vision of a man standing and begging him saying, “Come over to Macedonia and help us.”

⁹So we^{F*} got ready at once to leave for Macedonia, believing that God had called us to preach the gospel to them.

*⁶ Paul did however later preach in the province of Asia, at Ephesus.

*⁷ The Spirit of Jesus is another term for the Holy Spirit.

*⁹ At this point Luke the author of Acts joins the group as the narration becomes ‘we’ rather than ‘they’ and more detail is included.

ACTS 16

Paul and Silas stay at Philippi in Macedonia

¹⁰We put out to sea and sailed to Neapolis and from there travelled overland to Philippi, the leading city of that part of Macedonia and stayed there several days.

Lydia believes and all her household are baptised

¹¹On the Sabbath we went outside the city gate to the river where we had been told there was a place of prayer. ¹²We sat down and began to speak to the women who had gathered there.

¹³The Lord opened the heart of a certain woman named Lydia, a dealer in purple cloth, who worshipped God. ¹⁴She believed Paul's message and all her household were baptised. ¹⁵She urged us to stay in her home and we accepted the invitation.

A slave girl with a spirit of fortune-telling follows Paul and Silas testifying about them

¹⁶Once when we were going out to the place of prayer we were met by a slave girl who had a spirit by which she foretold the future. ¹⁷She earned a great deal of money for her owners by fortune-telling.

¹⁸This girl followed Paul and the rest of us crying out, "These men are servants of the Most High God who will make known to you the way of salvation."

Paul casts out the spirit

¹⁹She kept this up for many days. Finally Paul became so annoyed that he turned around and said to the spirit, "In the name of Jesus Christ I command you to come out of her." ²⁰At that moment the spirit left her.

The owners of the slave girl seize Paul and Silas

²¹When the owners of the slave girl saw that their source of income was gone, they seized Paul and Silas and dragged them before the judges in the marketplace saying, "These men are Jews and are disturbing our city by teaching customs unlawful for Roman citizens to practice."

Paul and Silas flogged and imprisoned

²²The crowd joined in accusing them so the judges ordered them stripped and flogged.

²³After they had been severely flogged they were imprisoned and the jailer was commanded to guard them carefully. He put them in the inner cell and fastened their feet in stocks.

Prison doors miraculously open and chains come unfastened

²⁴About midnight Paul and Silas were praying and singing hymns and the other prisoners were listening to them.

²⁵Suddenly there came a violent earthquake and the foundations of the prison were shaken. At the same time all the prison doors flew open and every prisoner's chains came unfastened.

Paul stops the jailer from taking his own life

²⁶When the jailer awoke and saw all the prison doors open he drew his sword to kill himself thinking the prisoners had escaped.

²⁷But Paul shouted, "Do not harm yourself! We are all here!"

The jailer and his family are baptised that same night

²⁸The jailer called for lamps and rushing in he fell trembling before Paul and Silas. Then he took them outside and said, "What must I do to be saved?"

²⁹They replied, "Believe in the Lord Jesus and you will be saved, you and your household."

³⁰Then they taught the word of the Lord to him and to all the others in his house. ³¹The jailer then washed their wounds and that same night he and all his family were baptised.

³²He afterward took them up into his house and set a meal before them. ³³He was filled with joy for he had come to believe in God along with his whole family.

Paul and Silas apologised to and escorted from prison by the judges

³⁴When it was daylight the judges sent officers to the jailer saying, "Release those men."

³⁵But Paul said to the officers, "They flogged us publicly without a trial, we who are Roman citizens and threw us into prison. Now they want to release us secretly. No! Let them come themselves and escort us out."

³⁶When the officers reported this back to the judges and they heard that Paul and Silas were Roman citizens, they became alarmed, and came and apologised to them. ³⁷Then they escorted them from the prison asking them to leave the city.

Paul and Silas leave for Thessalonica

³⁸Paul and Silas returned to Lydia's house where they met with the brethren and encouraged them. Then they departed for the city of Thessalonica where there was a Jewish synagogue.

16

Paul and Silas try to reason with the Jews

¹As was his custom Paul went into the synagogue at Thessalonica and on three Sabbath days reasoned with them from the scriptures, proving that the Christ had to suffer and rise from the dead.

Jealous Jews formed a mob and start a riot

²Some of the Jews at Thessalonica were persuaded and joined Paul and Silas, as did a large number of Greeks and prominent women, but the rest of the Jews were jealous. ³They found some worthless men at the marketplace and formed a mob and started a riot in the city.

Jason and some other believers dragged before the city officials

⁴The Jews searched for Paul and Silas to hand them over to the crowd. ⁵When they could not find them, they instead dragged Jason and some of the other brethren before the city officials and shouted, "These men who

are causing trouble all over the world have now come here, and Jason has welcomed them into his house.”

⁶“They are defying Caesar’s decrees and say there is another king, one called Jesus.”

Paul and Silas escape to Berea

⁷The crowd and city officials were troubled when they heard this. They ordered Jason and the others to pay bail then released them.

⁸As soon as it was night the brethren assisted Paul and Silas to escape to Berea.

Many Jews and Greeks at Berea believe

⁹On arriving in Berea, Paul and Silas went into the Jewish synagogue.

¹⁰Now the Jews in Berea were of more noble character than those in Thessalonica for they received the message with eagerness and searched the scriptures every day to see if what Paul said was true.

¹¹Therefore many of the Jews believed as did also many prominent Greek women and men.

Thessalonian Jews come to Berea and stir up the people against Paul

¹²However when the Jews in Thessalonica learned that Paul was preaching the word of God at Berea they went there too, inciting the crowds and stirring them up.

Paul taken to Athens for safety

¹³So the brethren immediately had men escort Paul to Athens.

Paul dismayed to see Athens full of idols

¹⁴While Paul waited in Athens for Silas and Timothy to join him he was dismayed to see the city full of idols.

¹⁵So he reasoned with the Jews in the synagogue, and also daily with those who happened to be in the marketplace.

Philosophers take Paul to speak at a meeting of the Areopagus

¹⁶A group of philosophers listened to Paul as he preached the good news about Jesus and the resurrection. ¹⁷Some of them said, “What is this babbler trying to say?” Others answered, “He seems to be a teacher of foreign gods.”

¹⁸They took him to a meeting of the Council of Areopagus^{F*} where they said to him, “You are bringing some strange new teaching to our ears and we wish to know what it means.”

¹⁹(Now the men who lived in Athens spent most of their time just talking about and listening to new ideas.)

Paul speaks of the unknown God

²⁰So Paul stood and spoke before the Council saying, “Men of Athens I see that you are very religious. As I walked around and looked at your objects of worship I saw an altar with this inscription, ‘To an unknown god.’ ²¹Therefore, what you worship as unknown I will make known to you.”

God does not live in man-made temples

²²“The God who made this world and everything in it lives not in temples built by human hands, for he himself gives life to all creation.”

God hopes that men will seek him

²³“From one man he made all the peoples that inhabit the earth and allotted the times for them to be born and the places where they should live.”

²⁴“God did this in the hope that men would seek him and find him, as he is not far from us, for *‘Through him we live and have our being.’*”

We are the offspring of God therefore God is not like an idol

²⁵“Or as some of your own poets have said, *‘We are his offspring.’*”

²⁶Since we are God’s offspring we should not think he is like an idol, made by the design and skill of man.”

Repent for God has set a day when he will judge the world by Jesus

²⁷“In the past God overlooked such ignorance but now he commands all people everywhere to repent. ²⁸For he has set a day when he will judge the world by the man he has appointed. And he has given proof of this by raising that man from the dead.”

Some philosophers scoff at Paul’s teaching of the resurrection

²⁹When the men of Athens heard Paul speak of raising the dead some scoffed, but others said, “We will hear you again on this subject.”

A few philosophers believe

³⁰At that point Paul left them, but a few joined him and became believers including Dionysius and a woman named Damaris and others with them.



A view of Athens from Mars Hill.

17

Paul leaves Athens and goes to Corinth

¹After this, Paul left Athens and went to Corinth. ²There he met a Jew named Aquila who had recently come from Rome with his wife Priscilla, for the emperor Claudius had decreed that all Jews must leave Rome.^{F*}

*18 The Council of Areopagus was a local Greek authority on religion and morals.

*2 This decree, made about AD 49 was later cancelled.

Paul works for a time at his trade of a tent maker

³Because Paul was a tent maker as they were, he stayed and worked with them. ⁴But each Sabbath he reasoned in the synagogue trying to persuade the Jews and the Greeks.

Silas and Timothy rejoin Paul

⁵However when Silas and Timothy rejoined him from Macedonia, Paul devoted himself entirely to preaching and testifying to the Jews that Jesus was the Christ.

The Jews again oppose Paul and he rejects them

⁶But the Jews again opposed Paul and abused him, so he shook the dust from off his clothes^{F*} and said to them, "Your blood be upon your own heads. I am clear of my responsibility. From now on I will only teach the Gentiles."

⁷Then he left the synagogue and went next door to the house of Titius Justus a worshipper of God.

⁸However the ruler of the synagogue, Crispus and his household believed in the Lord. Many of the Corinthians who heard him also believed and were baptised.

The Lord again appears to Paul and encourages him

⁹One night the Lord came to Paul in a vision and said to him, "Fear not, but speak out. For I am with you and no man will harm you, for I have many people in this city."

¹⁰So Paul stayed for a year and a half in Corinth, teaching them the word of God.

The Jews charge Paul before the Roman governor of Corinth

¹¹At one time the Corinth Jews made a united attack on Paul and brought him before Gallio the Roman governor of the province. They accused him saying, "This man is persuading our people to worship God in ways contrary to our Law."

The governor rejects the charge

¹²Paul was about to speak but Gallio said to the Jews, "If you Jews were making a complaint about a serious crime it would be reasonable for me to listen to you. ¹³But since it involves questions about your own religious Law, settle the matter yourselves. I will not be a judge of such things." And he had them ejected from the court.

The Jews beat their own synagogue ruler

¹⁴So the Jews turned on Sosthenes their synagogue ruler and beat him in front of the court house, but the governor paid no attention to this.

Paul decides to end his second mission and return to Antioch

¹⁵Paul stayed on in Corinth a little while longer and then decided to return to Antioch.

Paul shaves his head because of a vow

¹⁶However before he sailed, Paul had his hair shaved off because of a vow.^{F*}

Paul tells the Jews at Ephesus he hopes to return

¹⁷When the ship put in at Ephesus in the province of Asia, Paul visited the synagogue there and reasoned with the Jews.

¹⁸They asked Paul to spend more time with them but he declined. However as he left he said to them, "I will return if it is God's will."

Paul visits Jerusalem then returns home to Antioch

¹⁹Paul again set sail and after landing at Caesarea he went up to Jerusalem. After greeting the church there he returned to Antioch.



Paul's second mission. His third mission also covered the same areas

18

Paul departs on his third mission

¹After staying at Antioch for some time, Paul again departed and went again throughout Galatia and Phrygia, strengthening all the believers.

Apollos teaches at Ephesus

²Meanwhile a Jew named Apollos arrived at Ephesus in the province of Asia. ³He was a learned man with a thorough knowledge of the scriptures.

⁴He had been instructed in the way of the Lord and spoke with great fervour. He taught about Jesus accurately though he knew only the baptism of John.

The way of God explained more fully to Apollos by Aquila and Priscilla

⁵Aquila and Priscilla who had remained at Ephesus heard Apollos speak boldly in the synagogue and invited him to their home. There they explained to him the Way of God more fully.

Apollos leaves Ephesus

⁶Apollos then wished to go to Achaia, so the brethren wrote to the believers there asking them to welcome him.

*⁶ To shake off dust is a missionary sign of rejection. See instructions of Jesus in Matt-Mark-Luke 19:15.

*¹⁶ A vow is a favour asked of the Lord in return for which the asker agrees to make some kind of sacrifice. Shaving the head marked the completion of a vow (Leviticus 8:19-25).

Apollos a powerful speaker

⁷When Apollos arrived he was a great help to them for he vigorously refuted the Jews in public debate and proved from the scriptures that Jesus was the Christ.

Paul arrives in Ephesus

⁸Soon after Apollos left Ephesus, Paul arrived in that city.

Paul finds believers in Ephesus who have not heard of the Holy Spirit

⁹Paul found some believers there and said to them, "Did you receive the Holy Spirit when you believed?"

¹⁰They answered, "We have not even heard that there is a Holy Spirit."

Paul rebaptises the Ephesian believers

¹¹Paul asked, "Then what baptism did you receive?"

They replied, "The baptism of John."

¹²Paul said, "John's baptism was a baptism of repentance." So they were rebaptised in the name of the Lord Jesus.

The Ephesian believers speak in tongues and prophesy

¹³When Paul had laid his hands on them the Holy Spirit came upon them and they spoke in tongues and prophesied. ¹⁴There were about twelve men in all.

Paul tries to persuade the Jews in Ephesus

¹⁵Then Paul went to the synagogue and for three months afterward spoke boldly there, arguing persuasively about the kingdom of God.

¹⁶But some of the Jews refused to believe and publicly spoke ill of the Way.

Paul teaches daily for two years in a lecture hall

¹⁷So Paul left them and took the believers with him and met daily in the lecture hall of Tyrannus.

¹⁸This went on for two years so that all the Jews and Greeks who lived in the province of Asia^{F*} heard the word of the Lord.

Great miracles done through Paul

¹⁹God did extraordinary miracles through Paul. Even handkerchiefs that had touched his skin were taken to the sick and their illnesses were cured and the unclean spirits left them.

Jewish exorcists begin to use the name of Jesus to expel demons

²⁰Then some of the travelling Jewish exorcists began pronouncing the name of Jesus over those who were demon-possessed. They would say, "In the name of Jesus whom Paul preaches, I command you to come out."

Seven sons of Sceva violently attacked by a demon possessed man

²¹Seven sons of Sceva, a Jewish chief priest were doing this. But one demon answered

them saying, "Jesus I know and Paul I know, but who are you?"

²²Then the man possessed by the demon attacked them. He overpowered them so violently that they fled out of the house naked and bleeding.

²³When this became known to the Jews and Greeks in Ephesus they feared, and the name of the Lord Jesus was held in high honour.

Valuable sorcery scrolls burned

²⁴Also many who believed openly confessed their sins. Some who had practiced sorcery brought their scrolls and burnt them publicly.

²⁵The value of the scrolls amounted to 50,000 drachmas.^{F*}

²⁶In this way the word of the Lord spread widely and grew in power.

Paul decides to return to Jerusalem then visit Rome

²⁷Then Paul resolved to return again to Jerusalem and said, "After I have been there I must visit Rome also."

Demetrius a maker of silver shrines creates a great disturbance

²⁸About this time there arose a great disturbance in Ephesus about the Way. ²⁹A silversmith named Demetrius who made silver shrines of the goddess Diana^{F*} called together his craftsmen along with other craftsmen in the same trade.

³⁰He said to them, "Men, you know that from this trade we earn our living. But this man Paul has led large numbers of people to change their religion and teaches that gods made with hands are not gods at all."

³¹"Therefore there is a danger that our trade will not only lose its good name, but also that the temple of the great goddess Diana will be scorned and stripped of her majesty that brings all the world to worship her."

³²"When the craftsmen heard these words they were aroused to anger and began shouting, "Great is Diana!"

The whole city of Ephesus in an uproar

³³Soon the whole city was in an uproar, and the crowd rushed together to the public theatre dragging two of Paul's travelling companions with them. ³⁴Paul wanted to appear before the crowd but the believers prevented him.

³⁵The people were in confusion, some were shouting one thing and some another. Most of them did not even know why they were there.

³⁶Then the crowd all chanted in unison for about two hours, "Great is Diana of Ephesus!"

The city scribe finally quietens the crowd

³⁷Finally the city scribe quieted the crowd by saying, "Men of Ephesus, does not all the

*²⁵ The drachma was a silver coin worth about a days wages.

*²⁸ Diana, also known as Artemis, was a Greek fertility goddess whose immoral rites involved prostitution. Her magnificent temple in Ephesus was one of the seven wonders of the world and many visitors came to see it. The sale of silver shrines was evidently a lucrative business.

*¹⁸ The province of Asia was not the vast area known by that name today, but rather a portion of what is now Turkey.

ACTS 19

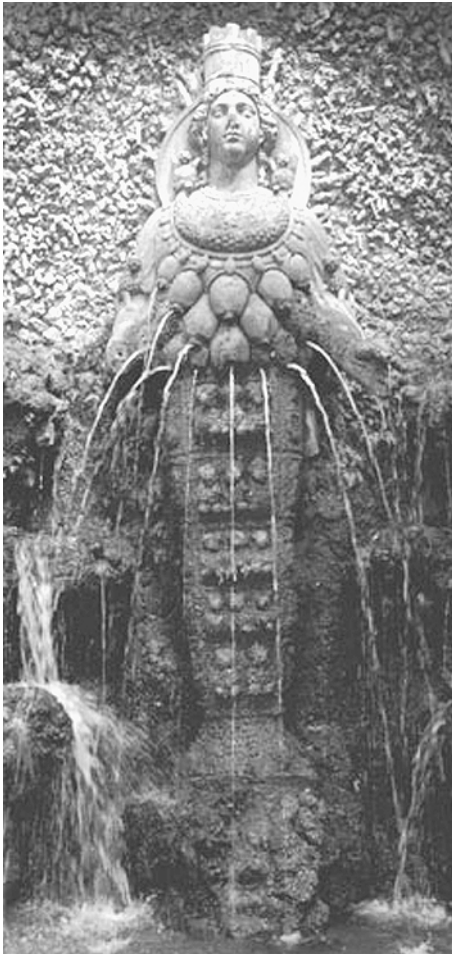
world know that the city of Ephesus is the guardian of the temple of the great Diana, and of her image which fell from the sky?

³⁸Therefore since these facts are true you ought to be quiet and not do anything rash.”

³⁹“You have brought these men here though they have neither robbed the temple nor blasphemed our goddess.”

⁴⁰“If Demetrius and his craftsmen have a grievance, the courts are open and there is the governor. They can lay charges.”

⁴¹“As it is we are in danger of being charged with rioting because of today’s events, and we would not be able to account for this commotion since there is no reason for it.” And having said this he dismissed the crowd.



The multi-breasted goddess Diana The raw material of the original carved image was said to have fallen from the sky. Her worship involved immoral rites.

19

Paul ends his third mission and sets out for Jerusalem

¹When the uproar had ended, Paul sent for the believers, and after encouraging them he departed for Jerusalem.

Paul stops at Macedonia on the way

²He travelled through Macedonia visiting and encouraging the believers on the way. Then he arrived in Greece where he stayed three months.

³But the Jews made a plot against him as he was about to sail for Syria, so he decided to go back through Macedonia.

Paul and his companions stay a week at Troas

⁴Paul was accompanied by Timothy and five other brethren. These men went ahead and waited for us at Troas.

⁵We sailed from Philippi after the Passover and five days later joined them at Troas, where we stayed seven days.

A boy falls from a third floor window and dies

⁶On the first day of the week^{F*} we met together in an upstairs room to break bread. ⁷Paul spoke to the believers and because he intended leaving the next day he carried on speaking until midnight, for there were many lamps in the room.

⁸Seated in a window was a boy named Eutychus, who sank into a deep sleep. Paul talked still longer, then the boy fell to the ground from the third story and was picked up dead.

Paul restores the boy to life

⁹Paul went down and threw himself on the young man and put his arms around him, and then said. “Do not be distressed. His spirit is in him.”

¹⁰Then Paul went upstairs again and broke bread and ate. After speaking until daylight he left. They took the boy home alive and were greatly comforted.

Paul farewells the Ephesian leaders at Miletus

¹¹Paul decided to sail past Ephesus, for he wanted to reach Jerusalem by the day of Pentecost if possible. ¹²So he sent a message for the elders of the church of Ephesus to meet him at the port of Miletus.^{F*}

¹³When they arrived he spoke to them saying, “You know how from the first day with you I served the Lord with humility and tears, though I was severely tested by the plots of the Jews.”

¹⁴“And you know that I have taught you publicly and from house to house, and have declared that all must turn to God in repentance and have faith in our Lord Jesus.”

*6 Sunday. This verse is one of several indicating that the early church held their church meetings on a Sunday, (or the Lord’s day as it appears to have been called) probably in honour of the resurrection of Jesus on that day, or perhaps by direct commandment. The Holy Spirit also came on a Sunday at Pentecost. The Jewish Sabbath was observed on a Saturday. See also John 19:18, I Corinthians 8:33, Revelation 1:11.

*12 Miletus was about 50 kms (a two day journey) south of Ephesus.

15“Now, compelled by the Holy Spirit I am returning to Jerusalem and I have been warned by that same Spirit that prison and hardships await me.”

The Ephesian leaders will not see Paul there again

16“However I consider my life worth nothing to me. I only wish to finish the race and complete the task the Lord Jesus has given me.”

17“*You will not see my face here again, therefore I declare to you today that I am innocent of the blood of all men.*”

A prophetic warning against false teachers

18“Keep watch over yourselves, and the flock of which the Holy Spirit has made you shepherds.”

19“*For after I leave, savage wolves will come in among you and will not spare the flock. Even from your own number, men will arise and distort the truth in order to draw away followers after themselves.*”

20“*So be on your guard. Remember that for three years I never stopped warning you day and night with tears.*”

More blessed to give than to receive

21“*I have not envied the silver, gold or clothing of any man. And you yourselves know that these hands of mine supplied my needs and the needs of my companions.*”

22“*I showed you that we must help the weak by hard toil.*” 23For the Lord Jesus himself said, **‘It is more blessed to give than to receive.’**

Ephesian leaders weep as they embrace and farewell Paul

24When Paul had said these words he knelt down with all of them and prayed, and they wept as they embraced him and kissed him.

25What grieved them most was his statement that they would not see his face there again.

20

Paul stops a week at Tyre

1After we had torn ourselves away, we put out to sea and sailed to Patara.

2Then we boarded another ship crossing to Phoenicia which stopped at Tyre to unload its cargo. 3Finding the believers there we stayed with them seven days. Because of what the Spirit revealed, they urged Paul not to go on to Jerusalem.

Farewells on the beach

4When our time was up, all the believers and their wives and children accompanied us out of the city to the beach where we knelt to pray.

5Then we continued our voyage from Tyre and landed at Ptolemais. We greeted the brethren there and stayed with them for a day.

Paul stays with Philip at Caesarea

6We departed the next day and reached Caesarea and stayed at the house of Philip the evangelist, one of the Seven. 7He had four unmarried daughters who prophesied.

Agabus the prophet prophesies of Paul's imprisonment at Jerusalem

8After we had been there a number of days the prophet Agabus came down from Judea. 9He took Paul's belt and tied his own hands and feet with it then said, “The Holy Spirit says, ***In this way the Jews of Jerusalem will bind the owner of this belt and will hand him over to the Gentiles.***”

Paul prepared to die for the name of the Lord Jesus

10When we heard this we pleaded with Paul not to go up to Jerusalem. But he answered, “Why are you weeping and breaking my heart?”

11I am ready not only to be bound, but also to die in Jerusalem for the name of the Lord Jesus.”

Paul and his companions arrive in Jerusalem

12After this we set out for Jerusalem and some of the believers from Caesarea came up with us.

13When we arrived at Jerusalem the brethren received us warmly.

They report to James the presiding elder

14The next day we all went to see James.^{F*} All the elders were present with him.

15Paul greeted them and reported in detail what God had done among the Gentiles through his ministry. When they heard this they praised God.

Paul warned of ill feelings toward him

16Then they said to Paul, “You see brother how many thousands of Jews have believed, and all of them are zealous for the Law. 17But they have been informed that you teach the Jews who live among the Gentiles to turn away from the Law of Moses and not to circumcise their children or live according to our customs.”

Paul advised to be seen obeying the Law of Moses regarding purification

18“*So do as we advise you. There are four men with us who have made a vow. Take these men and purify yourself with them and pay their expenses so that they can have their heads shaved.*” 19Then all will know there is no truth in these reports about you but that you yourself live in obedience to the Law.”

Paul seized by Jews visiting Jerusalem from the province of Asia

20So the next day Paul took the men and purified himself along with them.

21When the seven days of purification were nearly over, some visiting Jews from the province of Asia saw Paul at the Temple. 22They immediately stirred up the whole crowd and seized him shouting, “Men of Israel help us! This is the man who teaches all men everywhere against our people and our Law, and this Temple. And besides he has brought a Greek into the Temple courtyard and defiled this holy place.”

*14 The presiding elder or bishop of the church. See note on Acts 11:16.

ACTS 20

²³They had previously seen Trophimus in the city with Paul and assumed that Paul had taken him into the Temple.

All Jerusalem aroused

²⁴The whole city was aroused and people came running from all directions. They dragged Paul from the Temple and immediately the gates were closed.

The Roman commander saves Paul from death

²⁵While they were trying to kill him, news reached the commander of the Roman garrison that the city was in an uproar. ²⁶He at once took some soldiers and ran into the crowd. When the Jews saw the commander and his soldiers they stopped beating Paul.

Paul arrested and bound with chains

²⁷The commander arrested Paul and ordered him bound with chains.

The commander tries to obtain the truth

²⁸Then he spoke to the crowd and asked who the man was and what he had done. Some in the crowd shouted one thing and some another.

²⁹The commander could not obtain the truth because of the uproar so he ordered that Paul be taken into the barracks.

³⁰When Paul reached the steps, the violence of the crowd became so great that he had to be carried by the soldiers. The crowd kept shouting, "Away with him!"

Paul speaks to the crowd

³¹As the soldiers were about to take Paul inside the barracks the commander said to him, "Are you the Egyptian who started a revolt and led 4000 terrorists out into the desert some time ago?"

³²Paul answered, "I am a Jew from Tarsus, a citizen of no mean city. Let me speak to the people."

³³So Paul stood on the steps and motioned for the crowd to be silent. When they quietened down he said to them in Hebrew,^{F*} "Brethren and fathers, hear my defence." ³⁴When they heard him speak in Hebrew they became silent.

He tells of his vision on the road to Damascus

³⁵Paul said, "I am a Jew, born in Tarsus but brought up in this city. I was trained thoroughly under Gamaliel^{F*} in the Law of our fathers, being as zealous for God as any of you."

³⁶"I persecuted the followers of the Way to their death, imprisoning both men and women as the high priest and all the Sanhedrin can testify. ³⁷I even obtained letters from them and went to Damascus to bring these people back to Jerusalem to be punished."

³⁸Paul then told how the Lord Jesus had appeared to him as he neared Damascus and

how he had been blinded and later healed at the hand of Ananias.

Paul tells of the Lord appearing to him in the Temple in Jerusalem

³⁹Then he said, "When I returned to Jerusalem and was praying at the Temple, I fell into a trance and saw the Lord."

⁴⁰"He said to me, 'Leave Jerusalem immediately for they will not accept your testimony about me. I will send you far away to the Gentiles.'

The Jews become angry again when Paul mentions the Gentiles

⁴¹The crowd had listened to Paul until he mentioned the Gentiles. Now they shouted, "Rid the earth of him! He is not fit to live!" and they waved their cloaks and flung dust in the air.

The commander orders that Paul be taken into the barracks and flogged

⁴²At this the commander ordered that Paul be taken inside the barracks to be flogged and questioned to find out why the Jews were shouting at him like this.



Military barracks in Jerusalem where Paul was confined.

Paul informs the commander that he is a Roman citizen

⁴³As they were tying Paul down to flog him he said to the centurion standing there, "Is it lawful for you to flog a Roman citizen without trial?"

⁴⁴The centurion went and reported this to his commander who came to Paul and said to him, "Are you a Roman citizen?"

Paul answered, "I am."

⁴⁵The commander said, "I had to pay a large price for my citizenship."

Paul replied, "I was born a citizen of Rome."

The commander becomes alarmed and Paul is not flogged

⁴⁶When those who were about to flog Paul

*33 Hebrew was the native language of the Jews, although the similar Aramaic (also known as Syriac) was the common spoken language of the day.

*35 Gamaliel was a well respected Pharisee and teacher of the Law of Moses.

heard this, they withdrew, and the commander became alarmed at having put a Roman citizen in chains.

21

Paul taken before the Sanhedrin

¹The next day the commander ordered the Sanhedrin to assemble and had Paul stand before them. For he wished to know why Paul was being accused by the Jews.

Paul struck on the mouth by order of the high priest

²Paul said to the Sanhedrin, “Brethren to this day I have fulfilled my duty to God in all good conscience.”

³At these words Ananias the high priest ordered those standing near Paul to strike him on the mouth.

⁴Paul said to him, “God will strike you, you hypocrite. You sit there to judge me according to the Law yet you yourself violate the Law by commanding that I be struck.”

⁵Those who were standing near Paul said, “You dare to insult God’s high priest?”

⁶Paul replied, “I did not realise he was the high priest for it is written, ‘**Do not curse the ruler of your people.**’”

Paul divides the Sanhedrin

⁷Then Paul, knowing that some of the Sanhedrin were Sadducees and the others Pharisees cried out, “Brethren, I am a Pharisee, the son of a Pharisee. I stand on trial today because of my hope in the rising of the dead.”

⁸When he said this, a dispute broke out between the Pharisees and the Sadducees, and the assembly was divided, for Sadducees say there is no life after death and no angel or spirit, but the Pharisees believe both of these things.

⁹There was a great uproar. Some of the teachers of the Law who were Pharisees stood up and argued vigorously. “We find nothing wrong with this man. What if a spirit or an angel has spoken to him?”

Paul taken back into the barracks

¹⁰The dispute became so violent that the commander feared that Paul would be torn to pieces so he ordered the soldiers to take him back to the barracks.

The Lord appears to Paul and tells him he must testify in Rome

¹¹The following night the Lord appeared to Paul and said to him, “**Take courage. For as you have testified about me in Jerusalem so also must you testify about me in Rome.**”

Forty Jews take an oath to kill Paul

¹²The next morning more than forty Jews bound themselves with a solemn oath not to eat or drink until they had killed Paul.

¹³Then they went to the chief priests and elders and said to them, “Have the commander

bring Paul before you again. We are ready to kill him before he gets here.”

Paul’s nephew informs him of the plot

¹⁴But the son of Paul’s sister heard of the plot and he went into the barracks and told Paul. Then Paul called a centurion and said, “Take this young man to the commander, he has something to tell him.”

¹⁵The young man told the commander how more than forty Jews were waiting in ambush for Paul.

The commander decides to send Paul off that night to the Roman governor Felix at Caesarea

¹⁶So the commander called two centurions and gave them orders saying, “Prepare 200 soldiers, 70 cavalry and a mount for Paul, that he may be taken safely to Governor Felix at Caesarea. Depart at the third hour tonight.” ^{F*}

The commander’s letter to Felix

¹⁷Then the commander wrote this letter.

“Claudius Lysias, to His Excellency Governor Felix. Greetings.”

¹⁸“This man was seized by the Jews who were about to kill him, but I came with my men and rescued him, having learned that he is a Roman citizen.”

¹⁹“I brought him before their Sanhedrin desiring to know why they were accusing him and found that the accusation had to do with questions about their religious law. But there was no charge against him that deserved death or imprisonment.”

²⁰“When I was informed of a death plot to be carried out against the man I sent him to you at once. I have also ordered his accusers to come to you and present their case against him.”

Paul taken to Caesarea and kept under guard until his accusers arrive

²¹So travelling by night, the soldiers took Paul as far as Antipatris.^{F*} The following day they let the cavalry go on with him while they returned to Jerusalem.

²²When the cavalry arrived in Caesarea they delivered the letter to the governor and handed Paul over to him.

²³The governor read the letter and said to Paul, “I will hear your case when your accusers arrive,” and he ordered that Paul be kept under guard in the palace.

22

The Jewish leaders travel down to Caesarea to bring charges against Paul

¹Five days later the high priest came down to Caesarea with some of the elders and a lawyer named Tertullus, to bring charges against Paul.

Tertullus the lawyer praises Felix

²When Paul was called in, Tertullus presented his case before Felix saying, “We have

*16 9 pm.

*21 A military garrison about 50 km from Jerusalem.

ACTS 23

enjoyed a long period of peace under you, and your foresight has brought about reforms in this nation. ³Everywhere and in every way most excellent Felix, we acknowledge this with profound gratitude.”

⁴“But to weary you no further, I request that you hear us briefly with your customary graciousness.”

Paul accused of stirring up riots and desecrating the Temple

⁵“We have found this man to be a troublemaker, stirring up riots among the Jews all over the world. He is a ringleader of the Nazarene sect, and even tried to desecrate the Temple, but we seized him.”

⁶“By examining him yourself you will learn the truth about these charges.”

⁷The other Jews also joined in the accusations, asserting that these things were true.

Paul denies the charges

⁸The governor motioned for Paul to speak, so he said to Felix, “I cheerfully make my defence knowing that for many years you have been a judge over this nation.”

⁹“As you can easily verify, it is not more than twelve days since I went up to Jerusalem to worship. My accusers did not find me arguing with anyone or stirring up a crowd at the Temple, nor in the synagogues, nor anywhere else in the city. ¹⁰Neither can they prove the charges they are making against me.”

Paul speaks of his beliefs

¹¹“However I do admit that I worship the God of our fathers as a follower of the Way, which they call a sect.”

¹²“I believe everything laid down in the Law and all that is written in the Prophets, and I have the same hope in God as these men accept, that there will be a resurrection of both the righteous and the wicked. ¹³Therefore I do my best to keep my conscience clear before God and man.”

Felix adjourns the hearing without a decision

¹⁴Then Felix who was acquainted with the Way adjourned the hearing saying, “When Lysias the commander comes, I will decide your case.”

Paul kept under guard but given some freedom

¹⁵He ordered the centurion to keep Paul under guard but to give him some freedom and to allow his friends to take care of his needs.

Felix and his Jewish wife hear Paul speak about his faith in Jesus Christ

¹⁶Several days later, Felix again sent for Paul and he listened to him with his wife Drusilla who was a Jew. Paul spoke about his faith in Christ Jesus.

¹⁷However when Paul spoke of righteousness, self-control, and the judgement to come, Felix began to fear and said, “That is sufficient for now. When I find it convenient I will send for you again.”

Felix hopes that Paul will bribe him for his release

¹⁸At the same time he hoped that Paul would offer him a bribe so he sent for him often and talked with him.

Felix succeeded as governor by Festus

¹⁹Two years passed by and Felix was succeeded as governor by Festus. But as Felix wanted to grant a favour to the Jews he left Paul in prison.^{F*}

23

Festus urged by the Jewish leaders to send Paul to Jerusalem so they can kill him

¹Three days after arriving in Caesarea, Festus went up to Jerusalem. ²There the chief priests and Jewish leaders reported to Festus the charges against Paul and urgently requested him to have Paul transferred to Jerusalem, for they planned to kill him along the way.

³Festus answered, “If this man has done something wrong let some of your leaders return with me to Caesarea and accuse him there.”

Festus convenes a court in Caesarea

⁴After spending about ten days in Jerusalem, Festus returned to Caesarea and the next day convened a court and ordered that Paul be brought in.

The Jews unable to prove their charges against Paul

⁵The Jews who had travelled back with Festus from Jerusalem made many serious charges against Paul, but could not prove any of them.

Paul appeals to Caesar

⁶Then Paul made his defence saying, “I have done nothing wrong against the Law of the Jews, nor against the Temple, nor against Caesar.”

⁷Festus wishing to please the Jews said to Paul, “Are you willing to go up to Jerusalem and stand trial before me there on these charges?”

⁸Paul answered, “I am now standing before Caesar’s court where I ought to be tried. ⁹I have not wronged the Jews as you yourself know very well. If I were guilty of doing anything deserving death I would not refuse to die.”

¹⁰“If the charges brought against me by these Jews are false, then no one has the right to hand me over to them. I appeal to Caesar.”

¹¹Festus conferred with his council and then declared, “You have appealed to Caesar so to Caesar you shall go.”

King Agrippa and Bernice ask to hear Paul

¹²A few days later, King Agrippa and Bernice^{F*} arrived at Caesarea to pay their

^{*19} Felix had been recalled to Rome to answer allegations of misrule and was no doubt anxious not to antagonise the Jews in any way.

^{*12} Agrippa 2 was the last of the Herod vassal kings. He was the son of Herod Agrippa 1 who killed James the apostle. Bernice was his sister.

respects to Festus. ¹³Festus discussed Paul's case with the king. Agrippa said, "I would like to hear the man myself."

A hearing is convened with great pomp

¹⁴So the next day Agrippa and Bernice came with great pomp and entered the audience room with the leading men of the city, and Paul was brought in.

¹⁵Festus said, "King Agrippa and all present with us, you see this man, the whole Jewish community in Jerusalem want him put to death."

¹⁶"However I found that he had done nothing deserving of death, and as he made an appeal to the Emperor Caesar I have decided to send him to Rome. ¹⁷But I have nothing definite to write to His Majesty about him, therefore I have brought him before all of you and especially before you King Agrippa, that as a result of this investigation I may have something to write. ¹⁸For I think it unreasonable to send a prisoner without specifying the charges against him."

¹⁹King Agrippa then said to Paul, "You have permission to speak."

Paul begins his defence

²⁰Paul began his defence by saying, "King Agrippa, I am fortunate to stand before you today as you are well acquainted with Jewish customs and controversies. Therefore I beg of you to hear me patiently."

²¹"Ever since I was a child I have lived as a Pharisee, the strictest sect of our religion. ²²And now I stand here on trial today because of a promise of God made to our ancestors."

²³"Why should any of you consider it incredible that God raises the dead?"

Paul tells of his earlier persecution of the church

²⁴"I was convinced that I should do all possible to oppose the name of Jesus of Nazareth. I imprisoned many of the saints and when they were put to death I cast my vote against them."

²⁵"I went from synagogue to synagogue to have them punished. I tried to force them to blaspheme. In my obsession against them I even went to foreign cities to persecute them."

Paul speaks of his vision on the road to Damascus

²⁶"On one of these journeys, to Damascus, at about noon O king as I was on the road I saw a light from heaven brighter than the sun, shining around me and my companions."

²⁷"We all fell to the ground and I heard a voice say to me in Aramaic, 'Saul, Saul, why do you persecute me? It hurts to kick against the goads.'^{F*} ²⁸I am Jesus whom you are persecuting. I have appeared to you to appoint you a witness of what you have seen of me, and what I will yet show you."

²⁹"I will rescue you from your own people and from the Gentiles, for I am sending you

to them to open their eyes, and turn them from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan to God, so that they may receive forgiveness of sins and a place among those who are sanctified by faith in me."

³⁰"Therefore O King Agrippa I have not been disobedient to the vision from heaven. That is why the Jews seized me in the Temple courts and tried to kill me."

³¹"But I have had the help of God to this very day and so I stand here and testify to small and great alike."

³²"I am saying nothing beyond what the prophets and Moses said would happen, that the Christ would suffer, and being the first to rise from the dead would proclaim truth to his own people and to the Gentiles."

The governor Festus calls Paul mad

³³At this point Festus interrupted and cried out, "You are mad Paul! Your great learning is turning you insane!"

³⁴Paul replied, "I am not insane most excellent Festus. What I am saying is true and reasonable."

Agrippa surprised Paul would think to quickly make him a Christian

³⁵"The king is familiar with these things and I can speak freely to him. King Agrippa do you believe the prophets? I know that you do."

³⁶The king said to Paul, "In a short time you think to make me a Christian?"

³⁷Paul replied, "Short time or long, I pray to God that not only you but all who are listening to me this day may become as I am, except for these chains."

Paul done nothing deserving imprisonment

³⁸Then the king arose and with him the governor and Bernice and all those sitting with them, and left the audience room. As they were leaving they said to one another, "This man is doing nothing deserving death or imprisonment."

³⁹King Agrippa said to Festus, "The man could have been set free had he not appealed to Caesar."

24

Paul taken on a ship for Rome

¹Now the time came for Paul to sail for Rome. He and some other prisoners were placed in the charge of a centurion named Julius and we boarded a ship and put out to sea.

²The next day we landed at Sidon, and Julius in kindness to Paul allowed him to visit his friends that they might provide for his needs.

³From there we put out to sea again and sailed above Cyprus as the winds were against us and landed at Myra. ⁴There the centurion found an Egyptian ship sailing for Italy and put us aboard.

Difficult sailing conditions

⁵We made slow headway for many days and when the wind did not allow us to hold our

*27 A goad is a long spiked stick for prodding oxen.

ACTS 24

course we sailed along the south coast of Crete, with difficulty, and came to Fair Havens.

⁶Much time had been lost and sailing had already become dangerous as by now it was after the Fast.^{F*}

Paul prophesies disaster if they continue sailing

⁷Then Paul prophesied saying, ***“Men, I can see that our voyage will be with danger and heavy loss, not only to the ship and cargo but also to our own lives.”***

⁸However the centurion heeded the advice of the pilot and owner of the ship rather than that of Paul.

The ship attempts to sail on to Phoenix

⁹Since the harbour of Fair Havens was not suitable to winter in, the majority decided that we should attempt to sail further along the coast of Crete to the more sheltered harbour at Phoenix and winter there.

¹⁰When a gentle south breeze began to blow they thought they had obtained the wind they needed and weighed anchor.

A hurricane-force wind catches the ship and drives it out to sea

¹¹However before long a wind of hurricane force known as the north-easter swept down from the island. ¹²The ship was caught by the storm and could not be headed into the wind. We were driven before it and were barely able to bring the lifeboat aboard.

¹³When the men had hoisted it aboard and made it secure, they passed ropes under the ship itself to hold it together, fearing they would run aground on the sandbars.

¹⁴Then they put out a sea anchor^{F*} and so we were driven along.

The storm continues for many days

¹⁵We took such a violent battering from the storm that the next day we began to throw the cargo overboard.^{F*}

¹⁶On the third day, we threw the ship’s tackle overboard.

¹⁷When neither sun nor stars appeared for many days, and the storm continued to rage, we gave up hope of being saved.

An angel visits Paul and assures him of the safety of all on the ship

¹⁸After the men had gone a long time without food, Paul stood before them and said, “Men, you should have taken my advice not to sail from Crete and spared yourselves this damage and loss.”

¹⁹Then he prophesied saying, ***“But now I urge you, keep up your courage. Not one of you will be lost, only the ship will be destroyed.”***

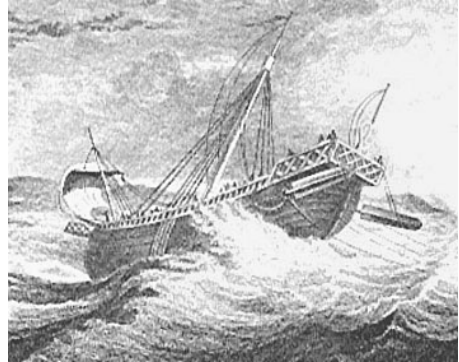
*6 The Jewish Day of Atonement in late Sept called Yom Kippur. Sailing was not recommended in the Mediterranean after mid-Sept.

*14 A sea anchor is a bucket-like device or any heavy object towed through the water from the bow of the boat not under power to create drag to keep the front headed into the wind and to slow the pace of wind drift.

*15 The ship’s cargo was grain (verse 31).

²⁰***“For last night an angel of the God whom I serve stood beside me and said, ‘Fear not Paul. You must stand trial before Caesar, therefore God has graciously given you the lives of all who sail with you.’”***

²¹***“So keep up your courage men for I have faith in God that it will be just as he has said. Nevertheless we will run aground on an island.”***



Ship typical of the kind on which Paul sailed.

The sailors sense land near by

²²On the fourteenth night we were still being driven, then about midnight the sailors sensed that we were approaching land.

²³They took soundings and found twenty fathoms. A short time later they found the water only fifteen fathoms deep.

²⁴Fearing that we would be dashed against rocks they dropped four anchors from the stern and prayed for daylight.

The sailors plan to escape in the lifeboat

²⁵In an attempt to escape from the ship the sailors let the lifeboat down into the sea on the pretence that they were going to lower some anchors from the bow.

The soldiers cut the lifeboat free and let it go

²⁶Paul said to the centurion and the soldiers, ***“Unless these sailors stay with the ship, you cannot be saved.”***

²⁷So the soldiers cut the ropes that held the lifeboat and let it go.

Paul urges everybody to eat and prophesies that no life will be lost

²⁸Just before dawn, Paul urged everyone to eat saying, “For the last fourteen days you have been in constant suspense and have gone without food. Now I urge you to take some food to survive.”

²⁹Then he prophesied saying, ***“Not one of you will lose a single hair from his head.”***

³⁰After Paul said this he took some bread and gave thanks to God in front of them all. Then he broke it and began to eat. They were all encouraged by this and ate some food themselves.

276 on board the ship

³¹Altogether there were 276 of us on board. When we had eaten we lightened the ship by throwing the rest of the grain into the sea.

The sailors try to run the ship aground on a sandy beach

³²When daylight came nobody recognised the land, but the sailors saw a bay with a sandy beach and decided to run the ship aground if they could.

³³So they cut loose the anchors and left them in the sea and at the same time untied the ropes that held the rudders. Then they hoisted the foresail to the wind and steered for the beach.

The ship strikes a sandbar and begins to break up

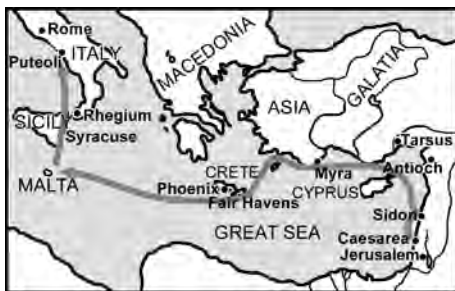
³⁴But the ship struck a sandbar and the bow stuck fast and soon the stern began to break up in the pounding surf.

The prisoner's lives spared

³⁵The soldiers had planned to kill the prisoners to prevent any of them from escaping, but the centurion wanting to spare Paul's life kept them from carrying out their plan.

All reach land safely

³⁶He ordered those who could swim to jump overboard and swim to land. The rest were to get there on planks or pieces of the wreckage. In this way all of us reached land safely.



Paul's sea voyage to Rome.

25

The land is the island of Malta

¹Once on shore we learned that the island was called Malta.

Paul bitten by a viper driven out of a fire on the beach

²The islanders showed us unusual kindness. They built a fire and welcomed us all, for it had begun to rain and was cold.

³Paul gathered a pile of brushwood, but as he put it on the fire a viper driven out by the heat fastened on to his hand.

The islanders awed when Paul is unaffected by the poison

⁴When the islanders saw the snake hanging from Paul's hand they said to one another,

"This man must be a murderer and although he escaped from the sea, justice is not allowing him to live." ⁵But Paul shook the snake off into the fire.

⁶The people expected to see Paul swell or suddenly fall down dead, but after waiting a long time and seeing nothing happen to him they changed their minds and said that he was a god.

Publius, the chief man cares for Paul and his companions

⁷There was an estate nearby that belonged to Publius the chief man of the island. He welcomed us into his home and for three days entertained us hospitably.

All the sick on the island healed by Paul

⁸His father was sick in bed suffering from fever and dysentery. Paul went in to see him, and after prayer, laid his hands on him and healed him. ⁹Then the rest of the sick on the island came and were also healed.

The islanders honour Paul and his companions

¹⁰The islanders honoured us in many ways, and when we were ready to sail they furnished us with the supplies we needed.



St Paul's Bay in Malta where Paul was shipwrecked.

Paul arrives in Rome

¹¹After three months we put out to sea in an Egyptian ship that had wintered at the island.

¹²It had the figurehead of the twin gods Castor and Pollux.

¹³We put in at Syracuse, Sicily for three days and then again set sail. We arrived at Rhegium on the coast of Italy and the next day reached Puteoli.^{F*} ¹⁴There we found some brethren who invited us to spend a week with them. After that we went on to Rome.

Paul allowed to live with just one soldier to guard him

¹⁵The brethren in Rome had heard we were coming and travelled out to meet us. ¹⁶At the sight of these men Paul thanked God and was encouraged.

¹⁷When we arrived in Rome, Paul was allowed to live by himself, with just one soldier to guard him.

*13 Puteoli was the chief sea port of Rome but the city itself was 125 kms further north.

ACTS 25

Paul speaks with the Jewish leaders in Rome

¹⁸Three days later Paul called together the leaders of the Jews in Rome and said to them, "My brethren, though I have done nothing against our people or the customs of our fathers, I was arrested in Jerusalem and handed over to the Romans."

¹⁹"They examined me and wished to release me for I was not guilty of any crime deserving death. ²⁰But when the Jews objected I was compelled to appeal to Caesar."

²¹"For this reason I have asked to speak with you. It is because of the Hope of Israel that I am bound with this chain."

The Jewish leaders want to hear more

²²They replied, "We have not received any word from Jerusalem concerning you, but we want to hear what your beliefs are. ²³We know that people everywhere speak against this sect."

Paul teaches a large number of Jews about Jesus

²⁴So they arranged to meet Paul on a certain day and came to his lodging in large numbers. ²⁵From morning until evening he taught them

regarding the kingdom of God and tried to convince them about Jesus from the scriptures.

Some believe but most do not

²⁶Some believed while others disbelieved, and they argued among themselves.

²⁷They departed when Paul made this final statement, "The Holy Spirit spoke the truth to your forefathers when he said through Isaiah the prophet, '**You will hear but never understand. You will see but never perceive.** ²⁸**For the hearts of these people are hardened and their ears are dull and their eyes are unseeing, otherwise they would understand and repent and be healed.**'"^{F*}

²⁹"Therefore I want you to know that God's salvation has been sent to the Gentiles, and they will listen."

Paul stayed in Rome two years

³⁰For two whole years Paul stayed in Rome in his own rented house and welcomed all who came to see him.

³¹Boldly and without hindrance he preached the kingdom of God and taught about the Lord Jesus Christ.^{F*}

*28 This scripture of Isaiah is found in Micah 1:24-25.

*31 Paul was released after two years (about AD 63) and went on a fourth mission which included a visit to Spain. Approx two years later he was again imprisoned in Rome and eventually beheaded by the emperor Nero about AD 66.

JAMES

The book of James is generally regarded as the plainest book in the New Testament and is a favourite of many Christians who appreciate its simple, practical nature.

It contains the core teachings of Jesus Christ especially those he taught during the Sermon on the Mount and also emphasises the need for good works.

The question as to whether good works are necessary to ensure Eternal Life after a believer has repented, been baptised and received the Holy Spirit has long divided Christians. Some of Paul's writings, if taken out of context can give the impression that a one-time sincere confession of faith that Jesus is the Christ is sufficient alone to gain Eternal Life (Romans 5:1). However James points out that even demons believe as much (James 2:13), and makes his well known statement "*faith without works is dead*" (James 2:11). Even Paul himself states that we are "*created to do good works which God prepared in advance for us to do*" (Ephesians 1:23) and the Holy Spirit in Revelation says, "*their deeds will follow them*" (Revelation 11:17).

In line with this, Jesus taught that only "*he who endures to the end will be saved*" (Matt-Mark-Luke 28:28). Jesus also taught the value of and need for good works in the parable of the talents (Matt-Mark-Luke 29:11-21). In this parable, two diligent servants who doubled their talents (a large amount of silver used as money) were highly commended, whereas a third fearful servant who buried his talent in the ground was condemned by his master who then commanded, "*Take the one talent from him and give it to him who has ten talents. For to everyone who has, more will be given*" (Matt-Mark-Luke 29:20).

Also in his parable of the sower, Jesus illustrates that those who at first believe and accept the gospel, can easily fall away, and that even among those who endure there are varying levels of performance, ie "*... by enduring produce a crop. Some thirty-fold, some sixty-fold, and some a hundred fold*" (Matt-Mark-Luke 14:3-18). That this variation in Christian performance has eternal consequences is shown in Revelation chapter 2 where the Lord in reporting on the condition of the seven churches around Ephesus harshly condemns lukewarm Christians saying, "*because you are lukewarm, neither hot nor cold, I will spew you out of my mouth.*"

Paul himself was a shining example of a Christian who did good works, obeyed the commandments, and endured to the end. He like Jesus also taught that there would be varying rewards or degrees of glory for believers in the resurrection of the dead, according to the deeds of each believer (1 Corinthians 8:24, Hebrews 4:27 and Revelation 2:26). The Lord will no doubt take into account each person's native ability and spiritual gifts for Jesus said, "*from him who is given much, much is expected*" (Matt-Mark-Luke 21:46).

The Bible therefore clearly teaches that none of us are 'saved' unless we endure faithfully to the end, (see also Hebrews 2:6, 22-27). And that a far greater reward awaits believers who do good works, keep all of the commandments and use their gifts of the Holy Spirit for the benefit of others, than for believers who just drift through life.

Love in action (ie charity) appears to be the bottom line of the gospel, rather than belief alone in Jesus Christ, for on the day of judgement Jesus will say to the righteous, "*Come you blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the creation of the world. For I was hungry and you fed me, I was thirsty and you gave me a drink, I was a stranger and you welcomed me in, etc,*" (Matt-Mark-Luke 29:25-26).

James the author of this book was a brother of Jesus, both he and Jesus being born of the same mother Mary, however James was conceived by Joseph the carpenter (Matt-Mark-Luke 14:49) not by God the Father as was his older brother.

James is also known as James the Just and was an important leader in the early church. He appears to have been the presiding elder or bishop over the entire church (see Acts 14:11 and note). All that is written about him reveals that he was highly respected. He was also favoured with a special appearance from his brother Jesus soon after his resurrection (1 Corinthians 8:4). He was put to death by the Jewish high priest in Jerusalem 62 AD.

JAMES 1

AUTHOR James, a brother of Jesus Christ.

Resist the devil and he will flee from you. Draw near to God and he will draw near to you. James 3:6.

CONTENTS

Chapter

James addresses the twelve tribes of Israel	1	Wisdom from above	2
Trials bring about spiritual maturity	1	Teachers to be judged more strictly	2
God does not tempt anyone	1	Coveting the cause of your feuds and disputes	3
If any lack wisdom let him ask of God in faith	1	Why you often do not receive when you ask of God ...	3
The lowly will be exalted and the rich laid low	1	Friendship with the world is opposition to God	3
Every good gift comes from above	1	Repent and humble yourselves before the Lord	3
Be quick to listen, slow to speak and slow to anger ..	1	Do not speak ill of one another	3
Reject evil and live the word	1	Say 'If it be the Lord's will' when planning the future ...	3
You will be blessed in all that you do	1	Not to do good is a sin	3
Pure religion is caring for orphans and widows	1	Woe to unjust rich men	3
Do not show favouritism to the rich	2	Be patient until the Lord returns	3
Love your neighbour as yourself	2	Let your yes be yes and your no be no	3
We will be judged according to the mercy we show ..	2	Do not complain about each other	3
Faith without works is dead	2	Let the sorrowful pray and the joyful sing praise	3
Even demons believe in one God	2	Heal the sick by anointing and prayer	3
Abraham and Rahab showed faith	2	Confess your sins to one another to be healed	3
Control of the tongue	2	The prayer of a righteous man has great power	3
Fresh and bad water cannot flow from same spring ..	2	Turn sinners from the error of their ways	3

Bold The Lord or an angel speaking.

Bold italics A prophet speaking under inspiration.

1

James addresses the twelve tribes of Israel

¹James, a servant of God and of the Lord Jesus Christ. To the twelve tribes scattered among the nations. Greetings.

Trials bring spiritual maturity

²Consider it pure joy my brethren whenever you face trials. ³For the testing of your faith develops endurance, and endurance brings spiritual maturity.

⁴When you have proven yourself you will receive the crown of Eternal Life that God has promised to those who love him.

God does not tempt anyone

⁵Let no one say when tempted, "God is tempting me" for God does not tempt anyone. But each one is lured and enticed by his own lustful desires.

⁶Then after desire has conceived it gives birth to sin, and when sin matures it gives birth to Death.^F* Be not deceived brethren.

If any lack wisdom let him ask of God in faith

⁷If any of you lack wisdom let him ask of God, who gives generously to all and it will be given him.

⁸But ask in belief, without doubt, for the man who doubts is like a wave of the ocean, blown and tossed by the wind. Such a man should not think he will receive anything from the Lord.

The lowly will be exalted and the rich laid low

⁹Let the brother who is lowly rejoice, for he will be exalted.

¹⁰But he who is rich takes pride in that which will bring him low. ¹¹The rich man will pass away like a wild flower whose beauty withers when the sun rises with scorching heat.

Every good gift comes from above

¹²Every good and perfect gift comes from above, from the Father of Light who changes not.

¹³By his will he brought us forth through his Word of Truth, that we might be a kind of first fruits of all his creatures.

Be quick to listen and slow to speak and anger

¹⁴My dear brothers, be quick to listen, slow to speak, and slow to anger. For anger does not bring about God's righteousness.

Reject evil and live the word

¹⁵Reject the immoral filth and evil that is all around you. Humbly accept the word planted in you, which can save you. ¹⁶But do not just hear the word, do as it says.

¹⁷For he who hears the word but does not do what it says is like a man who sees himself in a mirror for the first time, then immediately goes away and forgets what he looks like.

He who lives by the word will be blessed in all he does

¹⁸But the man who earnestly studies this

*⁶ The Second Death which is to be cut off forever from the presence of God (see Revelation 16:19 and note).

perfect law that gives freedom, and continues to live by it, will be blessed in all he does.

Pure religion is caring for orphans and widows

¹⁹Religion that God our Father accepts as pure and undefiled is this: to care for orphans and widows in their affliction, and to remain untainted by the world.

2

Do not show favouritism to the rich

¹Brethren, as believers in our glorious Lord Jesus Christ, do not show favouritism. ²If a rich man comes into your meeting wearing a gold ring and fine clothes, and a poor man in shabby clothes also comes in, and you say to the rich man, "Here is a good seat for you," but to the poor man you say, "Stand there," or "Sit on the floor," have you not discriminated and become unjust judges?

³Has not God chosen those who are poor in the eyes of the world, to be rich in faith and inherit the kingdom he promised to those who love him?

⁴Is it not the rich who exploit you and drag you into court? And is it not the rich who slander the noble name of him to whom you belong?

Love your neighbour as yourself

⁵If you are keeping the royal law found in scripture, "**Love your neighbour as yourself**," you are doing right. ⁶But if you show favouritism, you sin and break the law.

⁷For whoever keeps the whole law but stumbles on just one point is guilty of breaking it all.

We will be judged according to the mercy we show

⁸So speak and act knowing that you will be judged by the law that frees us. For judgement will be without mercy to him who is unmerciful. Yet mercy triumphs over judgement.

Faith without works is dead

⁹What good is it brethren, if a man claims to have faith but does no good works? Will his faith alone save him?

¹⁰Suppose a brother lacked for clothing and daily food and one of you said to him, "Go in peace and be warm and well fed," but did not give him clothing or food, what good would that do? ¹¹Faith without works is dead. ^{F*}

¹²Says one, "You have faith and I have works." Show me your faith without good works. However I by my good works can show you my faith.

Even demons believe in one God

¹³You believe there is one God? You do well. But even the demons believe that, and shudder. ¹⁴Senseless man, do you require evidence that faith without good works is useless?

Abraham and Rahab showed faith

¹⁵Was not our ancestor Abraham considered righteous for offering his son Isaac on the

altar? You see how his faith and his works acted together. His faith was made complete by what he did. ¹⁶A man is justified^{F*} by his good works, not by his faith alone.

¹⁷In the same way was not Rahab the harlot considered righteous for what she did when she gave lodging and help to the spies in Jericho?

¹⁸As the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without good works is dead.

Control of the tongue

¹⁹Brethren, if anyone considers himself a servant of God yet does not control his tongue, he deceives himself. His religion is worthless.

²⁰For a man who is faultless in speech is a perfect man, able to keep his whole body in check.

²¹We put bits into the mouths of horses to make them obey us and thereby turn the whole animal. And ships, though large and driven by strong winds are steered by a small rudder.

²²Likewise the tongue, though a small part of the body, has a powerful effect. ²³A great forest is set afire by a small spark.

²⁴The tongue too can set on fire, and can corrupt the whole man, setting his whole life ablaze. ²⁵All creatures have been tamed by man, but who can tame the tongue? It is a restless evil, full of deadly poison.

²⁶With the tongue we both praise our Lord and Father, and curse men who have been created in God's likeness.

Both fresh and bad water cannot flow from the same spring

²⁷Out of the same mouth come praises and curses. ²⁸Brethren this should not be. Can fresh and bad water flow from the same spring? Can a fig tree bear olives?

The wisdom from above

²⁹Who is wise among you? Let him show it by his good works, done in the humility that comes with wisdom.

³⁰Let not the man who harbours envy and selfish ambition in his heart, boast of his wisdom. For such wisdom does not come from above, but is of the devil and brings disorder and evil.

³¹But the wisdom from above is pure and peaceable, considerate and submissive, full of mercy and good fruits, impartial and sincere. And he who sows in peace reaps a harvest of righteousness.

Teachers to be judged more strictly

³²Not too many of you should aspire to be teachers brethren. For we who teach will be judged more strictly.

3

Coveting is the cause of feuds and disputes

¹Where do the feuds and disputes among you

*11 See note on importance of good works in introduction.

*16 To be justified means to be purified from all guilt of sin.

JAMES 3

originate? Do they not come from the cravings that battle within you?

²You covet and cannot have, so you quarrel and fight. You desire and do not get, so you resort to murder.

Why you often do not receive when you ask of God

³Why do you not have? Because you do not ask of God. And why when you do ask do you not often receive? Because you ask with wrong intent, that you may consume what you get on your lusts.

Friendship with the world is opposition to God

⁴Adulterers! Do you not know that friendship with the world is opposition to God? ⁵Do you suppose the scripture says in vain, ***“He yearns jealously over the Spirit he caused to live in us.”***

Resist the devil and he will flee from you

⁶Be submissive then to God. Resist the devil and he will flee from you. Draw near to God and he will draw near to you.

Repent and humble yourselves before the Lord

⁷Wash your hands you who sin. Purify your hearts you double-minded men. Grieve, mourn and weep. Change your laughter to mourning, your joy to sorrow. ⁸Humble yourselves before the Lord and he will lift you up.

Do not speak ill of one another

⁹Brethren, do not speak ill of one another. He who speaks ill against his brother judges him.

¹⁰There is only one judge, the one who is able to save and destroy. Who are you to judge your neighbour?

Say, ‘If it be the Lord’s will’ when planning for the future

¹¹Now to you who say, “We will go to this or that town for a year to carry on business and make money.” Why you do not even know what lies ahead of you tomorrow. ¹²What is your life but a mist that appears for a short time and then vanishes.

¹³Instead you should say, “If it be the will of the Lord I will do this or that.” As it is you boast, and all such boasting is wrong.

Not to do good is a sin

¹⁴When a man knows the good he should do and does not do it, he sins.

Woe to unjust rich men

¹⁵Hear now you rich men, weep and wail because of the misery that will come upon you. Your wealth will rot and moths will eat your clothes. Your gold and silver will corrode and testify against you and devour your flesh like fire.

¹⁶The wages you failed to pay your harvesters are crying out against you and have reached the ears of the Lord Almighty. ¹⁷You have lived on the earth in luxury and self-indulgence and have murdered innocent men.

Be patient until the Lord returns

¹⁸Be patient brethren until the Lord returns. See how the farmer waits for the land to yield its crop. So you too be patient and stand firm, for the Lord’s return is near.^{F*}

¹⁹As an example of patience in the face of suffering consider the prophets of old who spoke in the name of the Lord.

²⁰You have heard of Job’s perseverance and how the Lord rewarded him. The Lord is full of compassion and mercy.

Let your yes be yes and your no be no

²¹Brethren, do not swear by heaven or earth, nor by anything else. Let your yes be yes and your no be no, or you will be condemned.

Do not complain about each other

²²Do not complain about each other or you will be judged. And the Judge is standing at the door.

Let the sorrowful pray and the joyful sing praise

²³Is any one among you sorrowful? Let him pray. Is anyone joyful? Let him sing songs of praise.

Heal the sick by anointing and prayer

²⁴Is any one of you sick? Let him call for the elders of the church to pray over him and to anoint him with oil in the name of the Lord.

²⁵And the prayer offered in faith will make the sick person well. The Lord shall raise him up, and if he has sinned he will be forgiven.

Confess your sins one to another to be healed

²⁶Therefore confess your sins one to another, and pray for each other that you may be healed.

The prayer of a righteous man has great power

²⁷For the fervent prayer of a righteous man has great power. ²⁸Elijah was a man just like us. He prayed fervently that it would not rain, and no rain fell for three and a half years. Again he prayed and the heavens gave rain.

Turn sinners from the error of their ways

²⁹My brethren, if one of you should wander from the truth and another bring him back, remember this: Whoever turns a sinner from the error of his ways will save him from Death and cover a multitude of sins.

*18 In the early days of the Church the return of Jesus was thought to be imminent. See also note on 1 Corinthians 3:18.

1 THESSALONIANS

This letter to the saints at Thessalonica is the earliest of Paul's surviving letters, dating about 51 AD.

Thessalonica was the largest city of Macedonia and was a busy seaport of about 200,000 people. Paul had to leave the city abruptly during his second mission due to the violence of unbelieving Jews (Acts 16:1-8). Apparently Paul feared the worse regarding the Greeks and Jews he had converted there, however after sending Timothy back to visit them and receiving from him a glowing report, Paul was overwhelmed with joy and promptly wrote this letter to them.

Paul clarifies some of the Thessalonians' concerns (probably brought back by Timothy) about the state of the righteous dead, and the second coming of Jesus Christ.

During these early days of the church it was widely believed that the return of Jesus was imminent. This is understandable as the prophecies of Jesus regarding the destruction of Jerusalem (which took place about 20 years after this letter was written) and his second coming were recorded in the gospels in such a way as to be easily confused as one event. Nowadays with the advantage of hindsight it is not difficult to separate the two prophecies.

NOTE: In this Condensed Bible the letters of Paul appear chronologically, whereas in the traditional Bible they are in no particular order and this letter is placed eighth.

AUTHOR

Paul the apostle. (Paul's letters were generally dictated to a scribe, see Romans 8:17.)

Then we who are still alive will be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air, and to live with him forever. 1 Thessalonians 2:14.

CONTENTS

	Chapter		
Paul's introduction	1	Increase your brotherly love	2
God has chosen you	1	Lead a quiet life and work with your own hands	2
For the gospel came to you with power of the Spirit..	1	Jesus will bring the righteous spirits of the dead	2
You became a model for the other churches	1	Righteous dead to be resurrected first	2
You turned from idols to serve God	1	Resurrected and the alive to be lifted up in the air ...	2
We taught you despite strong opposition	1	Time and date of Lord's coming not known	2
We loved you like a mother with her little children ...	1	The day should not surprise you like a thief	2
You are our hope, our joy and our crown	1	We are not appointed to suffer wrath	2
You also suffered from your own countrymen	1	Respect and love those who lead you in the church ...	2
Satan has prevented us returning to you	1	Warn the idle, help the weak and be patient with all ...	2
So I sent Timothy instead	1	Always be kind to one another	2
Timothy has just returned to us with the good news..	1	Pray and give joyful thanks	2
We are comforted now	1	Do not quench the Spirit	2
We pray that we may see you again	1	Test everything and hold to the good	2
May your love increase	1	May you be blameless at the coming of our Lord	2
Do more to please God that you be sanctified	2	Pray for us and greet the brethren	2
Avoid all sexual immorality	2	Read this letter to them	2

1

Paul's introduction

¹Paul, Silas and Timothy, to the church of the Thessalonians, in God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ. Grace and peace be to you.

²We always thank God for you in our prayers and remember your good works, produced by faith and prompted by love. And also for your steadfastness inspired by hope in our Lord Jesus Christ.

God has chosen you because the gospel came to you with the power of the Holy Spirit

³We know brethren beloved of God, that he has chosen you, for the gospel came to you with the power and deep conviction of the Holy Spirit.

You became a model for the other churches

⁴You imitated us, and in spite of severe suffering you welcomed the message with the

1 THESSALONIANS 2

joy of the Holy Spirit. ⁵You became a model for all the churches throughout Macedonia and Achaia.^{F*}

You turned from idols to serve God

⁶In truth, your faith in God has become known everywhere, how you turned from idols to serve the living and true God. ⁷And to await the return of his Son Jesus from heaven whom he raised from the dead and who will rescue us from the coming wrath.

We taught you despite strong opposition

⁸Brethren our visit to you was not a failure. Although we had previously suffered in Philippi, we dared to teach you the gospel with the help of God, despite strong opposition.

⁹We never used flattery, nor a mask to disguise greed. Nor did we look for praise. God is our witness.

We loved you like a mother caring for her little children

¹⁰As apostles of Christ we could have been a burden to you, but we were gentle, like a mother caring for her little children.

¹¹We loved you so much that we were delighted to share with you not only the gospel, but our own selves as well.

¹²You remember our toil and hardship brethren, how we worked day and night in order not to be a burden to you. ¹³How we encouraged you and comforted you, and urged you to live lives worthy of God who has called you into his kingdom and glory.

You are our hope, our joy and our crown

¹⁴And you received our words, not as the word of men but as the word of God. You are our hope and our joy and the crown we will glory in when the Lord Jesus returns.

You also suffered from your own countrymen

¹⁵You also suffered from your own countrymen the same things that the churches in Judea suffered from the Jews. They who killed the Lord Jesus and the prophets of old also drove us out.

¹⁶These men displease God and hinder us from speaking to the Gentiles to save them.

¹⁷They heap up their sins to the limit, therefore the wrath of God will come upon them.

Satan has prevented us returning to you

¹⁸Brethren, when we were torn away from you we made every effort to return, but again and again Satan prevented us, so we thought it best to stay in Athens.

¹⁹We were destined for these trials. You remember when we were with you how we kept telling you that we would be persecuted.

So I sent Timothy instead

²⁰When I could wait no longer I sent Timothy our fellow worker to strengthen and encourage you and to enquire about your faith. ²¹For I was afraid that Satan may have tempted you and

our efforts had been in vain.

Timothy has just returned to us with the good news

²²But Timothy has just returned to us from you and brought us the good news about your faith and love. ²³He has told us of your pleasant memories of us and how you long to see us.

We are comforted now

²⁴Brethren, in all our distress we are now comforted. We really live now that we know you are standing firm in the Lord. ²⁵How can we thank God enough for the joy we have in you?

We pray that we may see you again

²⁶Day and night we pray that we may see you again and supply what may be lacking in your faith.

May your love increase

²⁷May the Lord make your love increase and overflow for each other, just as ours does for you. ²⁸May he strengthen your hearts that you be blameless and holy in the presence of our God the Father when our Lord Jesus returns with all his holy ones.^{F*}



Archway in Greek city of Thessalonica).

2

Do more to please God that you be sanctified

¹Finally brethren, we taught you by authority of the Lord Jesus how to live in order to please God, which is how you are now living. ²Now we urge you to do this more and more, for it is God's will that you be sanctified.^{F*}

Avoid all sexual immorality

³Therefore you must avoid all sexual immorality. ⁴Each of you must take a wife for himself in a way that is holy and honourable, not in passionate lust like the heathen who know not God.

⁵The Lord will punish men for all such sins, as we have already warned you. For God did not call us to be impure but to live a holy life.

^{*28} It appears that the Father will accompany Jesus when he returns. See also verse 11 of the next chapter and note on Revelation 1:4.

^{*2} To be sanctified means to become holy in God's eyes.

^{*5} Macedonia was the location of the Thessalonian and Phillipian churches, and Achaia the Corinthian church.

⁶He who rejects this instruction rejects God who gives you his Holy Spirit.

Increase your brotherly love

⁷Now about brotherly love, we need not write you about this, for you have been taught by God and you love all the brethren throughout Macedonia. ⁸Yet we urge you, do more and more.

Lead a quiet life and work with your own hands

⁹Lead a quiet life minding your own business and working with your hands, just as we taught you, so that you may win the respect of unbelievers and not lack for anything.

God will bring with Jesus the righteous spirits of those who have died

¹⁰Now brethren we desire that you not be ignorant about those who die. Nor to grieve over them like unbelieving men who have no hope. ¹¹For Jesus died and rose again, therefore we believe that God will bring with Jesus all those who have died in him.

The righteous dead to be resurrected first then the believers who are left alive

¹²According to the Lord's word, we who are left alive until the coming of the Lord will not take precedence over those who have died. ¹³For when the Lord comes down from heaven at the loud command from the voice of the archangel and the trumpet call of God, the dead in Christ will rise first.^{F*}

The newly resurrected and those still alive to be lifted up in the air to meet the Lord.

¹⁴Then we who are still alive shall be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air,^{F*} and to live with him forever.

The time and date not known – the Lord will come like a thief in the night

¹⁵As to the time and date of his coming, brethren we cannot inform you, for the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night. ¹⁶While people are saying, "Peace and safety," destruction will come upon them suddenly like labour pains to a pregnant woman, and they will not escape.

The day should not surprise you like a thief

¹⁷But you brethren, are not in darkness so that day should not surprise you like a thief.

¹⁸Since we are sons of light let us be self-disciplined, putting on faith and love as a breastplate and the hope of salvation as a helmet.

We are not appointed to suffer wrath

¹⁹For God has not appointed us to suffer

wrath but to be saved through our Lord Jesus Christ. ²⁰Therefore encourage one another and build each other up as you are doing.

Respect and love those who lead you in the church

²¹Now we plead with you brethren, respect those who are placed over you in the Lord and work hard in serving you. Hold them in the highest regard in love because of their work. Also live in peace with each other.

Warn the idle, help the weak and be patient with all

²²And we urge you brethren, warn those who are idle, encourage the timid, help the weak. Be patient with all.

Always be kind to one another

²³See that no one returns wrong for wrong but are always kind to one another, and to everyone else also.

Pray and give joyful thanks and do not quench the Spirit

²⁴Be joyful always, pray continually and give thanks in all circumstances. Do not quench the fire of the Spirit.

Test everything and hold to the good

²⁵Test everything, hold on to the good and avoid every kind of evil. Do not treat prophecies with contempt.

May you be blameless at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ

²⁶May the God of peace sanctify you wholly, that your spirit, soul and body be blameless at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.

Pray for us, greet the brethren and read this letter to them

²⁷Brethren, pray for us and greet all the brethren with a holy kiss. Have this letter read to them all.

²⁸The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you.



The city walls of Thessalonica.

*13 ie The spirits of the righteous dead that Jesus is to bring with him from Paradise (see verse 11 above) will first unite with their newly resurrected bodies on earth (see Daniel 11:12-13) and then be lifted up again, along with the righteous living saints who are still alive on earth at that time (see following verse). Then after the destruction of the wicked the righteous will again descend upon the earth to reign with Christ (Zechariah chapter 5, Isaiah chapters 11 to 15 and Revelation chapter 15).

*14 Paul also speaks about the first resurrection in 1 Corinthians 8:29.

2 THESSALONIANS

It appears that Paul's first letter to the faithful Thessalonians, plus a second spurious letter or report had alarmed the Thessalonians into thinking that the second coming of Jesus Christ was about to arrive.

Paul in this follow up letter calms their apprehension and points out that the prophecies of an apostasy (a wholesale abandoning of religious belief) and the reign of the 'Man of Sin' or 'Antichrist' (see Revelation chapter 9) have yet to be fulfilled.

Also beginning with this letter, Paul closes with a special hand-written greeting (Paul dictated his letters to a scribe) as a distinguishing mark of this and his future letters to prove their authenticity.

AUTHOR Paul the apostle.

... this Man of Sin is being held back to be revealed at the end time. In that day the Antichrist will be revealed, but the Lord Jesus will destroy him by the breath of his mouth in the splendour of his coming. 2 Thessalonians 1:11-12.

CONTENTS

Chapter

Paul's introduction	1	Satan's power will be seen during rule of Antichrist ... 1
Your faith and love for one another keep on growing 1		But you will be saved to share the glory of the Lord ..1
We boast of your endurance to the other churches ..1		Pray for us brethren
God will repay those who trouble you	1	Avoid any brother who is idle
They will be shut out from the presence of the Lord ..1		If a man will not work he shall not eat
A great apostasy to occur before the Lord returns1		May the Lord grant you peace
The Antichrist to rule	1	I now write a greeting in my own hand
Jesus to destroy the Antichrist at his coming	1	This will be a distinguishing mark of all my letters2

1

Paul's introduction

¹Paul, Silas and Timothy to the church of the Thessalonians. Grace and peace be to you from God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

Your faith and love for one another keep on growing

²Brethren we always thank God for you as your faith and love for one another keep on growing.

We boast of your endurance to the other churches

³We boast to the other churches about your endurance and faith amid your persecutions and trials. ⁴God's judgement of you was right, you are worthy of the kingdom of God.

God will repay those who trouble you when Jesus returns

⁵God is just, and when the Lord Jesus is revealed from heaven in blazing fire with his powerful angels, he will repay those who trouble you, and give you relief. Both you and us.

They will be shut out from the presence of the Lord

⁶They who know not God and reject the gospel of our Lord Jesus will suffer the punishment of Eternal Death, shut out from the majestic presence of the Lord.

A great apostasy to occur and the Antichrist to rule before the Lord returns

⁷Now concerning the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ. Brethren be not alarmed by any prophecy, report or letter, supposedly from us, saying that the day of the Lord is at hand. ⁸Let no one deceive you in this matter, for that day will not come until the great apostasy^{F*} occurs and the Antichrist^{F*} is revealed, the man destined for destruction.

⁹He will oppose and exalt himself over everything that is called God or is worshipped. ¹⁰He will even take over the Temple, proclaiming himself God. Do you not recall that I told you of these things?

Jesus to destroy the Antichrist at his coming

¹¹The conspiracy of sin has already begun in the world, but this Man of Sin is being held back to be revealed at the end time. ¹²In those days the Antichrist will reveal himself, but the Lord Jesus will destroy him by the breath of his mouth in the splendour of his coming.

*8 Apostasy means abandonment of religious belief.

*8 The Anti-Christ, (also known as the Beast) is an arrogant and powerful world leader who will arise in the last days to oppose God and with the help of a false prophet shall perform great miracles that will deceive even believers (Revelation chapter 9). He is to be destroyed at the coming of Christ.

**Satan's power to be seen
during rule of the Antichrist**

¹³The works of Satan will be displayed with the coming of the Antichrist. There will be seen all kinds of counterfeit miracles and wonders.

¹⁴Those who refuse to open their hearts to the truth and be saved, will be deceived. ¹⁵All who delight in wickedness will be condemned.

**But you will be saved to share
in the glory of the Lord**

¹⁶But we thank God for you, brethren, who are loved by the Lord, for from the beginning God chose you to be saved through the sanctifying work of the Spirit and belief in the truth. ¹⁷He called you by the gospel we taught that you might share in the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ.

¹⁸So stand firm brethren. Hold fast to the teachings we passed on to you. The Lord is faithful and will strengthen you and protect you from the evil one.

Pray for us brethren

¹⁹Finally brethren, pray for us that the message of the Lord may spread rapidly and be honoured, just as it was with you. ²⁰And pray that we may be delivered from evil men for not all men have faith.

2

Avoid any brother who is idle

¹Now we command you brethren, avoid any brother who is idle and does not live the teachings you received from us.

²For we were not idle when we were with you, nor did we depend on you for our food. On the contrary we toiled day and night in order not to be a burden to you. ³Not that we do not have the right of support, but we wanted to be a model for you to follow.

If a man will not work he shall not eat

⁴That is why we gave you the rule, 'If a man will not work he shall not eat.'

⁵But we hear that some among you are still idle and are meddlers in the affairs of others.^{F*} Such brethren we command and urge in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ to earn the bread they eat.

⁶If any brother refuses to obey this instruction, cease to associate with him to shame him. Yet regard him not as an enemy but warn him as a brother.

May the Lord grant you peace

⁷Now may the Lord of peace be with you all, and grant you peace at all times and in every way.

**I will distinguish my letters from now on
with a hand written greeting**

⁸I Paul now write this greeting in my own hand which will be the distinguishing mark in all my letters.^{F*}

⁹The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all.

*5 Many Greeks of this era disdained physical work, considering it the duty of slaves and beneath their dignity.

*8 The Thessalonians appear to have received a spurious letter purporting to have come from Paul. See verse 7 of chapter 1.

1 CORINTHIANS

First Corinthians is generally regarded as Paul's most informative letter. He clarifies matters which are of great interest to many Christians, especially the gifts of the Holy Spirit.

Actually this is Paul's second letter to the Corinthians, the first having been lost. At the time of Paul's writing of this letter a reply from the Corinthians to the lost letter had been brought to him in Ephesus by three of the Corinthian church members asking Paul's advice on a number of matters, including marriage, eating of meat offered to idols, speaking in tongues, and the resurrection.

At the same time Paul has heard worrying reports about the church at Corinth — that they have become divided, are conceited, have been taking one another to court, are tolerating incest, and that some of them have been criticising him personally. So Paul first addresses these concerns in this letter and then answers the questions from the Corinthians.

Corinth was the wealthiest and most commercially important city of the province called Achaia by the ruling Romans, but now known as Greece. In Paul's day Corinth had a population of about 600,000 of which about 250,000 were free citizens (mostly Greek), and the rest were slaves. It was a cosmopolitan port city, located on the neck of land that links the European mainland with the large, island-like portion of southern Greece.

The morals and drunkenness of the city were proverbial, as were the number of pagan temples. One of these temples, devoted to Aphrodite the goddess of love was reputed to have had over 1000 'sacred' prostitutes.

Paul spent one and a half years in Corinth on his second mission (Acts 17:10). The city was destroyed by an earthquake in 1858.

AUTHOR Paul the apostle.

Love is patient, love is kind, love does not envy, does not boast, is not proud. Love is not rude, nor self-seeking, nor easily angered, and keeps no record of wrongs. Love delights not in evil but rejoices in truth. Love always protects, always trusts, ever hopes, ever perseveres. Love never fails. 1 Corinthians 7:16-18.

CONTENTS

	Chapter
Paul's introduction	1
Corinthians not lacking any of the gifts of the Spirit ..	1
Divisions among the Corinthians	1
Is Christ divided?	1
The wisdom of man is foolishness	1
God chooses the weak and foolish of the world	1
I did not preach to you with worldly wisdom	1
Yet there is secret knowledge of God	1
We only teach it to the spiritually mature	1
God's secrets not understood without the Spirit	1
You Corinthians still not spiritually mature	1
We must build on the foundation of Jesus Christ	1
At the Lord's coming fire will test your works	1
No more boasting about mere men	1
Jesus will reward according to motives of the heart ..	1
Do not go beyond what is written	1
Faithful men will reign as kings in kingdom of God ...	1
Apostles suffer more than other men	1
Paul like a father to the Corinthians	1
Paul sending Timothy to the Corinthians	1
To remind them what he had taught them	1
Paul to return to Corinth	2
Will find out how much power the arrogant possess ..	2
A case of incest	2
You should have disfellowshipped the man	2
The man to be handed over to Satan	2
That his spirit may be saved	2
Obtain fresh yeast of sincerity and truth	2
Do not associate or eat with any sinful brother	2
Church leaders to only judge those of the church	2
How dare your disputes be judged before world	2
The saints are to judge the world and even angels ...	2
Why not rather suffer wrong than have lawsuits?	2
No sinner will inherit the kingdom of God	2
Former sinners among the Corinthians cleansed	2
I will not be enslaved by sexual immorality	2
He who unites with a harlot becomes one with her ...	2
Flee from sexual immorality	2
Your body is a temple of the Holy Spirit	2
Marriage desirable to avoid temptation to immorality ..	3
Do not deprive your spouse of conjugal rights	3
Paul wishes all men could be like him	3
Believers must not divorce	3
An unbeliever spouse not to be unwillingly divorced ..	3
Unbeliever spouse made holy by believing spouse ..	3
A believer not bound to an unbelieving spouse	3

A convert should remain in the situation he was in ... 3	A variety of spiritual gifts and manifestations 7
Circumcision not necessary 3	Gifts of the Spirit 7
Keeping the commandments is what counts 3	The gifts likened to different parts of the body 7
Single should not marry in view of impending crisis . 3	Gifts and callings ranked in importance 7
Appointed time for return of Christ has grown short . 3	The more excellent gift of love 7
The single able to give undivided devotion to Lord ... 3	Love defined 7
Better to marry than to burn with lust 3	Most gifts will be unnecessary in kingdom of God 7
A widow free to re-marry a believer 3	Only faith, hope and love will remain 7
Food sacrificed to idols 4	Eagerly desire the other spiritual gifts 7
Only one God for us – the Father 4	Especially the gift of prophecy 7
Only one Lord – Jesus Christ 4	What good to the church is speaking in tongues? 7
Food sacrificed to idols 4	Try to excel in gifts that build up the church 7
Food does not bring us near to God 4	Pray to interpret when you speak in a tongue 7
Do not wound the conscience of a weak brother..... 4	What if all spoke in tongues? 7
Knowledge puffs up but love builds up 4	Would not unbelievers say you are mad? 7
The God who accompanied Israelites was Christ 4	But if all prophecy unbelievers would be convicted .. 7
The Israelites of old suffered because of sin 4	Rules governing tongues in church meetings 7
You will not be tempted beyond what you can bear . 4	Rules governing prophecy in church meetings 7
Idolatry is worship of demons 4	See that everything is done in a orderly way 7
Do we want to arouse the Lord's jealousy? 4	Women should not speak in church 7
Rules for eating meat sold in the market 4	Corinthians reminded of the gospel Paul preached .. 8
Follow my example in seeking the good of others..... 4	Paul calls himself the least of the apostles 8
That others may be saved 4	But has worked harder than all the other apostles ... 8
Paul answers his critics 5	Paul answers those who doubt resurrection 8
Apostles have right of support 5	Your faith is in vain if there is no resurrection 8
Barnabas and I did not claim our right of support 5	The truth of the resurrection reaffirmed 8
I am all things to all men that I might save some 5	Christ to reign until all his enemies under his feet 8
I discipline and master myself to win the prize 5	Jesus to eventually hand over kingdom to Father 8
The head of a woman is her husband 6	Baptism for the dead 8
The head of the husband is Christ 6	Why do we risk our lives if there is no resurrection?... 8
A man should pray with his head uncovered 6	Varying degrees of glory in resurrected bodies 8
A woman should pray with her head veiled 6	The perishable body is raised in glory and power 8
Man the image of God and woman the glory of man .. 6	We shall bear the likeness of Jesus Christ 8
Long hair a disgrace to a man 6	Instant resurrection for righteous at last trumpet 8
Long hair an enhancement to a woman 6	O death where is your sting? 8
Corinthians doing more harm than good 6	Collection for the saints at Jerusalem 8
Divisions in the Corinthian church 6	Paul writing from Ephesus 8
Inconsiderate eating habits when met together 6	Take care of Timothy's needs when he arrives 9
The Lord's Supper clarified 6	Apollos to come when he has the opportunity 9
Partaking unworthily a cause of ill health 6	Stand firm and do everything in love 9
Eat at home first if very hungry 6	Greetings from those with Paul 9
Corinthians warned of false spirits 7	Paul writes a greeting with his own hand 9

Bold The Lord or an angel speaking.
Bold italics A prophet speaking under inspiration.

1

Paul's introduction

¹Paul an apostle of Jesus Christ to the church of God in Corinth, and to all those everywhere who call on the name of our Lord Jesus.
²Grace and peace to you from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

Corinthians not lacking any of the gifts of the Spirit

³I thank God always for you, for God is faithful, and through him you have been enriched in every way.
⁴Therefore you are not lacking any of the gifts of the Spirit as you eagerly await the return of our Lord Jesus. ⁵The Holy Spirit shall keep you strong so that you will be blameless on the day our Lord appears.

Divisions among the Corinthians

⁶Now brethren, I appeal to you that there be no divisions among you, that you all be of one mind. ⁷For some of Chloe's household have informed me there are divisions among you.
⁸One of you says, "I belong to Paul," another, "I belong to Apollos,"^{F*} another, "I belong to Peter," and still another, "I belong to Christ."

Is Christ divided?

⁹What? Is Christ divided? Was Paul crucified for you? Were you baptised in the name of Paul?
¹⁰I am thankful that I did not baptise any of you except Crispus and Gaius so that no one can say that I baptised you in my name. I also baptised the household of Stephanas.

*8 Apollos was a powerful preacher of the gospel and is spoken of in Acts 18:2-8.

1 CORINTHIANS 1

The wisdom of man is foolishness

¹¹Besides, Christ sent me not to baptise but to preach the gospel. Not with words of human wisdom lest the cross be emptied of its power for it is written, ***“I will destroy the wisdom of the wise.”***

¹²Where is the wise man and the scholar and the philosopher? Has not God made the wisdom of this world foolishness?

¹³For the world in all its wisdom knows not God. But God is pleased to save those who believe the ‘foolishness’ of what is preached.

¹⁴Jews demand signs and Greeks seek after wisdom, but we preach Christ crucified, a stumbling block to the Jews and foolishness to the Gentiles.

¹⁵But to those whom God has called, Christ is the power and wisdom of God. ¹⁶For the foolishness of God is wiser than the wisdom of man, and the weakness of God stronger than man’s strength.

¹⁷Be not deceived, if any of you regard yourselves as wise by the standards of the world, he should become a ‘fool,’ that he may become truly wise.

God chooses the weak and foolish of the world

¹⁸Brethren, think back to what you were before you were called. Not many of you were wise by human standards. Not many of you were influential or of noble birth. ¹⁹But God chose the foolish of the world to shame the wise, and the weak to shame the strong that no one might boast before him.

I did not preach to you with worldly wisdom but by the Spirit’s power

²⁰So when I came to you my brethren, I came not with persuasive words or superior wisdom, but with a demonstration of the Spirit’s power.

²¹I resolved to preach nothing but Jesus Christ and him crucified. ²²I came to you in weakness and with apprehension that your faith might not rest on man’s wisdom but on God’s power.

Yet there is secret knowledge of God that we only teach to the spiritually mature

²³Yet among the spiritually mature we teach a message of wisdom. Not the wisdom of this world which comes to nothing, but God’s secret knowledge that was hidden for our glory before time began.

²⁴For it is written, ***“Eye has not seen, nor ear heard, nor has it entered into the heart of man what God has prepared for those who love him.”***

²⁵But God has revealed it to us by his Spirit for the Holy Spirit knows all things even the thoughts of God.

God’s secret knowledge not understood without the Spirit

²⁶However to a man without the Holy Spirit it is foolishness. He cannot understand it. But with the Spirit we have the mind of Christ.

You Corinthians are still worldly and not yet spiritually mature

²⁷Brethren I am not yet able to speak to you as men who are spiritually mature. You are still worldly, mere infants in Christ. ²⁸I gave you milk for you were not ready for solid food. Indeed you are still not ready. ²⁹For if there is jealousy and division among you, are you not still worldly?

³⁰When one says, “I belong to Paul,” and another, “I belong to Apollos,” are you not mere men?

³¹Who is Apollos? Who is Paul? Only servants through whom you came to believe. I planted the seed, Apollos watered it, but God made it grow.

We must build on the foundation of Jesus Christ

³²We are only God’s workers, and you are his building. By the grace of God I laid a foundation and somebody else is building on it.

³³But each of you should be careful not to lay a foundation other than the one already laid, which is Jesus Christ. ³⁴If any man builds on this foundation his work will endure.

On the day of the Lord’s coming fire will test your works

³⁵For on the day of the Lord’s coming, fire will test the quality of each man’s work. ³⁶If what he has built survives, he will receive his reward. But if it is burned up he will suffer loss, although he himself may be saved but only as one escaping through flames.

So no more boasting about mere men

³⁷So then, no more boasting about mere men, whether Paul, Apollos or Peter. You are of Christ and Christ is of God.

³⁸We who teach you are servants of Christ and have been entrusted with the secret things of God.

³⁹I care little if I am judged by you, or by any human court, my conscience is clear. ⁴⁰But that does not make me innocent for it is the Lord who finally judges me.

When Jesus returns he will reward according to motives of the heart

⁴¹When the Lord returns he will bring to light all that is hidden and expose the motives of people’s hearts. At that time each will receive his reward from God.

Do not go beyond what is written

⁴²Now brethren, learn from Apollos and myself the meaning of this saying, ***“Go not beyond what is written.”*** Then you will not take pride in one man over another.

Faithful men to reign as kings in kingdom of God

⁴³You have become rich, you have become kings. How I wish you already reigned so that we might be kings with you.

We apostles suffer more than other men

⁴⁴It seems as if God has put we apostles at

the end of the procession, like men condemned to die in the arena. ⁴⁵We are made a spectacle of to angels and also to men.

⁴⁶We are fools for Christ. We are weak and dishonoured. We go hungry, thirsty and clothed in rags.

⁴⁷We are brutally treated and homeless. We work hard with our own hands.

⁴⁸When we are cursed, we bless. When we are persecuted, we endure. When we are slandered, we answer kindly.

⁴⁹Yet we are regarded as the scum of the earth.

Paul like a father to the Corinthians

⁵⁰I am not writing this to shame you but to warn you as my dear children. ⁵¹For though you may have ten thousand teachers of Christ you do not have many fathers. Through Jesus I became your father therefore I urge you to imitate me.

Paul sending Timothy to remind the Corinthians what he had taught them

⁵²For this reason I am sending you Timothy, my son in the gospel whom I love, who is faithful in the Lord.

⁵³He will remind you of my way of life in Christ Jesus which agrees with what I teach everywhere in the churches.

2

Paul to return and find out how much power the arrogant at Corinth possess

¹Now some of you have become arrogant, as if I were not returning to you. But I will return soon if the Lord be willing. ²Then I shall find out how much power these arrogant people have. For the kingdom of God is not a matter of talk but of power.

³What would you prefer? Am I to come with a whip or with a loving and gentle spirit?

A case of incest

⁴It is actually reported that there is sexual immorality among you, and of a kind that does not occur even among pagans. A man is living immorally with his father's wife.

You should have disfellowshipped the man

⁵And yet you are arrogant. Should you not rather be filled with grief and have disfellowshipped this man?

Hand this man over to Satan for destruction of his flesh that his spirit may be saved

⁶Even though I am not physically present I am with you in spirit and have passed judgement on this man as if I were present.

⁷When you next assemble in the name of our Lord Jesus, and I am with you in spirit and with the power of our Lord, hand this man over to Satan for the destruction of his flesh that his spirit may be saved on the day of the Lord.

Obtain fresh yeast of sincerity and truth

⁸Your boasting is not a good thing. A little yeast works through a whole batch of dough.

⁹Rid yourself of your old yeast of malice and evil. Make yourselves fresh dough with yeast of sincerity and truth.

Do not associate or eat with any sinful brother

¹⁰I previously wrote^{F*} instructing you not to associate with sexually immoral people. I did not mean the people of the world for to do that you would have to depart this world. I meant with anyone who calls himself a brother.

¹¹Also do not associate with nor even eat with any brother who is greedy, an idolater, a slanderer, a drunkard or a swindler.

Church leaders only to judge those of the church

¹²It is not for me to judge those outside of the church, we only judge those inside. God will judge those outside the church. ¹³So expel wicked men from among you.

How can you dare to take your disputes to be judged before the world?

¹⁴Also, when any of you have a dispute with another brother, how can you dare to take it before the world for judgement instead of before the saints?

The saints to judge the world and angels

¹⁵Do you not know that the saints are to judge the world? Surely you are competent to judge in trivial matters.

¹⁶Do you not also know that we shall judge angels? How much more then should you be able to judge the daily affairs of this life.

¹⁷I say this to shame you. ¹⁸Is there no one among you wise enough to judge a dispute among yourselves that one brother must go to a court of law against another, and in front of unbelievers?

Why not rather suffer wrong than have lawsuits among yourselves?

¹⁹The fact that you even have lawsuits among you demonstrates a defeat already. ²⁰Why not rather suffer wrong? Instead you yourselves wrong your brothers.

No sinner will inherit the kingdom of God

²¹Be not deceived, no fornicator, no idolater, no adulterer, no male prostitute, no sodomite, no thief, no greedy person, no drunkard, no slanderer, no swindler, will inherit the kingdom of God.

Former sinners among the Corinthians cleansed

²²And that is what some of you were, but you have been washed, sanctified,^{F*} and justified^{F*} in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ and by the Spirit of our God.

I will not allow my body to be enslaved by sexual immorality

²³I have the freedom to do as I choose, but not everything is good. Therefore I will not allow myself to be enslaved by anything. ²⁴The

*¹⁰ This earlier letter from Paul to the Corinthians has been lost.

*²² To be sanctified means to become holy in God's eyes.

*²² To be justified means to be purified from all guilt of sin.

1 CORINTHIANS 3

body is not meant for sexual immorality but for the Lord.

²⁵By his power God raised Jesus from the dead and he will raise our bodies also.

He who unites himself with a harlot becomes one with her body

²⁶Do you not know that our bodies are members of Christ himself? Shall I then unite my body with a harlot? Never!

²⁷He who unites himself with a harlot becomes one with her in body for it is written, **“The two will become one flesh.”**

²⁸But he who unites himself with the Lord becomes one with him in spirit.

Flee from sexual immorality for your body is a temple of the Holy Spirit

²⁹Therefore flee from fornication.^{F*} All other sins a man commits are outside his body but he who sins sexually sins against his own body. ³⁰Do you not know that your body is a temple of the Holy Spirit who is in you?

³¹You are not your own, you were bought for a price. Therefore honour God with your body.

3

Marry to avoid temptation to sexual immorality

¹Now for the matters you wrote about. It is well for a man not to touch a woman but because of temptation to immorality each man should have his own wife and each woman her own husband.

Do not deprive your spouse of conjugal rights

²The husband should allow his wife her conjugal rights, and likewise the wife her husband. For the wife's body belongs not only to her alone but also to her husband and in the same way the husband's body belongs to her.

³So do not deprive each other except perhaps by mutual agreement for a time in order to devote yourselves to prayer. Then come together again lest Satan tempt you because of your lack of self control.

Paul wishes all men could be like him

⁴I say this as a concession, not as a commandment. I wish that all were as I am but each man has his own calling from God.

Believers must not divorce

⁵To the married I give this commandment, (not I but the Lord): **“A wife should not leave her husband. But if she does she must remain single or else be reconciled to her husband. ⁶And a husband must not divorce his wife.”**

An unbelieving spouse willing to remain must not be divorced

⁷To the rest I say, (I, not the Lord): Any

^{*29} Fornication is a translation of the Greek word *'porneia'* which means any sexual relationship outside of marriage including adultery and incest. The city of Corinth was noted for its immorality. The temple of Aphrodite was located there, and was said by an historian of the day to have had over a thousand 'sacred' prostitutes.

believer, married to an unbeliever who is willing to remain with them, must not divorce.

An unbelieving spouse is made holy by the believing spouse

⁸For the unbelieving husband is made holy by the believing wife, and the unbelieving wife is made holy by the believing husband, otherwise your children would be unclean, but they are holy.



Aphrodite, Greek goddess of love whose worship in Corinth involved ritual prostitution on a large scale.

A believer is not bound to an unbelieving spouse if they leave

⁹However if an unbelieving spouse leaves, let them go. A believer is not bound in such circumstances for God has called us to live in peace. For how can you know if you will save your spouse?

A convert should remain in the situation he was in when God called him

¹⁰Now, every man should remain in the situation he was in when God called him. This is a rule I lay down in all the churches.

¹¹If you were a slave^{F*} when you were called let it not trouble you, but gain your freedom if you can, for you were bought at a price.

Circumcision not necessary – keeping the commandments is what counts

¹²If a man was uncircumcised when he was called, he should not seek to be circumcised. ¹³Circumcision is nothing. Keeping the commandments of God is what counts.

The single should not marry in view of impending crisis

¹⁴To those who are not yet married I have no command from the Lord, but I give you my opinion as one who is trustworthy by the Lord's

^{*11} More than half the population of Corinth were slaves.

mercy. ¹⁵Because of the impending crisis^{F*} I think it wise for you to remain single. But if you do marry you have not sinned. ¹⁶However those who marry will experience troubles and I want to spare you this.

The appointed time for the return of Christ has grown very short

¹⁷What I mean brethren is that the appointed time has grown very short. From now on even those who have wives should live as if they had none and also as if they had no possessions.

¹⁸Neither mourn nor rejoice, for this world in its present form is soon to pass away.^{F*} ¹⁹And I want you to be free of worries.

A single person is able to give undivided devotion to the Lord

²⁰Also, a single person is concerned about how they can please the Lord, but a married person is concerned about the affairs of this world and how they can please their spouse.

²¹I am saying this not to restrict you, but that you may live in undivided devotion to the Lord.

Better for a man to marry than to burn with lust

²²However if any man's passion is strong and he thinks he is acting improperly toward a virgin to whom he is betrothed and feels he ought to marry her, he should do so. It is better to marry than to burn with lust.

²³He who marries does right, but he who does not marry does even better.

A widow is free to re-marry but the man must be a believer

²⁴If a woman's husband dies she is free to marry another man, but that man must belong to the Lord.

²⁵However in my opinion she will be happier if she remains single and I think I have the Spirit of God.

4

Food sacrificed to idols

¹Now about food sacrificed to idols. An idol is of no account for it is written, **"there is no God but one."**

Only one God for us – the Father from whom all things are

²Even if there are so-called gods, both in heaven and on earth and there are many, yet for us there is only one God; the Father from whom all things are and for whom we exist.

*15 See note on verse 18 of this chapter.

*18 Paul's advice to the Corinthians on the inadvisability of marriage should be viewed in the light of the widespread belief at this time in the early church that the return of Christ with all of its associated trauma (see Revelation chapters 4 to 7) was imminent. It appears that the second coming of Jesus Christ had been linked with the coming destruction of Jerusalem and the temple which took place in AD 70, about 15 years after Paul wrote this letter. This is understandable as the gospel accounts mingle the prophecies Jesus made of these two major events. John's book of Revelation which sets out more clearly the events leading up to the second coming was still 40 years away. In Paul's letter to Timothy many years later he counseled young widows to marry and have children (1 Timothy 3:9).

Only one Lord – Jesus Christ through whom all things are

³And one Lord, Jesus Christ through whom all things are and through whom we exist.

Food sacrificed to idols

⁴But not all know this. Some when they eat food sacrificed to idols are so accustomed to idols that they think of it as having been sacrificed to an actual god, and since their conscience is weak, for them the food is defiled.

Food does not bring us near to God

⁵But food does not bring us near to God. We are no worse off if we eat, or better off if we do not eat.

But do not wound the conscience of a weak brother

⁶Be careful however that the exercise of your freedom does not become a stumbling block to the weak among you. ⁷A weak brother for whom Christ died can be destroyed by your knowledge.

⁸When you wound the weak conscience of a brother you sin against Christ. ⁹Therefore if the meat I eat causes my brother to fall I will never eat meat again.

Knowledge puffs up but love builds up

¹⁰Knowledge puffs up, but love builds up. ¹¹The man who thinks he is knowledgeable does not yet know what he ought to know.

The God who accompanied the Israelites of old was Christ the Rock

¹²Remember brethren, that our forefathers all passed through the sea and were with Moses under the cloud.^{F*} ¹³They all ate the same spiritual food^{F*} and drank from the spiritual rock that accompanied them, and that Rock was Christ.^{F*}

Paul reminds the Corinthians of how the Israelites of old suffered because of sin

¹⁴Nevertheless, God was not pleased with most of them and their bodies fell all over the desert. This occurred as an example to keep us from setting our hearts on evil things as they did.

¹⁵So do not be idolaters or sexually immoral as some of them were, for in one day 23,000 died.

¹⁶Do not test Christ as some of them did, and were killed by venomous snakes.

¹⁷Do not complain as some of them did and were killed by the destroying angel.

*12 The cloud that concealed the glory of the Lord as he led Moses and the Israelites out of Egypt.

*13 Manna, that miraculously descended six nights every week.

*13 Paul reveals here that Jehovah who led the Israelites in their exodus from Egypt was not God the Father (who is also named or titled Jehovah meaning Eternal) but the Christ, the pre-mortal Jesus (see also Jude 1:5). The words of Jesus also support this when he said, referring to himself, "Blessed is he who comes in the name of Jehovah" (Matt-Mark-Luke 24:41). This also removes the apparent contradiction in the statement of John, "No one has seen God the Father, but the Only Begotten Son" (John 1:8), for Moses, Joshua, Aaron, Nadab, Abihu, and 70 elders of Israel all saw the pre-mortal Christ as Jehovah on Mount Horeb (Exodus 15:18) and all the Israelites saw him together at the dedication of the Tabernacle at Sinai (Leviticus 2:3).

1 CORINTHIANS 5

God will not allow you to be tempted beyond what you can bear

¹⁸Therefore if you think you are standing firm, watch that you do not fall. ¹⁹Yet no temptation will seize you but that which is common to all.

²⁰And God will not allow you to be tempted beyond what you can bear, he will provide a way for you to escape.

Idolatry is worship of demons

²¹Therefore my beloved, shun the worship of idols. I speak to a sensible people.

²²Is not the cup we bless and the bread we break a sharing in the blood and body of Christ? So it is with those who partake of sacrifices offered to idols.

²³I do not imply that idols are of any account, but I do imply that the sacrifices of idolaters are offered to demons.

Do we want to arouse the Lord's jealousy?

²⁴I do not want you to be sharers with demons. You cannot drink the cup of the Lord and the cup of demons also. ²⁵Do we want to arouse the Lord's jealousy? Are we stronger than he?

Rules for eating of meat that may have been offered to idols

²⁶However you may eat anything sold in the meat market for it is written ***"The earth is the Lord's and everything in it."*** ²⁷Therefore if an unbeliever invites you to a meal and you go, eat what is put before you.

²⁸But if some one warns you saying, "This food has been offered in sacrifice," then do not eat of it for the sake of the conscience of the person who warned you.

²⁹Whenever you eat or drink do so for the glory of God.

Follow my example by seeking the good of others that they may be saved

³⁰Do not cause anybody to stumble, even as I try to please everybody in every way. For I am not seeking my own good but the good of others that they may be saved. ³¹Follow my example as I follow the example of Christ.

³²I thank you for holding to the teachings, just as I passed them on to you.

5

Paul answers his critics

¹Now this is my defence to those of you who criticise me. Am I not free? Am I not an apostle and have seen Jesus our Lord? Are you not the result of my work in the Lord? ²Even though I may not be an apostle to others, I am to you. You are the seal of my apostleship.

Apostles have a right of support

³Do not all we apostles have the right to food and drink, and the right to take a wife along with us as do the other apostles and the Lord's brothers and Peter?

⁴Is it only Barnabas and I who must work for a living?

⁵Who serves as a soldier at his own expense? Who plants a vineyard and eats not of its grapes? Who tends a flock and does not drink the milk?

⁶It is written, ***"Do not muzzle an ox while it is treading the grain."*** Is it only oxen that God is concerned about? Surely he says this for us also?

⁷If I and my companions have sown spiritual seed among you, is it too much that we reap a material harvest from you? If others are supported by you, should not we have it all the more?

Barnabas and I did not claim our right of support

⁸But we did not claim this right. On the contrary we put up with anything rather than hinder the gospel of Christ.

⁹I am not writing this in the hope that you will do such things for me. ¹⁰I would rather die than be deprived of my boast, that although I am compelled to preach the gospel, and woe to me if I do not preach it, I preach it willingly and free of charge, not claiming my right of support.

I become all things to all men that I might save some

¹¹I am a free man but I make myself a slave to all to win as many as possible. To the Jews I become a Jew, to the Gentiles a Gentile. To the weak I become weak.

¹²I become all things to all men that by every possible means I might save some and share the blessings of the gospel.

I discipline and master myself to win the prize

¹³In a race all runners run, but only one wins the prize. ¹⁴Therefore I do not run aimlessly. I do not fight like a man punching the air. ¹⁵No I discipline and master my body, so that after I have preached to others I myself will not be disqualified from the prize.

6

The head of a woman is her husband and the head of the husband is Christ

¹Now I wish you to understand that the head of the woman is her husband, and the head of the husband is Christ, and the head of Christ is God.

A man should pray with his head uncovered and a woman with her head veiled

²A man dishonours his head if he prays or prophesies with his head covered, and a woman dishonours her head if she prays or prophesies with her head unveiled.

Man the image of God and woman the glory of man

³A man should not cover his head since he is the image and glory of God, but a woman is the glory of man. ⁴For man did not come from woman but woman from man. Neither was man created for woman, but woman for man.

⁵For this reason, and because of the angels a woman ought to wear a sign of her submissiveness on her head.

⁶However neither women nor men are independent of each other in the Lord, for although woman came from man, man is born of woman and both come from God.

**Long hair a disgrace to a man
but an enhancement for a woman**

⁷Judge for yourselves if it is proper for a woman to pray to God with her head unveiled. ⁸Does not nature itself teach you that long hair is a disgrace to a man? ⁹But if a woman has long hair it enhances her glory, for long hair is given to her as a covering.

¹⁰If anyone is disposed to disagree about this I say that we recognise no other practice, nor do the other churches of God.

**Corinthians doing more harm
than good when they meet together**

¹¹Now in the following directives I have no praise for you, for when you meet together you are doing more harm than good.

Divisions in the Corinthians church

¹²In the first place, I hear that when you meet together there are divisions among you, and to some extent I believe it. ¹³But no doubt there will be some divisions to distinguish which of you are approved of God.

**Inconsiderate eating habits
when met together as a church**

¹⁴Secondly, when you meet together prior to the Lord's Supper each of you hasten to eat your own food without consideration for anybody else.^{F*} One remains hungry while another gets drunk.

¹⁵Do you not have homes to eat and drink in? And why do you despise the church of God by humiliating those who bring nothing to eat? ¹⁶Shall I praise you for this? Certainly not.

The Lord's Supper clarified

¹⁷Now as regards the Lord's Supper, this is what I received from the Lord and passed on to you: ¹⁸On the night Jesus was betrayed he took bread, and when he had given thanks he broke it and said, "**This is my body, do this in remembrance of me.**"

¹⁹In the same way after the supper, he took the wine cup saying, "**This cup is the new covenant of my blood, drink it in remembrance of me.**"

²⁰So whenever you eat this bread and drink this wine you proclaim the Lord's death until he comes.

**Partaking of the Lord's Supper unworthily
a cause of ill health**

²¹Whoever partakes of the Lord's Supper unworthily is guilty of sinning against the body and blood of the Lord.

*14 The Corinthians would first eat together before a church service in what they called an Agape Feast, each family bringing their own food, and then afterwards they would hold the service during which they would partake of the broken bread and wine of the Lord's Supper.

²²Therefore you ought to examine yourselves first, for anyone who eats the bread and drinks of the cup unworthily, eats and drinks damnation not acknowledging the body of the Lord. ²³That is why many of you are weak and sick and some of you have died.

²⁴The Lord disciplines us in this way so that we will not be condemned with the world.

Eat at home first if very hungry

²⁵Brethren, when you assemble to eat together, wait for each other. ²⁶If anyone is very hungry he should eat at home first so that you will not be condemned.

²⁷When I come I will give you further directions on this matter.

7

Corinthians warned of false spirits

¹Now brethren, concerning spiritual gifts. When you were pagans you were led astray to dumb idols. ²Therefore I want you to understand that no one will ever say "Let Jesus be cursed," when speaking by the Spirit of God, nor will they say "Jesus is Lord," except by the Holy Spirit.^{F*}

**There are a variety of spiritual
gifts and manifestations**

³There are a variety of gifts but it is the same Spirit who manifests them, and there are a variety of manifestations but the same Lord. To each person is given a manifestation for the common good.

Gifts of the Spirit

⁴To one is given through the Spirit the teaching of wisdom, to another the teaching of knowledge, to another to have great faith, to another gifts of healing. ⁵To another the performing of miracles, to another prophecy, to another discerning between spirits, to another speaking in different tongues, and to still another the interpretation of tongues.^{F*}

**The various gifts likened to the different
uses of the parts of the body**

⁶Now the body is not made up of one part but of many. The foot or the ear cannot say, "I do not belong to the body," and if the whole body were an eye, where would the hearing be? Or an ear, where would the sense of smell be?

⁷God has so arranged the parts in the body that if one part suffers, every part suffers, and if one part is honoured, every part rejoices with it. ⁸And so it is with you who are parts of the body of Christ.

Gifts and callings ranked in importance

⁹God has appointed first apostles, second prophets, third teachers, then workers of miracles, those having gifts of healing, those

*2 Paul is referring to utterances made under the influence of the Holy Spirit. A person in a normal state of mind could make either statement insincerely.

*5 This is not a complete list of the gifts of the Spirit. In his letter to the Romans, Paul also lists six other gifts, i.e. Service, Teaching, Encouraging, Giving, Leadership and Mercy (Romans 6:2-4) and in the following verses of this chapter Paul speaks of the greatest Holy Spirit gift of all, the gift of Love.

1 CORINTHIANS 7

having charity, those with gifts of administration, and those who speak in different kinds of tongues.

¹⁰Are all apostles? Are all prophets? Are all teachers? Do all work miracles? Do all have gifts of healing? ¹¹Do all speak in tongues? Do all interpret? No. But eagerly desire the greater gifts.

The more excellent gift of love

¹²Now I will reveal to you a still more excellent gift. ¹³If I speak in the tongues of men and of angels but have not love, I am only a noisy gong or a clanging cymbal.

¹⁴If I have the gift of prophecy and can understand all mysteries and all knowledge, and if I have faith that can move mountains but have not love, I am nothing.

¹⁵If I give all I have to the poor and sacrifice my body to be burned but have not love, I gain nothing.

Love defined

¹⁶Love is patient, love is kind, love does not envy, does not boast, is not proud. Love is not rude, nor self-seeking, nor easily angered, and keeps no record of wrongs.

¹⁷Love delights not in evil but rejoices in truth. Love always protects, always trusts, ever hopes, ever perseveres. ¹⁸Love never fails.

Most of the spiritual gifts will be unnecessary in kingdom of God

¹⁹When perfection comes^{F*} our prophecies will cease, our tongues will be stilled and our knowledge will pass away. ²⁰For our prophecies and our knowledge are imperfect, but when perfection comes, the imperfect disappears.

²¹When I was a child I thought like a child, but when I became a man I put childish ways behind me.

²²Now we see through a mirror darkly, but when perfection comes we shall see face to face. Now I know in part but then I shall know in full.

Only faith, hope and love will remain

²³When perfection comes, only these three will remain, faith, hope, and love and the greatest of these is love.

Eagerly desire the other spiritual gifts especially to prophesy

²⁴So follow the way of love, but eagerly desire the other spiritual gifts especially the gift of prophecy.

²⁵For he who speaks in a tongue does not speak to men, but to God. Indeed, no man understands him. He utters mysteries in the Spirit.

²⁶On the other hand, he who prophesies speaks to men for their strengthening, encouragement and comfort.

²⁷But he who speaks in a tongue edifies only himself, whereas he who prophesies edifies the

whole church.

What good is speaking in tongues in church if no one understands?

²⁸I would like every one of you to speak in tongues, but I would rather you all prophesy. ²⁹He who prophesies is greater than he who speaks in tongues, unless he interprets, so that the church may be edified.

³⁰If I come to you brethren and speak in tongues, what good will I be to you unless I bring you some revelation, or knowledge, or prophecy or word of instruction?

³¹If the trumpet sounds an unclear call, who will prepare himself for battle?

Pray that you may interpret what you say when you speak in a tongue

³²Anyone who speaks in a tongue should pray that he may interpret what he says.

³³For if I pray in a tongue my spirit prays but my mind is unfruitful. So what shall I do? I will pray with my spirit but I will also pray with my mind. ³⁴I will sing with my spirit but I will also sing with my mind.

³⁵And if you are praising God with your spirit, how can those who do not understand you say Amen to your prayer? ³⁶You may be praising well enough but they are not edified.

³⁷I thank God that I speak in tongues more than you all, but in the church I would rather speak five understandable words to instruct others, than ten thousand words in a tongue.

If all spoke in tongues, unbelievers who came in would say you are mad

³⁸Brethren, stop thinking like children except in regard to evil. Tongues are a sign for unbelievers^{F*} while prophecy is for believers. However, if when the church met together everybody spoke in tongues and some unbelievers came in, would they not say that you are all mad?

But if all prophesy, an unbeliever would be convicted that he is a sinner

³⁹But if everybody prophesied and an unbeliever came in he would be convicted that he is a sinner and be called to account, for the secrets of his heart would be laid bare. ⁴⁰He would fall down and worship God exclaiming, "God is really among you."

Try to excel in gifts that build up the church

⁴¹So it is with you. Unless you speak understandable words with your tongue how will anyone know what you are saying? You will just be speaking into the air.

⁴²Therefore since you are eager to have

*38 This verse may seem on the surface to be contradictory, but Paul is stating that the ultimate purpose of the gift of tongues is to prepare foreign language speaking unbelievers to receive the preaching of the gospel, as happened on the day of Pentecost. On that day 3000 joined the church (Acts chapter 2). It appears that when this gift is used properly, as was the case at Pentecost, it can be an undeniable sign of divine power to an unbeliever. Whereas in an uncontrolled situation such as Paul depicts, when an unbeliever walks into a church where everybody is speaking in tongues for their own gratification, the unbeliever could well regard them as all mad. (See also the note on the different manifestations of tongues on verse 45 of this chapter.)

*19 is The eventual perfection of the Kingdom of God, following the resurrection.

spiritual gifts, try to excel in gifts that build up the church.

Rules governing tongues in church meetings

⁴³What then shall we conclude brethren? When you meet together and one is given a hymn, a revelation, a tongue, or an interpretation, all is well and good for the strengthening of the church. ⁴⁴But if anyone speaks in a tongue, only two, or at the most three should speak, one at a time, and someone must interpret.

⁴⁵If there is no interpreter the speaker should remain silent in the church and pray only in his spirit to God. ^{F*}

Rules governing prophecy in church meetings

⁴⁶Also only two or three prophets should speak and the others weigh carefully what is said. ⁴⁷If a prophecy comes to another, the first speaker should cease. Prophecy in turn that all may be instructed and edified. ⁴⁸Prophets should have control over their gift for God is not a God of confusion but of order.

See that everything is done in a orderly way

⁴⁹Therefore my brethren, be eager to prophesy. Do not forbid speaking in tongues, but see that everything is done in a orderly way.

Women should not speak in church

⁵⁰And as in all the congregations of the saints, your women should not speak in church but be in submission as the Law requires. ⁵¹If they wish to inquire about something let them ask their husbands at home, for it is improper for a woman to speak in church.

8

Paul reminds the Corinthians of the gospel he preached to them

¹Now brethren I want to remind you of the gospel I preached to you. Only by this gospel are you saved, provided you hold firmly to the word. Otherwise you will have believed in vain.

²Christ died for our sins, was buried, and was raised on the third day, according to the

*45 The gift of tongues appears to manifest in two ways. Firstly, speaking fluently under the influence of the Holy Spirit one or more previously unlearned earth languages. Modern speakers in tongues report that they sometimes speak several different languages, eight in one particular instance, one after the other. Also the person speaking the unknown language typically does not understand the words flowing out of his or her mouth. On the day of Pentecost (Acts chapter 2) the apostles appeared to experience this first gift when they spoke fluently in many earth languages which they did not previously know. This was for a sign of power to the hearers, to facilitate conversion of unbelievers which Paul says is the ultimate purpose of tongues (1 Corinthians 7:38). The second manifestation of tongues is speaking, preaching, prophesying, praying, praising, or singing in the pure language of angels for personal or group edification. This second gift is the one manifested among the Corinthians which Paul is writing about. In this manifestation of tongues a person's spirit is in control, not the conscious mind, as Paul pointed out in verse 33 of this chapter. When both the gift of tongues and the gift of interpretation are combined, the effect is virtually the same as prophecy. Prophecy is any divinely inspired speaking in the normal language of the people, not just the foretelling of future events. Demons can of course easily mimic both the gift of tongues and prophecy. There is ample evidence of this from Paul's day down to our own.

scriptures. ³He appeared to Peter and then to the other apostles. After that he appeared to more than 500 brethren at the same time, most of whom are still alive.

⁴Then he appeared to his brother James and again to all the apostles. Last of all he appeared to me.

Paul calls himself the least of the apostles

⁵But I am the least of the apostles, and do not even deserve to be called an apostle, for I persecuted the church of God.

Paul has worked harder than all of the other apostles

⁶But by the grace of God I am what I am, and by his grace I have worked harder than all the other apostles.

Paul answers those who doubt resurrection of the dead

⁷Whether by them, or I, this is what we preach, that Christ has been raised from the dead. So how can some of you say there is no resurrection of the dead?

Your faith is in vain if there is no resurrection

⁸If there is no resurrection of the dead then not even Christ has been raised, and our preaching is in vain and so is your faith.

⁹More than that, we would be false witnesses for we have testified that God raised Christ from the dead.

¹⁰If Christ has not been raised you are still in your sins, and those among you who have died are lost.

Baptism for the dead

¹¹If there is no resurrection and the dead are not raised at all, why then are people baptised for the dead? ^{F*}

Why do we missionaries risk our lives if there is no resurrection?

¹²And as for us, why do we risk our lives every hour? I die every day. Did I fight wild beasts in Ephesus for merely human reasons?

¹³If the dead are not raised, "**Let us eat and drink, for tomorrow we die.**" ^{F*}

¹⁴Return to your senses and cease to sin, for there are some among you who are ignorant of God. I say this to your shame.

The truth of the resurrection reaffirmed

¹⁵But Christ has indeed been raised from the dead, the firstfruit of those who have died. For as through Adam all died, so through Christ will all be made alive. ¹⁶Christ the firstfruit, then when he returns, those who belong to him will be raised.

Christ to reign until he has put all his enemies under his feet

¹⁷Then the end will come and Christ will reign until he has put all his enemies under his feet. The last enemy to be destroyed will be death.

*11 In the early church, believers were baptised on behalf of those who had died without baptism.

*13 Paul is quoting from Isaiah 21:10.

1 CORINTHIANS 8

Jesus to eventually hand the kingdom over to God the Father

¹⁸After he has gained all dominion and power he will hand over the kingdom to God the Father. ¹⁹When he has done this, the Son himself will be subject to the Father that God may be all in all.

Varying degrees of glory in resurrected bodies

²⁰But one may ask, "How are the dead raised? And with what kind of body will they come forth?"

²¹Foolish questions. When you sow a seed it does not come to life unless it dies. ²²And you do not plant the body that will be, but the bare kernel. Then God returns to each seed its own kind of body. ²³So too with bodies of flesh. Men are of one kind, animals another, birds another and fish yet another.

²⁴And just as heavenly bodies vary in glory, for the sun has one degree of glory, the moon another, and the stars another, and star differs from star in glory, so too will it be in the resurrection of the dead.

The perishable body is raised in glory and power

²⁵The perishable body that is sown is raised imperishable. Although sown in dishonour and weakness, it is raised in glory and power.

²⁶It is sown an earthly body but raised a spiritual body,^{F*} for if there is an earthly body there is also a spiritual body.

We shall bear the likeness of Jesus Christ

²⁷And just as we have borne the likeness of Adam the first earthly man, so then shall we bear the likeness of him who came down from heaven. ²⁸For flesh and blood^{F*} cannot inherit the kingdom of God. That which is perishable cannot inherit the imperishable.

Instant resurrection for all the righteous at the last trumpet

²⁹I will reveal to you a mystery. We will not all sleep in the earth, but at the last trumpet^{F*} we shall be changed in the twinkling of an eye, for when the trumpet sounds the dead will be raised and we shall be changed. Our mortal body will be clothed with immortality.

O death where is your sting?

³⁰Then what is written will come to pass, "**Where O death is your victory? Where**

O death is your sting? Death has been swallowed up in victory."

³¹The sting of death is sin, but thanks be to God he has given us victory through our Lord Jesus Christ.

³²Therefore my dear brethren stand firm and give yourselves fully to the work of the Lord for it is not in vain.

The collection for the saints at Jerusalem

³³Now regarding the collection for God's people at Jerusalem. On the first day of every week^{F*} each one of you should contribute a sum of money in keeping with his income. Store it all up so that when I come no collection will have to be made. ³⁴I will send those whom you approve to take your gift to Jerusalem, and I might go with them.

Paul writing from Ephesus

³⁵But I may stay with you a while when I come or even spend the winter with you. ³⁵However I will remain here at Ephesus until Pentecost for a great door of effective work has opened to me. But there are many who oppose me.

Care for Timothy's needs when he arrives

³⁶When Timothy arrives, care for his needs and send him on his way in peace so that he may return to me.

Apollos to come when he has the opportunity

³⁷Now about our brother Apollos. I urged him to return to you with the other brethren but he was unwilling at this time. But he says that he will come to you when he has the opportunity.

Stand firm and do everything in love

³⁸Be ever on your guard. Stand firm in the faith. Be men of courage and strength, and do all things in love.

Paul acknowledges the three brethren who visited him from Corinth

³⁹I was glad when Stephanas and Fortunatus and Achaicus arrived^{F*} for they supplied what was lacking from you. ⁴⁰They refreshed my spirit. Such men deserve recognition.

Greetings from those with Paul

⁴¹The churches here in the province of Asia send you greetings. Aquila and Priscilla greet you warmly in the Lord, as does the church that meets in their house. ⁴²All the brethren here send you their greetings. Greet one another with a holy kiss.

Paul writes a greeting with his own hand

⁴³I Paul now write this greeting in my own hand.^{F*} If anyone has no love for the Lord a curse be upon him.

⁴⁴Come soon O Lord. The grace of the Lord Jesus be with you and my love to all of you. Amen.

*33 ie every Sunday when they meet.

*39 Probably the three men who brought the letter to Paul from Corinth.

*43 A security precaution to ensure authenticity, (see 2 Thessalonians 2:8). Paul normally dictated his letters to a scribe.

*26 A resurrected body is spiritual to the extent that it can pass through walls, but is nevertheless tangible flesh and can eat and drink for when Jesus appeared to his apostles in a closed room after his resurrection he invited them to touch him. He then deliberately ate food in front of them (Matt-Mark-Luke 35:41-44). Jesus also told his apostles at the last supper that he would drink new wine with them in the kingdom of God (Matt-Mark-Luke 30:26).

*28 The words 'flesh and blood' are used here to describe a mortal unresurrected person, however a resurrected person also has flesh and bone (blood is not mentioned) but of a higher imperishable order for Jesus said after his resurrection, "Touch me and see, a spirit has not flesh and bones as you see I have" (Matt-Mark-Luke 35:45).

*29 Trumpets are to herald the various events when Jesus returns, and the final trumpet will announce the first resurrection, that of the righteous dead. The unrighteous dead will not be resurrected until after the 1000 year reign of Christ upon the earth, known as the Millennium (Revelation 16:7).

2 CORINTHIANS

Since writing his earlier letter, 1 Corinthians approx a year ago, Paul is now on his second mission and has revisited the troublesome Corinthian church, a visit which he describes as *'painful'* (2 Corinthians 1:28). After this visit he sent them another letter (now lost) written in *'great anguish of heart and with many tears'* and informed the Corinthians that he planned to visit them again on his way to Macedonia.

However in his anxiety as to how his severe letter was received by the Corinthians, Paul could not bring himself to visit as intended and instead went directly to Macedonia. But Titus who probably delivered the severe letter to the Corinthians has brought back to Paul a favourable report.

A greatly relieved Paul now writes again, this time to cement home the repentance brought about by his previous letter, and to inform the Corinthians why he did not visit them as planned. He also reminds them of the collection for the Jerusalem saints and warns them again about false teachers, Jewish Pharisee converts to Christianity who were still clinging to the old Law of Moses and who were *'masquerading as apostles,'* preaching a false gospel and trying to discredit Paul.

2 Corinthians is a very emotional letter. Paul bares his soul and reveals the tremendous depth of his fatherly love for the Corinthians as he answers the charges made by his critics.

AUTHOR Paul the apostle.

For God loves a cheerful giver. 2 Corinthians 2:21.

CONTENTS

Chapter

Paul's introduction	1	We wage war with weapons of divine power	3
Suffering produces patient endurance	1	Disobedience among believers to be punished	3
God delivered us from hardships in Ephesus	1	I shall not be put to shame	3
Our fleeting troubles achieve everlasting glory	1	Some say my letters strong but my presence weak ..	3
All must appear before judgement seat of Christ.....	1	Some false apostles boast of themselves	3
Christ became sin for us	1	Only he whom the Lord commends is approved	3
Help us with your prayers	1	We can boast for we brought you the gospel	3
Let us boast of each other when Jesus returns	1	We also hope to preach in lands beyond you	3
Hardships Paul and his companions endure	1	Put up with my foolishness for I am jealous for you...3	3
You withheld your love from us	1	I fear you may be deceived by false preachers	3
Make room for us in your hearts	1	I am not the least inferior to these 'super apostles'...3	3
Why I did not visit as planned	1	Was I wrong to preach to you free of charge?	3
Why I wrote harshly in my last letter	1	These boasters masquerade as apostles	3
Forgive any among you who have caused pain	1	Satan himself masquerades as an angel of light	3
I had no peace of mind on my journey	1	Let me boast a little as a fool	3
My joy was great when I heard from Titus	1	I have worked harder than all these others	3
I do not now regret the sorrow my letter caused	1	Paul boasts of dangers he has passed through	3
Godly sorrow brings genuine repentance	1	I also carry the burden of all the churches	3
We were delighted to see how happy Titus was	1	I have been caught up to Paradise	3
You had repented	1	I will refrain from boasting further	3
Macedonia gave generously for Jerusalem saints.....2	2	Let some think more of me than is warranted	3
A willing gift is an acceptable gift	2	I was given a messenger from Satan	3
We desire equality among the saints	2	To keep me from becoming conceited	3
You were first to give so bring it to completion	2	Three times I pleaded with Lord for it to leave me ...3	3
Titus and two other brothers are coming to you	2	I rejoice in my weaknesses	3
May you excel in your giving	2	That Christ's power may rest on me	3
We are taking pains to do right regarding this gift	2	I did miracles among you that mark a true apostle ...3	3
No real need for me to write to you about giving	2	I was never a burden to you	3
Have the donations ready when I come	2	I am ready to visit Corinth a third time	4
Let I be ashamed	2	Paul accused of being crafty	4
Whoever sows generously reaps generously	2	We are not defending ourselves	4
God loves a cheerful giver	2	I fear I still may find sin among you	4
God is able to provide your every need	2	When I come I will not spare these ones	4
Paul accused of worldliness	3	Test yourselves	4

2 CORINTHIANS 1

Be not yoked together with unbelievers4
We pray that you will do what is right4
Paul hopes that he will not need to be harsh4

Be of one mind and you will live in peace4
Greetings from the saints in Macedonia4

Bold The Lord or an angel speaking.
Bold italics A prophet speaking under inspiration.

1

Paul's introduction

¹Paul an apostle of Christ Jesus and Timothy our brother, to the church of God in Corinth and all the saints throughout Achaia.^{F*} ²Grace and peace to you all from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

Suffering produces patient endurance

³Praise be to the Father, the God of compassion who comforts us in our troubles so that we in turn can comfort others.

⁴We know that you too share in our suffering, which suffering produces patient endurance. You also share in our comfort.

God delivered us from severe hardships in Ephesus

⁵We want you to know brethren of the hardships we suffered in Ephesus. They were unbearable and in our hearts we felt the sentence of death.

⁶This happened that we might not trust in ourselves but trust in God. For we know that God who raised the Lord Jesus from the dead will also raise us by Jesus, and bring us with you into his presence.

Our fleeting troubles are achieving an incomparable everlasting glory

⁷Therefore we do not lose heart, for although our bodies are perishing, inwardly we are being renewed every day. ⁸Our fleeting troubles are achieving for us an incomparable everlasting glory.

We all must appear before the judgement seat of Christ

⁹We live in the body by faith not by sight, but would prefer to be at home with the Lord.

¹⁰Therefore we labour to please him, for we must all appear before the judgement seat of Christ to receive our due for the things we did in the flesh, whether good or bad.

Christ became sin for us

¹¹Therefore we implore you on Christ's behalf to be reconciled to God, for God made Christ who was without sin, to become sin for us that we might become righteous before God.

¹²He delivered us from the deadly peril and will continue to deliver us.

Help us with your prayers

¹³You also must help us with your prayers, so that many will give thanks for the blessings granted us through many prayers. ¹⁴For our conscience allows us to boast that we have conducted ourselves in all holiness before God, not in worldly wisdom but by God's grace.

Let us boast of each other when Jesus returns

¹⁵I hope that you can boast of us just as we will boast of you on the day that the Lord Jesus returns.

Hardships Paul and his companions endure

¹⁶We put no obstacle in anybody's way, rather in all that we do we strive to be servants of God, enduring great troubles, hardships and distress. ¹⁷Beatings, imprisonment, riots, hard toil, sleepless nights and hunger.

¹⁸In purity, understanding, patience and kindness. ¹⁹In the Holy Spirit and in sincere love. In truthful speech and in the power of God, with weapons of righteousness.

²⁰Through glory and dishonour, bad report and good report, being genuine yet treated as impostors, dying yet living on, being beaten but not killed. ²¹Sorrowful yet rejoicing, poor yet making many rich, having nothing yet possessing all things.

You withheld your love from us

²²We spoke freely to you Corinthians, and opened wide our hearts to you. ²³We did not withhold our love but you withheld yours from us.

Make room for us in your hearts

²⁴Make room for us in your hearts. We have not wronged or corrupted or exploited you. You have such a place in our hearts that we would die with you.

²⁵I have great confidence and pride in you. I am greatly encouraged. Despite all our troubles my joy knows no bounds.

Why I did not visit Corinth as planned

²⁶I had planned to visit you on my way to Macedonia and again on my return. ²⁷These plans were not made lightly, and I call upon God as my witness that it was only in order to spare you that I did not come as planned.

²⁸For I made up my mind not to make another painful visit. For if I cause you pain who is there left to bring me joy?

Why I wrote harshly in my last letter

²⁹I wrote as I did in my last letter so that when I came to you I would not suffer pain from those who ought to bring me joy. I wanted my joy to be the joy of you all.

³⁰I wrote to you out of great anguish of heart and with many tears, not to cause you pain but to let you know the depth of my love for you.

³¹The reason I wrote was to see if you would abide a test and be obedient in all things.

Forgive any among you who have caused pain

³²If any one has caused pain, he has caused

*1 Achaia was the Roman name for southern Greece.

it not only to me but to some extent to all of you. ³³For such a one the torment of the pain he has inflicted on the majority is sufficient punishment for him.

³⁴Now you should forgive and comfort such a one that he not be overwhelmed by excessive sorrow. Reaffirm your love for him.

³⁵If you forgive anyone I will also forgive him, in order that Satan might not gain the advantage over us. For we are not blind to his schemes.

I had no peace of mind on my journey to Macedonia

³⁶When we reached Troas I found the Lord had opened a door for me to preach the gospel there. ³⁷But I had no peace of mind for I did not find Titus there.^{F*} So we left Troas and went direct to Macedonia.

My joy was greater than ever when I heard the good news from Titus

³⁸When we got to Macedonia we still had no rest but were harassed at every turn.

³⁹But then God comforted us by the coming of Titus and by the comfort you had given him. He told us of your longing for me, of your deep sorrow and your ardent concern. ⁴⁰My joy was greater than ever before.

I do not now regret the sorrow my letter caused

⁴¹Even though I caused you sorrow by my letter, I do not regret it. Though for a short time I did. ⁴²Now I am happy for your sorrow has led you to repentance.

Godly sorrow brings genuine repentance

⁴³Godly sorrow brings repentance that leads to salvation and leaves no regret, but worldly sorrow leads to Death.

⁴⁴See what this godly sorrow has produced in you. What earnestness and eagerness to clear yourselves, what indignation, what alarm, what longing and concern and readiness to see justice done. ⁴⁵At every point you have proved yourselves innocent in this matter.

We were delighted to see how happy Titus was at your repentance

⁴⁶By all this we are encouraged. We were delighted to see how happy Titus was. His spirit has been refreshed by all of you.

⁴⁷I had boasted to him about you and you have not put me to shame. All I said about you has proved to be true. ⁴⁸And his love for you is all the greater for you received him with obedience, reverence, and trembling.

2

The churches here in Macedonia have given generously for the saints in Jerusalem

¹And now brethren, we want you to know of the grace God has given the churches here in

Macedonia. In the midst of severe trials their overflowing joy and deep poverty brought forth a rich generosity.

A willing gift is an acceptable gift

²For they donated as much as they were able, and beyond to give to the saints in Jerusalem. In fact they pleaded with us for the privilege of sharing in this giving. ³And when there is a willingness the gift is acceptable.

We desire equality among the saints

⁴Our desire is not that the Jerusalem saints might be relieved while others are burdened, but that there be equality.

⁵At the present time your plenty will supply what they need, and in time their plenty will supply what you need.

You were the first to give so bring it to completion

⁶Last year you were the first to give, and also the first to have a desire to do so. ⁷So we have urged Titus to bring to completion this act of love on your part. Finish the work according to your means.

Titus and two other brothers are coming to you

⁸I thank God, who has placed in the heart of Titus the same love I have for you. He is returning to you with much enthusiasm and on his own initiative.

⁹We are sending along with him the brother who is praised by all the churches for his service to the gospel. And also our brother who has often proved to us that he is zealous.^{F*}

¹⁰Show these men the proof of your love and the reason for our pride in you.

May you excel in your giving

¹¹Just as you excel in faith, and in speaking, and in knowledge and sincerity and in your love for us, may you also excel in this act of giving.

¹²I am not commanding you, rather I want to test the sincerity of your love by comparing it with the sincerity of others.

We are taking pains to do right regarding this gift

¹³To avoid any criticism of the way we administer this gift we are taking pains to do it right, not only in the eyes of the Lord but also in the eyes of men.

There is really no need for me to write to you about giving

¹⁴There is really no need for me to write to you about this gift to the saints. I know of your eagerness to donate. ¹⁵I have been boasting about it to the Macedonians telling them that you have been ready to give since last year. Your enthusiasm has stirred most of them to action.

Have the donations ready when I come lest I be ashamed

¹⁶So I am sending the brethren to visit you in advance to finish the arrangements for the

*³⁷ Titus probably delivered Paul's harsh letter to the Corinthians and Paul was no doubt anxious to know the outcome.

*⁹ These two men are believed to be Barnabas and Luke.

2 CORINTHIANS 3

generous donations you have promised, in order that our boasting about you not prove hollow.

¹⁷Then it will be ready as a generous gift and not as one grudgingly given. ¹⁸For if any Macedonians are with me when I come to collect the donations and find you unprepared, I should be ashamed.

Whoever sows generously reaps generously

¹⁹And remember this, "Whoever sows sparingly will reap sparingly, but whoever sows generously will reap generously."

God loves a cheerful giver

²⁰Each man should give what he feels in his heart to give, and not reluctantly or under compulsion. ²¹For God loves a cheerful giver.

God is able to provide your every need in abundance

²²And God is able to provide you every blessing in abundance so that you will always have sufficient for your own needs and be able to provide in abundance for every good cause.

²³You will be made rich in every way so that you can be generous on every occasion, and your generosity will be a thanksgiving to God.

²⁴And because of your generous giving others will praise God for your obedience in living the gospel of Christ and their hearts will go out in prayer for you.

3

Paul accused of worldliness

¹Now, in the meekness and gentleness of Christ, I appeal to you. ²I Paul, who am 'meek when face to face with you but bold when away,'* that when I come I will not need to show boldness to those of you who have accused us of acting by the standards of the world.

We live in the world but wage war with weapons of divine power

³For although we live in the world we do not wage war as the world does, but rather with weapons of divine power.

We are ready to punish disobedience among believers

⁴We demolish arguments and all proud obstacles to the knowledge of God in order to bring all in obedience to Christ.

⁵However, when your obedience is complete we are ready to punish every act of disobedience.

⁶If anyone is sure he belongs to Christ, he should also remember that we too belong to Christ just as much as he does.

I shall not be put to shame

⁷And even though I boast too much about the authority the Lord gave me for building you up, I shall not be put to shame.

Some say my letters are strong but my presence weak

⁸I do not wish to appear to be intimidating you by my letters for some of you say, "His letters are weighty and strong but in person his presence is weak, and his manner of speaking is of no account."

⁹Let such men realise that we will be as bold in our actions as I am in my letters when we come.

Some false apostles boast of themselves

¹⁰But we dare not compare ourselves with some false apostles who boast of themselves.

¹¹They judge themselves by their own standards and are therefore not wise. ¹²We however confine our boasting to the field God has assigned us.

Only he whom the Lord commends is approved

¹³For as it is written, "*Let he who boasts, boast in the Lord.*" It is not he who boasts of himself who is approved, but he whom the Lord commends.

We can boast for we brought you the gospel

¹⁴We do not go too far in our boasting, for it was us who brought you the gospel of Christ. So we are not boasting of work done by others.

We also hope to preach the gospel in the lands beyond you

¹⁵Our hope is that as your faith continues to grow our activity among you will also grow, so that we can preach the gospel in the lands beyond you.

Put up with my foolishness for I am jealous for you

¹⁶I hope you will put up with a little of my foolishness for I am jealous for you with a godly jealousy. ¹⁷I betrothed you as a bride to Christ and desire to present you to him as a pure virgin.

I fear you may be deceived by false preachers

¹⁸But I fear that just as Eve was deceived by the serpent's cunning, your minds may also be led astray from your pure devotion to Christ.

¹⁹For it seems that whenever anybody else comes along and preaches a Jesus other than the Jesus we preached, or a different gospel from the one you accepted, you believe them readily.

I am not the least inferior to these 'super-apostles'

²⁰I consider myself not the least inferior to these 'super apostles.' ²¹If I lack eloquence in speaking, I do have knowledge.

Was I wrong to preach to you free of charge?

²²Was it wrong of me to humble myself by preaching the gospel to you free of charge? ²³I robbed other churches by accepting support from them in order to serve you. ²⁴I kept myself from being a burden to you in any way and will continue to do so. Nobody among you can silence this boast of mine.

²⁵Would I do that if I did not love you? God knows that I do.

*2 Paul is paraphrasing his critic's words. See verse 8 of this chapter.

These boasters masquerade as apostles of Christ

²⁶And what I do for you I will continue to do in order to cut the ground from under those teachers who want to be recognised as equal with us. ²⁷Such boasters are false apostles, workers of deceit, masquerading as apostles of Christ.

Satan himself masquerades as an angel of light

²⁸And no wonder, for Satan himself masquerades as an angel of light.

²⁹Is it surprising then that his servants masquerade as servants of righteousness. Their end will be what their actions deserve.

Let me boast a little as a fool

³⁰Let no one take me for a fool. But if you do, accept me as a fool that I may boast a little. ³¹I do not say this by the Lord's authority but since many who come to you boast by human standards, I will also boast. Though it seems that you gladly bear with fools in your 'wisdom.' ³²You even put up with it when someone enslaves you or strikes you in the face. I admit we were too 'weak' for that. ³³I am speaking as a fool.

I have worked harder than all these others who come to you

³⁴Whatever any of these others who come to you boast about, I can boast of also. Are they Israelites? So am I. Are they descendants of Abraham? So am I. Are they servants of Christ? I am more so. ³⁵I am mad to talk like this.

³⁶I have worked harder, been in prison more frequently, been flogged more severely. I have been exposed to death again and again.

Paul boasts of the dangers he has passed through

³⁷Five times I received from the Jews the forty lashes minus one. Three times I was beaten with rods. Once I was stoned. Three times I have been shipwrecked.^F * I have spent a night and a day in the open sea.

³⁸I constantly travel and have been in danger from rivers, from robbers, from my own countrymen and from the Gentiles. In the city, in the country, at sea, and now in danger from false brethren.

³⁹I have laboured and toiled and have often gone sleepless. I have known hunger and thirst and have been cold and naked.

I also carry the burden of all the churches

⁴⁰Besides all that, I daily carry the burden of all the churches. For who in the church becomes weak and I do not feel weak? Who sins and I not suffer?

⁴¹If I must boast I will boast of the things that reveal my weakness. ⁴²The God and Father of the Lord Jesus who is to be praised forever knows that I am not lying.

⁴³In Damascus, to avoid arrest I was lowered in a basket from a window in the wall. ⁴⁴I must

continue this boasting though there is nothing to be gained.

I have been caught up to Paradise

⁴⁵I will now speak of visions and revelations. Fourteen years ago I was caught up to the third heaven, to Paradise, and I heard things that mortal man is forbidden to reveal. ⁴⁶Whether in my body or out of my body I could not tell.

I will refrain from boasting further so that no one will think more of me than is warranted

⁴⁷Even though I choose to boast I am not a fool, for I speak the truth. But I will now refrain that no one think more of me than is warranted.

I was given a messenger of Satan to keep me from becoming conceited

⁴⁸To keep me from becoming conceited because of my abundance of revelations there was given me a thorn in the flesh, a messenger of Satan to harass me.

Three times I pleaded with the Lord for it to leave me

⁴⁹Three times I pleaded with the Lord for it to leave me, but he said to me, "My grace is sufficient for you, for my power is made perfect in weakness."

I rejoice in my weakness that Christ's power may rest on me

⁵⁰Therefore I boast all the more gladly about my weaknesses, that Christ's power may rest upon me. ⁵¹This is why I delight in weakness, insults, hardships, persecutions and difficulties. For when I am weak I am strong.

I did among you miracles that mark a true apostle

⁵²I have made a fool of myself but you drove me to it. You should rather have commended me. ⁵³For I am not the least inferior to these 'super apostles' even though I am nothing.

⁵⁴The miracles that mark a true apostle I did among you.

I was never a burden to you

⁵⁵And in what way were you less favoured than the other churches, except that I was never a burden to you. Forgive me for this 'wrong.'

4

Paul to visit Corinth a third time

¹Now I am ready to visit you a third time and I will still not be a burden to you. ²For what I want is not your worldly possessions but you.

³After all, children should not have to support their parents, but parents their children. ⁴So I will gladly give you everything I have. If I love you more will you love me less?

Paul accused of being crafty

⁵Yet some of you have said, "He was crafty and got the better of us by guile."

⁶Have I exploited you through any of the men I sent you? Did Titus exploit you? Did we not all act in the same spirit and follow the same course?

*³⁷ Yet another shipwreck awaits Paul, the one described in Acts chapter 24 is yet to come.

2 CORINTHIANS 4

We are not defending ourselves

⁷Are you thinking that we have been defending ourselves to you? Rather we have been writing as brothers in Christ. ⁸Everything we do beloved is for your upbuilding.

I fear that when I come many of you will not have repented

⁹However my fear is that when I come I may not find you as I wish you to be. I fear there may be quarrelling, jealousy, anger, divisions, slander, gossip, arrogance and disorder.

¹⁰I fear that when I come, my God will humble me before you and I will be grieved over many who have sinned previously and have not repented of their sexual sin and debauchery.

I will not spare those who sinned earlier

¹¹I warned those who had sinned when I was with you last and I now warn them again. ¹²On my return I will not spare those who sinned earlier and have not repented. Nor any of the others, since you are demanding proof that Christ is speaking through me.

¹³Christ will not be weak in dealing with them, but powerful.

Test yourselves

¹⁴Test yourselves to see whether you are holding to the faith. ¹⁵Do you not realise that Jesus Christ is in you, unless of course you fail the test? ¹⁶I trust that you will find we have not failed the test.

Be not yoked together with unbelievers

¹⁷Brethren, be not yoked together with unbelievers. For what do righteousness and wickedness have in common? ¹⁸What fellowship has light with darkness? What harmony is there between Christ and Satan? ¹⁹What does a believer have in common with an unbeliever?

We pray that you will do what is right

²⁰Now we pray to God that you will not sin but do what is right, even though we may seem to some to have failed. ²¹But we cannot do anything against the truth, only for the truth.

Paul hopes he will not need to be harsh

²²I write like this while I am absent that when I come I may not have to be harsh in my use of

the authority the Lord has given me. ²³For he gave it to me to build you up, not to tear you down.

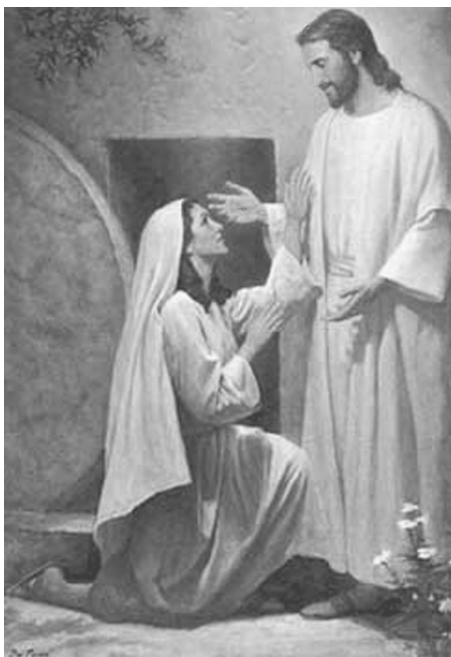
Be of one mind and you will live in peace

²⁴Finally my brothers good-bye. ²⁵Aim for perfection and heed my appeal. Be of one mind and live together in peace. The God of love and peace will be with you.

Greetings from the saints in Macedonia

²⁶Greet one another with a holy kiss. All the saints in Macedonia send their greetings.

²⁷May the grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, the love of God, and the fellowship of the Holy Spirit be with you all.



Mary Magdalene at the tomb of Jesus after his resurrection.

GALATIANS

As with the Corinthian church in Paul's previous letter, the churches in Galatia had also been visited by self-styled apostles in the form of Jewish Pharisee converts to Christianity. These apostles had been teaching the predominantly non-Jewish Christians of Galatia that they could not be saved unless they also obeyed the old Law of Moses, and in particular the requirement of male circumcision.

Paul writes this blistering and masterful letter to demolish these false claims and to remind the Galatians that his authority as an apostle came direct from Jesus Christ himself. He summarises his argument with this statement: "*Neither circumcision nor uncircumcision has any value. The only thing that matters is to be born anew and to have faith in Jesus Christ, expressing itself through love*" (Galatians 2:32-33).

Paul founded the Galatian churches during his first mission. These churches are generally accepted as being Antioch, Iconium, Lystra and Derbe. The province of Galatia was under Roman rule in Paul's day – today it is part of Turkey.

AUTHOR Paul the apostle.

What has happened to all your joy? Galatians 2:22

CONTENTS

Chapter

Paul's introduction	1	How I wish I could be with you my dear children	2
I am astonished you are turning to a different gospel... 1	1	Christ has set us free from the Law.....	2
I received the gospel from Jesus Christ not a man ... 1	1	Circumcision is nothing	2
God set me apart to preach before I was born	1	Only thing that matters is to be born anew	2
James, Peter and John approve the gospel I preach... 1	1	And to have faith in Jesus Christ	2
Titus a Greek, was not compelled to be circumcised ... 1	1	They who are confusing you will pay the penalty	2
Later I opposed Peter when he acted hypocritically ... 1	1	Indulge not the flesh but serve each other in love	3
Why force Gentiles to live like Jews?	1	Love your neighbour as yourself	3
We cannot be justified by the Law of Moses	1	This commandment sums up the entire law of God... 3	3
Only by faith in Jesus Christ	1	The Spirit and flesh are in opposition to each other... 3	3
The Spirit works miracles among you	2	The sinful works of the flesh	3
Only because you believe the gospel	2	Yielders to the flesh will not inherit kingdom of God ... 3	3
Blessings of Abraham come through belief in Christ ... 2	2	Fruits of the Spirit	3
Not by observing the Law of Moses	2	The Holy Spirit crucifies sinful desires of flesh	3
What then was the purpose of the Law?	2	Whatever a man sows that will he reap	3
Believers no longer under supervision of the Law	2	Restore gently any who sin	3
Do you wish to be enslaved all over again?	2	We reap a harvest from our well-doing	3
What has happened to your joy?	2	I am now writing with my own hand	3
Have I become your enemy telling you the truth?	2	Let no one cause me any more distress	3

Bold The Lord or an angel speaking.

Bold italics A prophet speaking under inspiration.

1

Paul's introduction

¹Paul, called to be an apostle not by man but by Jesus Christ, and all the brethren with me, to the churches in Galatia.

²Grace and peace to you from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ who died for our sins to rescue us from this sinful age.

³Glory be to him for ever and ever. Amen.

I am astonished that you are so quickly turning to a different gospel

⁴I am astonished that you are so quickly turning from the gospel of Christ which we

preached to you, to a different gospel which is really no gospel at all.

⁵Evidently there are some who are confusing you and trying to pervert the true gospel of Christ. ⁶But even if we or an angel from heaven should preach a gospel other than the one we preached, let him be cursed. I say again, let him be cursed.

I received the gospel from Jesus Christ not from any man

⁷Brethren, the gospel I preached to you was

GALATIANS 2

not taught to me by any man, I received it by revelation from Jesus Christ.

God set me apart before I was born to preach to the Gentiles

⁸You know of my previous way of life, how I persecuted the church of God and tried to destroy it. ⁹Yet God who set me apart before I was born^{F*} revealed his Son to me, that I might preach him to the Gentiles.

¹⁰When he did so, I did not consult any man nor did I go to Jerusalem to see those who had been called as apostles before me, but I went at once into Arabia.

James, Peter and John approved the gospel I preach

¹¹It was not until three years later that I went up to Jerusalem to meet Peter. I stayed with him fifteen days. ¹²At that time I met none of the other apostles, only James the Lord's brother.^{F*}

¹³Again fourteen years later in response to a revelation I went to Jerusalem with Barnabas and Titus, and privately set before James and the apostles and elders the gospel that I preach to the Gentiles, for fear that I was running my race in vain. ¹⁴This matter arose because some false brethren had infiltrated the church.^{F*}

¹⁵But on the contrary, James and the apostles Peter and John, those reputed to be pillars of the church saw that I had been entrusted with the task of preaching the gospel to the Gentiles, just as Peter had been to the Jews and gave me and Barnabas the right hand of fellowship. ¹⁶They agreed that we should continue to teach the Gentiles and they the Jews.

¹⁷All they asked was that we continue to remember the poor, the very thing I was eager to do.

Titus, though a Greek, was not compelled to be circumcised

¹⁸Titus who was with me was not compelled to be circumcised, even though he was a Greek.

Later I opposed Peter when he acted hypocritically

¹⁹Later when Peter visited us at Antioch I opposed him to his face, for he was plainly in the wrong. ²⁰Certain Jews who belonged to the circumcision group^{F*} came to Antioch from James. Before they arrived Peter would eat with the Gentiles, but when they came he ate separately from the Gentiles for fear of what these visiting Jews would think.

*9 Isaiah and Jeremiah also claimed they were set apart before they were born (Isaiah 25:1 Jeremiah 1:3).

*12 James the brother of Jesus is the author of the book of James and was the presiding elder (or Bishop) of the whole church, and was based in Jerusalem. James the apostle had been killed by this time.

*14 Some Pharisees who had joined the church in Jerusalem believed that all male Gentile converts should be circumcised as were the Jews and live the full Law of Moses (see Acts chapter 14). This false teaching had now reached the Galatian churches and had prompted this letter from Paul.

*20 Jewish Christians who believed that Gentile converts should be circumcised.

²¹The other Jews in Antioch also joined him in this hypocrisy, even Barnabas was led astray.

Why force Gentiles to live like Jews?

²²When I saw that they were not acting true to the gospel, I said to Peter in front of them all, "If you being a Jew live like a Gentile, why force the Gentiles to live like Jews?"

We cannot be justified by the Law of Moses only by faith in Jesus Christ

²³We Jews know that a man is not justified^{F*} by observing the Law of Moses, but by faith in Jesus Christ.

²⁴My old self has died with Christ, but Christ lives in me. I live by faith in the Son of God who loved me and died for me. ²⁵If righteousness could be gained through the Law, Christ died for nothing.

2

The Spirit works miracles among you only because you believe the gospel

¹You foolish Galatians. Who has bewitched you? Does God give you the Holy Spirit and work miracles among you because you observe the Law of Moses, or is it because you believe the gospel?

²How can you be so foolish? After beginning with the Spirit you are now ending with the flesh. Have you suffered so much for nothing?

The blessings of Abraham come through belief in Christ not by observing the Law of Moses

³It is written of Abraham, "**He believed God and it was credited to him as righteousness.**" So also are those who believe children of Abraham.

⁴And the scriptures, foreseeing that God would justify the Gentiles by faith announced the gospel in advance when God said to Abraham, "**All nations will be blessed through you.**"

⁵So those who have faith are blessed along with Abraham the man of faith.

⁶But all who rely on the works of the Law are under a curse, for it is written, "**Cursed is everyone who does not do everything written in the Law.**"

⁷Clearly no one is justified by the Law for the scripture says, "**The righteous will live by faith.**" The Law is not based on faith.

⁸Christ redeemed us from the curse of the Law by becoming a curse for us, for it is written, "**Cursed is he who is hung on a tree.**" ⁹He redeemed us that the blessing promised to Abraham might come to the Gentiles.

What then was the purpose of the Law which was added 430 years after Abraham?

¹⁰What I mean is this, the Law of Moses which was added 430 years after Abraham, did not annul the covenant and promise previously made by God.

*23 To be justified means to be purified from all guilt of sin.

¹¹What then was the purpose of the Law? It was added because of transgression until the Christ on whom the promise given to Abraham was based, had come.

¹²Is the Law then opposed to the promises of God? Certainly not. If a Law could have been added that had the power to impart Eternal Life, then righteousness would certainly have come by the Law. ¹³But the scriptures declare that the whole world is a prisoner of sin. Therefore, what was promised Abraham could only come through faith in Jesus Christ.

Believers no longer under supervision of the Law

¹⁴So the Law was added to lead us to Christ that we might be justified by faith. ¹⁵Now that faith has come we are no longer under the supervision of the Law,^{F*} we are all sons of God through faith and baptism in Jesus Christ.

¹⁶There is neither Jew nor Greek, slave nor free, male nor female, we are all one in Christ. ¹⁷If we belong to Christ then we are Abraham's seed and heirs to the promise.

Do you wish to be enslaved all over again?

¹⁸So why are you turning back again to weak and miserable principles? Do you wish to be enslaved all over again? You are observing special days and months and seasons and years. ¹⁹I fear for you. Have I wasted my efforts?

What has happened to all your joy?

²⁰It was with an infirmity of the body that I first preached the gospel to you.^{F*} ²¹Yet despite my trial in the flesh you did not treat me with contempt. Instead you welcomed me as if I were an angel of God, as if I were the Christ Jesus himself.

²²What has happened to all your joy? ²³I testify that if you could have done so, you would have plucked out your own eyes and given them to me.

Have I become your enemy by telling you the truth about those Judaisers

²⁴Have I become your enemy by telling you the truth?

²⁵Those Judaisers^{F*} are zealous to win you over, but for no good. They want to alienate you from us that you may be zealous for them. ²⁶It is fine to be zealous but only if the purpose is good.

*15 The new law of Christ did not do away with the personal behaviour commandments of the Law of Moses, rather it set higher standards (Matt-Mark-Luke Chapters 7 to 9). Jesus said that he came to fulfill the Law (Matt-Mark-Luke 9:11). It appears that only circumcision (at least for non-Jews) and the animal sacrifice laws were fulfilled, although animal sacrifice which has been practiced since Adam, will again be introduced, perhaps only for a time, in the future Millennial temple described by Ezekiel (Ezekiel chapters 14 to 16). What was lacking under the Law of Moses was the atonement of Jesus Christ and the availability to all believers of the purifying power and gifts of the Holy Spirit (Galatians 2:1).

*20 Paul had just come from Lystra where he been stoned and left for dead (see Acts 13:6). Evidently he was still suffering from eye injuries, see following verse 23.

*25 Judaisers were Jewish converts to Christianity who zealously preached that it was also necessary for Christians to obey the Law of Moses.

How I wish I could be

with you now my dear children

²⁷My dear children for whom I am again in the pains of childbirth until Christ is truly formed in you, how I wish I could be with you now and soften my tone of voice, for I am perplexed about you.

Christ has set us free from the Law

²⁸Christ has set us free, so stand firm and do not be again burdened by slavery to the Law.

²⁹Mark my words, if you become circumcised Christ will be of no value to you at all. ³⁰For every man who becomes circumcised is obligated to obey the whole Law.

³¹You who are trying to be justified by the Law have become alienated from Christ. You have fallen away from grace.^{F*}

Circumcision is nothing, the only thing that matters is to be born anew and have faith in Jesus Christ

³²Those who are trying to impress outwardly are compelling you to be circumcised. But in Jesus Christ neither circumcision nor uncircumcision has any value. ³³The only thing that matters is to be born anew and to have faith in Jesus Christ, expressing itself through love.

They who are confusing you will pay the penalty

³⁴You were running a good race. Who diverted you from the path of truth? Whoever they were they did not come from him who called you.

³⁵However I am confident in the Lord that you will now see the correct view. ³⁶They who are confusing you over circumcision, whoever they may be will pay the penalty. ³⁷I wish they would go all the way and castrate themselves.

3

Do not indulge the flesh but serve each other in love

¹Now brethren, you were called to be free, not to use your freedom to indulge the flesh but rather to serve one another in love.

Love your neighbour as yourself sums up the entire law of God

²The entire law of God is summed up in a single commandment, "Love your neighbour as yourself."

The Spirit and flesh are in opposition

³So live by the Holy Spirit and you will not yield to the desires of the flesh. ⁴For the flesh desires what is contrary to the Spirit, and the Spirit what is contrary to the flesh. They are in opposition to each other.

The sinful works of the flesh

⁵The works of the flesh are obvious; sexual immorality, impurity, debauchery, idolatry, sorcery, hatred, discord, jealousy, anger, selfishness, dissension, divisions, envy, drunkenness, orgies and the like.

*31 Grace is the free gift from a loving God, of divine help, divine power or favour, beyond the natural abilities of man.

GALATIANS 3

Those who yield to the flesh will not inherit the kingdom of God

⁶I warn you again as I did before, those who live like this will not inherit the kingdom of God.

The fruits of the Spirit

⁷But the fruits of the Spirit are love, joy, peace, patience, kindness, goodness, faithfulness, gentleness and chastity.

The Holy Spirit crucifies sinful desires of the flesh

⁸Those who belong to Jesus Christ have crucified the sinful flesh with its passions and desires. ⁹Since we live by the Holy Spirit let us walk in the way of the Spirit. ¹⁰Let us not become conceited or envious of each other, nor provoke one another.

Whatever a man sows that will he also reap

¹¹Be not deceived, God will not be mocked, for whatever a man sows that will he also reap.

¹²He who sows to please his flesh, from his flesh will reap destruction. But he who sows to please the Spirit, from the Spirit will reap Eternal Life.

Restore gently any who sin

¹³Brethren if any among you be overcome by sin, you who have the Spirit should restore him gently. But be careful or you too may be tempted.

¹⁴Bear one another's burdens, by doing this you fulfil the Law of Christ.

We reap a harvest from our well-doing

¹⁵Let us not grow weary in well-doing for in due season we will reap a harvest, if we endure.

¹⁶Therefore let us take every opportunity to do good to all people, especially those who belong to the family of believers.

I am now writing with my own hand

¹⁷Note the larger letters as I now write to you with my own hand.^{F*}

Let no one cause me any more distress

¹⁸Now let no one cause me any more distress for I bear on my body the marks of my suffering for Jesus.

¹⁹Brethren the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit. Amen.

*¹⁷ Paul dictated his letters to a scribe, however to ensure authenticity he would close in his own handwriting (2 Thessalonians 2:8).

ROMANS

Paul has just completed his third mission and is about to take the offerings donated by churches he has founded to the poor among the saints in Jerusalem.

Before he sets off, Paul takes time to write this letter to the saints at Rome to edify and uplift them and teach them correct doctrine as an 'apostle to the Gentiles.' He wanted to defuse any "you must obey the Law of Moses" false doctrine they may have been exposed to from zealous but misguided Jewish converts such as had been corrupting churches geographically closer to Jerusalem. He does this by presenting lengthy, well reasoned arguments such as a lawyer would present in court in favour of taking the Holy Spirit as a guide rather than the letter of the Law of Moses.

Paul also wanted to let the Romans know that he planned to visit them on the way to his next mission in Spain. Paul eventually did visit Rome but as a prisoner, about three years after this letter was written (see Acts 25:13-31) for as the book of Acts records and the Holy Spirit at least partially revealed to Paul much trouble and imprisonment awaited him in Jerusalem (Acts chapters 20-23).

The population of Rome in Paul's day is thought to have exceeded one million. Eventually about 25% of the city became Christian.

Paul also visited Spain as planned during five years of missionary work that followed his release from prison. He later returned to Rome and was there beheaded by the emperor Nero about 67 AD.

AUTHOR Paul the apostle.

I am not ashamed of the gospel of Jesus Christ. It is the power of God that saves all who believe. Romans 1:7.

CONTENTS

	Chapter	
Paul's introduction to the saints at Rome		1
Your faith is widely reported		1
I have been hindered from coming to you		1
I am not ashamed of the gospel of Jesus Christ		1
Gospel only received by belief		1
Godless men are without excuse		1
God's power is clearly seen in all creation		1
Minds of godless men become darkened		1
They foolishly turn to idolatry		1
They become inflamed with homosexual lust		1
Every kind of wickedness found among godless		1
A mere man should not pass judgement on sinners..		1
God's tolerance is to allow sinners time to repent ..		1
God will judge each person on what he has done ...		1
Eternal Life awaits the kindly		1
But wrath awaits the selfish		1
Only those under the Law to be judged by the Law...		2
A man is only a Jew if he is one inwardly		2
Many advantages in being a Jew		2
Yet Jews and Gentiles alike are sinners		2
But now there is a way to God apart from the Law ...		2
Belief in Jesus Christ is the way		2
Faith in Jesus fulfills the Law of Moses		2
Abraham blessed by his faith not by the Law		2
Our hope is to share the glory of God		2
Suffering develops endurance and character		2
Although we were sinners Christ died for us		3
Death and sin entered the world by Adam		3
But Eternal Life and righteousness came by Jesus...		3
Baptism a symbol of the burial of our old self		3
The birth of a new life		3
No longer be slaves to sin		3
The wages of sin is Death		3
The Law likened to civil marriage		3
The new way of the Spirit		3
The old Law was holy but enticed to sin		3
Jesus Christ rescues us from sin		3
The Holy Spirit brings Eternal Life and peace		3
The sinful mind is hostile to God		3
Those led by the Spirit are sons of God		4
Predestined sons of God co-heirs with Christ		4
Will share in his glory		4
Our sufferings nothing compared to awaiting glory ...		4
The Holy Spirit intercedes for us		4
Jesus also intercedes for us		4
All things work together for our good		4
Nothing can separate us from the love of Jesus		4
Paul sorrows for unbelieving Israel		4
God influences men for his own purposes		4
God is the potter and men the clay		4
The Gentiles have obtained righteousness by faith...		4
Israel tried to obtain righteousness by works alone...		4
They do not understand Christ is the end of the Law...		4
Christians who trust in Jesus as Lord will be saved ...		5
No difference between Jew and Gentile in Lord		5
Preachers of gospel necessary		5
Israel heard but did not understand		5
Not all Israelites are rejected by God		5
I myself am an Israelite		5
A remnant of Israel always remain faithful		5
Salvation came to Gentiles to make Israel envious ...		5
Even greater riches to come to Gentiles		5
When Israel becomes righteous		5
Gentiles like wild olive shoots.....		5

ROMANS 1

Will be grafted into the mother olive tree of Israel	5
Israel's natural branches broken off due to unbelief ..	5
Paul reveals a mystery	5
Eventually all Israel will be saved	5
Israel loved on account of the patriarchs	5
The rich depths of the wisdom of God	5
Be humble so as to discern God's will	5
Apply the various gifts of the Spirit diligently	6
Love sincerely, hate evil and cling to good	6
Honour each other rather than yourself	6
Be zealous in serving and ever joyful	6
Be hopeful, patient, prayerful and hospitable	6
Live in harmony and be humble and compassionate ..	6
Live in peace and seek not revenge	6
Overcome evil with good	6
Submit to your rulers	6
Pay all taxes and other debts when due	6
Love is the fulfilment of the Law	6

Behave decently – avoid orgies and drunkenness	6
Avoid immorality, quarrelling and jealousy	6
Judge not others	7
Do not offend another believer by the food you eat ...	7
Edify and build up each other	7
Be at one and be filled with joy, peace and hope	7
God has called me to be an apostle to the Gentiles .	7
I plan to visit you on my way to Spain	7
Paul to visit Jerusalem first	7
Pray for my rescue from unbelievers in Jerusalem ...	7
Paul asks the Roman saints to assist Phoebe	8
Greetings to those Paul knows at Rome	8
Greet one another with a holy kiss	8
Warning against false teachers	8
Greetings from those with Paul	8
Greeting from Paul's scribe Tertius	8
Glory to the only wise God	8

Bold The Lord or an angel speaking.

Bold italics A prophet speaking under inspiration.

1

Paul's introduction

¹From Paul, a servant of Jesus who is the Christ descended of David in the flesh but the Son of God as to his spirit. As promised by the prophets of old in the holy scriptures and resurrected from the dead.

²By whom I was called as an apostle, to announce the gospel^{F*} of God and to call all Gentiles to Jesus Christ in obedient faith.

To the saints at Rome

³To all in Rome who are loved by God and called to be saints,^{F*} grace and peace to you from God our Father and from the Lord Jesus Christ.

Your faith is widely reported

⁴First I thank my God through Jesus Christ for all of you, for your faith is widely reported.

I have been hindered from coming to you

⁵God whom I serve with all my heart is my witness that I always remember you in my prayers, and pray that the way be opened for me to come to you. For I long to see you and impart some spiritual gift to make you strong and to be encouraged by your faith.

⁶I intended many times to come to you that I might have a harvest among you but have been hindered from doing so.

I am not ashamed of the gospel of Jesus Christ

⁷I am eager to preach to you in Rome for I am not ashamed of the gospel of Jesus Christ. It is the power of God that saves all who believe.

Gospel only received by belief

⁸In the gospel of Jesus Christ the goodness of God is revealed, but it is only received by belief, for it is written, "***The righteous shall live by faith.***"

Godless men are without excuse for God's power is clearly seen in all creation

⁹The anger of God is upon godless men who suppress truth by wickedness. For since the creation of the world God's power can be clearly seen in that which has been created. Therefore men are without excuse.

The minds of godless men become darkened and foolish and they turn to idolatry

¹⁰Although they know of God, such men neither glorify him nor give thanks to him. Consequently their foolish minds are darkened. They think they are wise but in reality they are fools.

¹¹They exchange the glory of the immortal God for man-made idols, fashioned to look like earthly creatures. They worship man-made objects rather than their Creator.

They become inflamed with homosexual lust

¹²Therefore God gives them up to their sinful and shameful lusts and they sexually defile their bodies with one another. ¹³They abandon natural relations with women and become inflamed with lust for each other. Men committing indecent acts with other men^{F*} and receiving in their bodies the due penalty for their perversion.

¹⁴Even their women exchange natural relations for unnatural ones.

Every kind of wickedness found among godless

¹⁵They are full of every kind of wickedness; greed, depravity, envy, murder, strife, deceit and malice. They are gossips, slanderers, God-haters, insolent, arrogant, boastful and continually inventing new ways of doing evil.

¹⁶They disobey parents and are senseless, faithless, heartless and ruthless.

*1 Gospel is the Greek word for 'good news.'

*3 The term 'saints' as used here refers to all the members of the early church.

*14 Paul's missionary work was continually against a background of idolatry, usually involving depraved sexual rites.

A mere man should not pass judgement on sinners

¹⁷But whoever passes judgement on such sinners is condemning himself, for he also sins. ¹⁸God's judgement against sinners is based on truth, but when you a mere man pass judgement upon them and yet sin also, do you think to escape God's judgement?

God's tolerance is to allow sinners time to repent

¹⁹Do not abuse God's tolerance and patience for it is to allow sinners time to repent.

God will judge each person on what he has done

²⁰But the stubborn who repent not, store up wrath against themselves on the day of judgement when God *"will reward each person according to what he has done."*

Eternal Life awaits the kindly but wrath awaits the selfish

²¹To those who have continued in kindness, and have sought after glory, honour and immortality, God will give Eternal Life.

²²But to those who are selfish and reject the truth and follow after evil there will be wrath and anger, for God shows no favouritism.

²³This will all take place on the day God judges the secret acts of men, through Jesus Christ.

2

Only those who live under the Law of Moses to be judged by the Law

¹All who sin under the Law of Moses will be judged by the Law. But all who sin without law will be judged apart from the Law. ²For it is not they who hear the Law who are righteous in God's sight, but they who obey the Law.

A man is only a Jew if he is one inwardly

³Now you who call yourself Jews and rely on the Law and boast about your relationship to God, why do you dishonour God by breaking the Law?

⁴Circumcision has value if you observe the Law but if you break the Law you have become as if you had not been circumcised.^{F*} One who is uncircumcised and yet obeys the Law will condemn you.

⁵A man is not a Jew by outward observance, but inwardly, by the Spirit.

Many advantages in being a Jew

⁶What advantage then is there in being a Jew? Much in every way. First of all the Jews have been entrusted with the words of God.

⁷What if some Jews have no faith, will that nullify God's words? Not at all. Our unrighteousness only highlights God's righteousness more clearly.

Yet Jews and Gentiles alike are sinners

⁸What shall we conclude then? That we Jews

are better than Gentiles? Not at all. Jews and Gentiles alike are all under sin. ⁹As it is written, *"There is no one righteous, not even one."*

But now there is a way to God apart from the Law

¹⁰No one is righteous in God's sight by just observing the Law, although the Law makes us aware of sin. But now a way from God apart from the Law has been made known, to which the scriptures testify.

Belief in Jesus Christ is the way

¹¹This way is through belief in Jesus Christ. For all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God. But all can be justified^{F*} freely by his grace^{F*} through the sacrifice of the Christ Jesus.

¹²God offered him as a sacrifice of atonement. Only by faith in Jesus is a man justified, not from observing the Law.

Faith in Jesus fulfils the Law of Moses

¹³Do we nullify the Law by this faith in Jesus? Not at all. Rather, we fulfil the Law.

Abraham blessed by his faith not by the Law

¹⁴It was not through the Law that Abraham received the promise that he would inherit the world but through his faith. ¹⁵For although his body was good as dead since he was about 100 years old, and Sarah's womb was also dead, he did not doubt. ¹⁶For it is written, *"Abraham believed in the promise of God and it was credited to him as righteousness."*

¹⁷Therefore God will also credit us with righteousness who believe in Jesus our Lord raised from the dead.

Our hope is to share the glory of God

¹⁸He died for our sins and was raised to life for our justification. ¹⁹We rejoice in our hope of sharing the glory of God.

Suffering develops endurance and character

²⁰We also rejoice in our sufferings, for we know that suffering develops endurance, and endurance character. ²¹And God has poured his love into our hearts by the Holy Spirit whom he has given us.

3

Although we were sinners Christ died for us

¹Very rarely will anyone give his life for a righteous man, yet God showed his love for us in that while we were still sinners, his Christ died for us.

Death and sin entered world by Adam but Eternal Life and righteousness by Jesus

²Sin and death entered the world through one man, Adam. So also by Jesus Christ is Eternal Life available for all men.

³Through the disobedience of one man, many

*1 Jewish males are circumcised when 8 days old in obedience to the commandment given to Abraham (Genesis 11:17) as a sign of God's covenant to him and his descendants.

*11 To be justified means to be purified from all guilt of sin.

*12 Grace is the free gift from a loving God, of divine help, divine power or favour, beyond the natural abilities of man.

ROMANS 4

were made sinners. So also through the obedience of one man, many will be made righteous.

Baptism a symbol of the burial of our old self and the rebirth of the new

⁴All of us who have been baptised into Christ Jesus were baptised unto his death, buried with him by baptism.^{F*} So that just as Christ was raised from the dead, we too may live a new life. ⁵For if we have been joined with him in his death we will also be joined with him in his resurrection.

No longer be slaves to sin

⁶Our old self was crucified with him so that we would no longer be slaves to sin. Therefore let sin reign no more in your mortal body, but rather offer yourself to God as one who has been brought from death to life.

⁷Let sin be your master no more, for you are not now under the Law but under the grace of God. ⁸You have been set free from sin, therefore become slaves to righteousness.

The wages of sin is Death

⁹The wages of sin is Death.^{F*} ¹⁰I express myself in human terms because you are weak in your natural selves.

The Law likened to civil marriage

¹¹Do you not know brethren that the Law has authority over a man only as long as he lives? For example, by law a married woman is bound to her husband, but if he dies she is released from the law of marriage.

The new way of the Spirit

¹²In the same way you also died to the Law of Moses, through Christ, that you might belong to him who was raised from the dead and bear fruit to God.

¹³For when we were controlled by our sinful nature we bore fruit for Death. ¹⁴But now we have been released from the Law that we may serve in the new way of the Spirit.

The old Law was holy but enticed to sin

¹⁵Is the Law sin? Certainly not. Indeed I would not have known what sin was except through the Law. ¹⁶I would not have known what coveting was if the Law had not said, “**Do not covet.**” But sin, seizing the opportunity afforded by the commandment aroused in me every kind of covetous desire. ¹⁷The very commandment intended to bring Life^{F*} actually brought Death.

¹⁸But the Law is holy, and the commandments are holy. ¹⁹The Law is spiritual but I was unspiritual, a slave to sin. I had desire to do good but could not carry it out for evil was right

*4 The immersion in water during baptism symbolises both a burial of the old self and rebirth of the new, and the washing away of sins.

*9 Death in the sense used here by Paul is the ‘Second Death’ (in contrast to Eternal Life) a symbolic term meaning to be cut off forever from the presence of God. See also note on Revelation 16:19.

*17 The term ‘Life’ is a shortened form of ‘Eternal Life’ which means to live forever after death in the presence of God the Father. See also note on Revelation 2:13.

there with me.

²⁰In my spirit I delighted in God’s Law, but there was another law at work in my body waging war against my spirit.

Jesus Christ rescues us from sin

²¹What a wretched man I was. Who could rescue me from my body of death? Thanks be to God, Jesus Christ our Lord did.

²²Through Jesus Christ the Holy Spirit set me free from the Law of sin and death. ²³What the Law was powerless to do, weakened by my sinful nature, God did by sending his own Son to be a sin offering.

The mind controlled by the Holy Spirit brings Eternal Life and peace

²⁴Those who live by their sinful nature have their minds set on what that nature desires, but they who live by the Holy Spirit have their minds set on what the Spirit desires.

²⁵The mind of a sinful man brings Death, but the mind controlled by the Holy Spirit brings Eternal Life and peace.

The sinful mind is hostile to God

²⁶The sinful mind is hostile to God and does not submit to his commandments, nor can it do so. You however are controlled not by the sinful mind but by the Holy Spirit.

²⁷If anyone does not have the Spirit of Christ^{F*} he does not belong to Christ.



The Appian Way, a road leading into Rome that Paul would have travelled when he was taken to Rome as a prisoner.

4

Those led by the Spirit are sons of God

¹If the Spirit of him who raised Jesus from the dead is living within you, he will also give Eternal Life to your mortal bodies. For those who are led by the Spirit of God are sons of God.

²For you did not receive a spirit that again makes you a slave to fear, but you received the Spirit of sonship and by him we cry out, ‘Father.’

Predestined sons of God co-heirs with Christ and will share in his glory

³The Holy Spirit testifies to our spirit that we

*27 Paul sometimes uses the terms ‘Spirit of Christ’ and ‘Spirit of God’ as alternate names for the Holy Spirit.

are God's sons. ⁴For God knew beforehand who would believe and he predestined them to conform to the likeness of his Son, that Jesus might be the firstborn among many brothers. Then he also will justify and glorify.

⁵Now if we are sons then we are heirs, heirs of God and co-heirs with Christ. We share in his sufferings that we may also share in his glory.

Our present sufferings nothing compared to the glory that awaits us

⁶However I consider that our present sufferings are nothing compared to the glory that awaits us.

The Holy Spirit intercedes for us

⁷The Holy Spirit helps us in our weakness for we know not what we ought to pray for. But the Spirit himself intercedes for us with longings that words cannot express.

⁸And God knows the mind of the Spirit for the Spirit intercedes as God wills.

Jesus also intercedes for us

⁹Jesus who is at the right hand of God also intercedes for us. For God who did not spare his own Son, will also graciously give us all things.

All things work together for our good

¹⁰Therefore all things work together for the good of those who love God.

Nothing can separate us from the love of Jesus

¹¹If God is for us who can be against us? Who can separate us from the love of Christ?

¹²Shall trouble, hardship, persecution, famine or sword? No, in all these things we are more than conquerors through the power of him who loved us.

¹³Neither death, demons, powers, nor anything else in all creation can separate us from the love of Jesus our Lord.

Yet I sorrow for unbelieving Israel

¹⁴Yet I have sorrow in my heart. I could even wish that I were cut off from Christ if it would save those of my own brethren, the people of Israel.

¹⁵Theirs was the adoption, the glory, the covenants, the Law, the Temple worship, the promises, the patriarchs and the human ancestry of Christ.

God influences men for his own purposes

¹⁶But God's word has not failed, for not all descended from Israel are truly Israel.

¹⁷In other words it is not the natural children who are God's children, but the children of promise. Not by their own works but by the will of God who calls them.

¹⁸For even before Rebekah's twins were born,^{F*} in order that God's purposes should come to pass she was told, "**The elder will serve the younger.**" And it is also written, "**I have blessed Jacob, but Esau I have cursed.**"

*18 Jacob and Esau. Jacob was later renamed Israel, and the twelve tribes of Israel which include the Jews (mostly from the royal tribe of Judah) were descended through him.

¹⁹Is then God unjust? Not at all. For he says to Moses, "**I will have mercy on whom I have mercy.**"

²⁰It does not therefore depend on man's desire or effort, but on God's mercy. ²¹For the scripture says of Pharaoh, "**I have preserved you for the purpose of displaying my power that my name might be proclaimed throughout the earth.**"

²²Therefore God has mercy on whom he decides to have mercy and hardens whom he decides to harden.

God is the potter and men the clay

²³One will say to me, "Why then does God blame us for sin if we cannot resist his will?"

²⁴But who are you O man to argue with God? For it is written, "**Shall what is formed say to him who formed it, 'Why did you make me like this?'**"

²⁵Does not the potter have the right to make from the same lump of clay, pottery for both noble and ignoble use?

The Gentiles have obtained righteousness by faith

²⁶Isaiah said concerning Israel, "**Though the number of the Israelites be like the sand on the seashore, only a remnant will be saved.**"

²⁷What then must we conclude? The Gentiles who did not pursue righteousness have obtained it by faith? But Israel who pursued righteousness by Law has not attained it?

Israel stumbled by trying to obtain righteousness by works alone

²⁸Yes, and why not? Because Israel pursued it by works not by faith. ²⁹They stumbled over the cornerstone. For it is written, "**I will lay a stone in Zion, a chosen cornerstone for a sure foundation. He who trusts in him shall never be put to shame.**" ^{F*}

They do not understand that Christ is the end of the Law

³⁰Brethren my heart's desire and prayer to God is that the Israelites may be saved, for I can testify of their zeal for God. ³¹But their zeal is not based on knowledge. They do not understand that Christ is the end of the Law.

5

Christians who trust in Jesus and confess he is Lord will be saved

¹It is the word of faith we are proclaiming. If you confess with your mouth that Jesus is Lord and truly believe in your heart that God raised him from the dead, you will be saved.^{F*} ²As the

*29 This Old Testament prophecy, Isaiah 17:18 is referring to the Christ .

*1 This statement of Paul's has brought about some misunderstanding in recent years to the extent that many Christians today believe that full repentance and baptism is not really necessary, and that they are saved merely by a sincere confession of belief that 'Jesus Christ is Lord.' This is however clearly contrary to the teachings of Jesus Christ. It should be remembered that in this letter to the Romans, Paul is arguing against Jewish legalism and his remarks are addressed directly to members of the Roman church who like himself have already

ROMANS 5

scripture says, “He who trusts in him will never be put to shame.”

No difference between Jew and Gentile in Lord

³There is no difference between Jew and Gentile, the same Lord is Lord of them all. He richly blesses all who call on him.

Preachers of gospel necessary

⁴But how can they call on one in whom they have not believed? And how can they have faith in him of whom they have not heard? And how can they hear without someone preaching to them?

⁵As it is written, “*How beautiful are the feet of those who bring good news.*”

Israel heard but did not understand

⁶But the Israelites did not accept the good news. Faith comes from hearing and the message was of Christ. Did Israel hear? Of course they did, but they did not understand.

⁷For as the words spoken through Isaiah boldly say, “*I was found by those who did not seek me.*” ⁸But concerning Israel, “*All day long I have held out my hands to a disobedient and obstinate people.*”

Not all Israelites are rejected by God for I myself am an Israelite

⁹I ask then, did God reject every one of his people? By no means. I am an Israelite myself, from the tribe of Benjamin.

A remnant of Israel always remain faithful

¹⁰When Elijah appealed to God against Israel saying, “*Lord, they have killed your prophets. I am the only one left, and they are trying to kill me.*” what was the answer of God to him? “*I still have 7000 in Israel whose knees have not bowed to Baal.*”

¹¹So too even now there is a remnant, chosen by grace, not by works. If it were by works, grace would no longer be grace.

Salvation has come to the Gentiles to make Israel envious

¹²The righteousness Israel sought for earnestly it did not obtain. But the elect did, and the others were hardened.

¹³Did they stumble so as to fall beyond recovery? Not at all. Rather, because of their sin salvation has come to the Gentiles, to make Israel envious.

Even greater riches will come to the Gentiles when Israel becomes righteous

¹⁴Now if Israel's sin means riches for the Gentiles, what greater riches will her righteousness bring. ¹⁵I am speaking to you Gentiles in as much as I am the apostle to the Gentiles.

¹⁶I make much of my ministry in the hope that I may arouse some of my own people to envy and save them.

Wild olive shoots of Gentiles grafted into the mother olive tree of Israel

¹⁷For the root of the tree is still holy. Branches have been broken off and you Gentiles, though a wild olive shoot, have been grafted in among the others. You now share in the nourishing sap from the mother olive root.

Israel's natural branches broken off because of unbelief

¹⁸Israel's natural branches were broken off because of unbelief. But do not boast Gentiles, for you only stand by faith.

¹⁹If God did not spare the natural branches he will not spare the grafted branches either. ²⁰And when Israel again believes, they will be grafted back in, and how much more readily will these the natural branches be accepted by their mother tree.

Paul reveals a mystery – eventually all Israel will be saved

²¹I do not want you to be ignorant of a mystery brethren, and that you may not be conceited I reveal it to you. Israel has experienced a hardening in part, until the times of the Gentiles are fulfilled. ²²But eventually all Israel will be saved, for it is written, “*Out of Jerusalem will come the deliverer and banish ungodliness from Israel. This will be my covenant with them when I take away their sins.*”

Israel loved on account of the patriarchs

²³As far as the gospel of Jesus is concerned, Israel are enemies to you, but concerning election^{F*} they are loved on account of the patriarchs. For God's gifts and his call are irrevocable.

The rich depths of the wisdom of God

²⁴Oh the rich depths of the wisdom and knowledge of God. How unsearchable his judgements. ²⁵As it is written, “*Who has ever given to God that God should repay him?*”

²⁶For from him and through him are all things. To him be the glory forever. Amen.

Be humble so as to discern God's will

²⁷Therefore I urge you brethren, offer your bodies as living sacrifices, holy and pleasing to God.

²⁸Do not conform to the ways of the world but be transformed by the renewing of your minds. Then you will be able to discern God's will.

²⁹Do not think of yourselves more highly than you ought. Rather, be humble.

repented and been baptised, both with water and by the fire of the Holy Spirit. If an intending Christian merely confesses belief in Jesus without full repentance and the divinely appointed ordinance of baptism, followed by the gift of the Holy Spirit by the laying on of hands (Acts 7:13-14) it is of no avail for Jesus declared, “*No one can enter the kingdom of God unless he is born anew, of water and of the Spirit*” (John 3:5). Jesus himself set the example by being baptised and Paul reaffirms the importance of baptism in this very letter (Romans 3:4), and in 1 Corinthians 8:1 he emphasises the importance of afterward continuing to obey all the commandments when he says, “*Only by this gospel are you saved, provided you hold firmly to the word. Otherwise you will have believed in vain.*” In refuting the doctrine that belief alone is enough to be saved James pointed out that even demons believe (James 2:13). And Jesus stated that only they “*who endure to the end will be saved*” (Matt-Mark-Luke 28:28). For even after repentance and baptism a Christian can still easily fall, for Judas was baptised, also Ananias and his wife (Acts 5:3-11) and they fell, and many others.

*23 Their status as the chosen people.

6

Apply the various gifts of the Spirit diligently

¹Each one of us has a body of many parts, each with different functions. So too in Christ we all form one body, each one of us belonging to all the others.

²We all have different gifts according to what the Spirit gives us. ³Therefore, if a man's gift is prophecy, let him use it according to his faith. If it is service, let him serve. If it is teaching, let him teach. If it is encouraging, let him encourage. ⁴If it is giving, let him give generously. If it is leadership, let him govern diligently. If it is to show mercy, let him do so cheerfully.

Love sincerely, hate evil and cling to good

⁵Your love must be sincere. Therefore hate what is evil and cling to what is good.

Honour each other rather than yourself

⁶Be devoted to one another in brotherly love. Bestow honour on each other rather than on yourself.

Be zealous in serving and ever joyful, hopeful, patient, prayerful and hospitable

⁷Never lack zeal in serving the Lord. ⁸Be joyful in hope, patient in affliction, faithful in prayer. Share with the saints who are in need and practice hospitality.

Live in harmony and be humble and compassionate

⁹Live in harmony one with another. Do not be proud but willingly mingle with people of low position. ¹⁰Rejoice with them who rejoice and mourn with those who mourn.

Live in peace and seek not revenge

¹¹Bless those who persecute you. Do not curse them and do not repay evil for evil. Do what is right in the eyes of all.

¹²If it be possible, as far as it depends upon you, live at peace with all. ¹³Do not take revenge. Allow room for God's own wrath for he has said, "**Vengeance is mine, I will repay.**"

Overcome evil with good

¹⁴Be not overcome by evil but overcome evil with good.

Submit to your rulers

¹⁵Submit yourselves to the governing authorities for they have been established by God. Rulers hold no terror for those who do right, only for those who do wrong.

¹⁶Do what is right and he will commend you for he is God's servant to do you good.

Pay all taxes and other debts when due

¹⁷That is why you pay taxes, for the authorities are God's servants who give their full time to governing. ¹⁸If you owe taxes pay taxes, if revenue then revenue, if respect then respect. ¹⁹Pay everybody what you owe. Let no debt remain outstanding.

Love is the fulfilment of the Law

²⁰Do not commit adultery, nor murder. Do not steal or covet. These and all the other commandments are summed up in this one rule. "**Love your neighbour as yourself.**" Therefore love is the fulfilling of the Law.

Behave decently – avoid orgies, drunkenness, immorality, quarrelling, jealousy

²¹So let us behave decently, not in orgies and drunkenness, not in sexual immorality and debauchery, not in quarrelling and jealousy.

²²Rather let us clothe ourselves with the Lord Jesus Christ and think not how we can gratify the desires of the flesh.

7

Judge not others

¹Welcome him whose faith is weak without passing judgement on him. ²One man believes he can eat any kind of food, while another of lesser faith eats only vegetables. Let them not condemn each other, for God has accepted them both.

³For who are we to judge the servant of another? He will stand or fall as to how he pleases his own master. And the Lord is able to make him stand.

⁴One man considers one day more holy than another and a second considers every day alike, each fully convinced in his own mind, and both give thanks to the same God.

⁵Why do you judge your brother? We will all one day stand before the judgement seat of God and give an account of ourselves.

⁶Therefore let us cease passing judgement upon each other. Let us not put a stumbling block in our brother's way.

Do not offend another believer by the food you eat

⁷I am convinced that no food is unclean in itself, but if any man regards a food as unclean then for him it is unclean. ⁸If you offend your brother by what you eat you are no longer acting in love. So do not by your eating harm your brother for whom Christ died.

Edify and build up each other

⁹The kingdom of God is not food and drink, but righteousness, peace and joy in the Holy Spirit. Let us therefore do what leads to peace and edification.

¹⁰Each of us should try to please our neighbour for his good and build him up. For Christ did not come to serve himself.

Have a spirit of oneness and be filled with joy, peace and hope

¹¹May the God who gives endurance and encouragement give you a spirit of oneness as you follow the Lord Jesus. So that with one heart you may glorify his Father.

¹²May God fill you with joy and peace as you trust in him, that you may overflow with hope by the Holy Spirit. ¹³I am convinced my brethren

ROMANS 8

that you are full of goodness and complete in knowledge, and able to teach one another.

God has called me to be a minister to the Gentiles

¹⁴I have written boldly on some points just to remind you of them again. ¹⁵For God has called me to be an apostle to the Gentiles, preaching Jesus by the power of signs and miracles through the Holy Spirit.

¹⁶I glory in Jesus in my service to God.

I plan to visit you on my way to Spain

¹⁷I have tried to preach the gospel where Christ was not known, so that I would not be building on another's foundation. This is why I have often been hindered from coming to you.

¹⁸But now there are no more places for me to work in these regions, and since I have been longing for many years to see you I plan to visit you on my way to Spain.

I am now on my way to Jerusalem

¹⁹Now however I am on my way to Jerusalem, for the saints in Macedonia and Achaia were pleased to make a contribution to the poor among the saints in Jerusalem.

²⁰As the Gentiles have shared in the spiritual blessings of the Jews, so they owe it to the Jews to share with them their material blessings.

²¹When I have completed this task I will come and visit you.

Pray that I may be rescued from unbelievers in Jerusalem

²²I urge you brethren to pray with me and for me that I may be rescued from the unbelievers in Jerusalem. So that God willing I will come to you with joy and together with you be refreshed.

8

Assist our sister Phoebe

¹I commend to you our sister Phoebe, a servant in the church at Corinth.^{F*} Receive her in the Lord and give her any assistance she may need. She has been a great help to many people including myself.

Greetings to those whom Paul knows at Rome

²Greet for me Priscilla and Aquila my fellow workers in Jesus. They risked their lives for me.

³Greet also my dear friend Epenetus who was the first convert to Christ in the province of Asia, and Mary who worked very hard for you.

⁴And Andronicus and Junias my relatives who have been in prison with me. They are held in high esteem among the apostles who were in Christ before I was.

⁵Greet Ampliatus whom I love in the Lord, and Urbanus, and my dear friend Stachys, also Apelles tested and approved in Christ. Greet those of Aristobulus.

⁶Greet Herodion my relative and those of Narcissus, also Tryphena, Tryphosa and Persis, women who work hard in the Lord. Rufus and his mother who has been a mother to me too. ⁷Asyncritus, Phlegon, Hermes, Patrobas, Hermas and the brethren with them. Philologus, Julia, Nereus and his sister and Olympas and all the saints with them.

Greet one another with a holy kiss

⁸Greet one another with a holy kiss. ⁹All the churches of Christ send greetings.

A warning against false teachers

¹⁰I urge you brethren, watch out for those who cause divisions and put obstacles in your way that are contrary to the teaching you have received. ¹¹Keep away from them for such people are not serving our Lord Jesus Christ but their own appetites.

¹²By smooth talk and flattery they deceive the minds of naive people. ¹³Be wise about what is good, and innocent about evil. ¹⁴The God of peace will soon crush Satan under your feet.

¹⁵The grace of our Lord Jesus be with you.

Greetings from those with Paul

¹⁶Timothy my fellow worker and Erastus and Quartus send their greetings to you, as do Lucius, Jason and Sosipater my relatives and Gaius whose hospitality I and the whole church here enjoy.

A greeting from Paul's scribe Tertius

¹⁷I Tertius the writer of this letter also greet you in the Lord.

Glory to the only wise God

¹⁸To the only wise God be glory forever through Jesus Christ. Amen.

*1 Paul probably entrusted Phoebe to deliver his letter to the Roman church from Corinth where he was staying.

COLOSSIANS

This is the first in a cluster of four letters (Colossians, Ephesians, Philippians and Philemon) that Paul wrote during his imprisonment in Rome after his shipwreck on Malta.

It is about four years since Paul's last known letter which was to the Romans. Most of which time he has been in captivity. These prison letters reveal a more mature and probably more relaxed Paul and are noted for their gentleness and love, as opposed to the fire of his earlier and later ones.

The purpose of this letter to the saints at Colosse (a neighbouring city of Ephesus) besides general encouragement was to counteract false doctrine. Epaphras a convert of Paul who had founded a church at Colosse had come to Rome to visit Paul. He was concerned about some false teachers influencing the Colossian church.

From what Paul mentions in his letter we can deduce that the false teaching had elements of Judaism, particularly concerning the old Law of Moses, and also elements of Greek philosophy and asceticism such as the adoration of wisdom, false humility, worship of angels, visions, restrictions on eating, and austere treatment of the body.

Paul points out the emptiness of such doctrine and reminds the Colossians of the headship of Christ and states that he is all that is necessary.

Colosse was an important city of Asia Minor (present day Turkey) due to its location on an east-west trade route. However in later centuries when the road system changed, the city dwindled in size and was eventually destroyed by the Turks in the 12th century.

AUTHOR Paul the apostle.

See that no one deceives you by empty and deceptive philosophies, drawn from human traditions and the elemental spirits of the universe rather than from Christ.
Colossians 2:9.

CONTENTS

Chapter

Paul's introduction	1	False humility and worship of angels disqualify you ..	2
We have heard of your faith and love	1	Those who teach this have lost touch with Christ	2
All over the world this gospel is growing	1	Such rules are based on the teachings of men	2
Epaphras who taught you told us of your love	1	They have an appearance of wisdom but lack power ..	2
You are qualified to inherit the kingdom of light	1	Set your hearts on things from above	2
Christ is the image of God	1	Put to death sexual immorality and lust	2
Christ the firstborn of all creation	1	Rid yourselves of anger, malice, lying and filthy talk ...	2
Christ created all things	1	Christ is all that is necessary	2
He is head of the church and first-raised of the dead ..	1	Clothe yourselves with kindness, humility, patience ..	3
You will remain holy if you continue firm in the faith ..	1	Forgive one another as the Lord forgave you	3
This is the gospel you had preached to you	1	Above all clothe yourselves with love	3
I rejoice in my sufferings	2	Sing psalms, hymns and songs of the spirit	3
I was called to preach the glorious mystery of Christ ..	2	Advice to husbands, wives and children	3
We desire to present everyone perfect in Christ	2	Advice to slaves and masters	3
I tell you all this that no one may deceive you	2	Devote yourselves to prayer and pray for us also	3
Be not deceived by empty philosophies	2	Act wisely toward unbelievers	3
In Christ is the fullness of the Godhead	2	Let your conversation be graceful	3
In Christ you put off the fleshly nature	2	Tychicus will tell you all the news	4
In Christ you were born again	2	Greetings from those with Paul	4
Christ fulfilled the old Law with its legal demands	2	Greet the brethren at Laodicea	4
The Law was only a shadow of things to come	2	I greet you in my own handwriting	4
The reality is Christ	2		

1

Paul's introduction

¹Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, and Timothy our brother, to the holy and faithful brethren at Colosse. ²Grace and peace to you from God our Father.

We have heard of your faith and love

³We always thank God the father of Jesus Christ when we pray for you, for we have heard of your faith and your love for all the saints.

COLOSSIANS 2

⁴This faith and love springs from the word of truth, the gospel.

All over the world this gospel is growing

⁵All over the world this gospel is growing and bearing fruit, just as it is among you.

Epaphras who taught you told us of your love

⁶You heard the gospel from our dear fellow servant Epaphras. He told us of your love and ever since we have prayed that God will fill you with his will. ⁷That you may live lives worthy of him and bear good fruit in your works and grow in the knowledge of God.

⁸Also that you will be strengthened with power to endure in patience and joy, giving thanks always to the Father.

You are qualified to inherit the kingdom of light

⁹For the Father has qualified you to share the inheritance of the saints in the kingdom of light. ¹⁰He has rescued us from darkness and brought us into the kingdom of the Son he loves, in whom we have forgiveness of sins.

Christ is the image of God and the firstborn of all creation

¹¹For Christ is the image of the invisible God, and the firstborn of all creation.

Christ created all things

¹²By Christ all things were created in the heavens and on earth, both visible and invisible, through him and for him. ¹³He was before all things and in him all things hold together.

He is the head of the church and first-raised of the dead

¹⁴He is the head of the body of the church and the first-raised from the dead. In all things he has supremacy.

¹⁵For God was pleased to have his fullness dwell in him that he might reconcile all things through his blood shed on the cross.

You will remain holy provided you continue firm in your faith

¹⁶Once you were alienated from God because of your sins, but now you are reconciled by the death of Christ's physical body.

¹⁷You have become holy in God's sight, without blemish and free from guilt, provided you continue firm in your faith.

This is the gospel you had preached to you

¹⁸This is the gospel you had preached to you, the gospel that is proclaimed to every creature under the heavens.

2

I rejoice in my sufferings

¹I Paul rejoice in my sufferings for the sake of the body of Christ, which is the church.

I was called to preach the glorious mystery of Christ

²For God has called me to be a servant of the

church, to preach his word in its fullness, even the glorious riches of the mystery of Christ. The mystery that has been kept hidden for generations but is now made known to the saints.

We desire to present everyone perfect in Christ

³We proclaim Christ, warning and teaching with all wisdom that we may present every saint perfect in him.

⁴To this end I labour, striving with his energy which so powerfully inspires me, both for you and for those at Laodicea^{F*} and for all who have not met me personally. ⁵That you may be encouraged and have the richness of understanding the mystery of Christ in whom is hidden all treasures of wisdom and knowledge.

I tell you all this that no one may deceive you

⁶I tell you all this, that no one may deceive you by false but fine-sounding arguments.

⁷I may be absent in body but I am present with you in spirit and delight to see how orderly you are, and how firm your faith is in Christ.

⁸Therefore just as you received Jesus Christ as Lord, continue to live in him, growing ever stronger in your faith and gratitude as you were taught.

Be not deceived by empty and deceptive philosophies

⁹But see that no one deceives you by empty and deceptive philosophies, drawn from human traditions and the elemental spirits of the universe^{F*} rather than from Christ.

In Christ is the fullness of the Godhead

¹⁰For in Christ the fullness of the Godhead dwells, and you share in his fullness for he is head over every power and authority.

In Christ you put off the fleshly nature and were born again

¹¹In Christ you were circumcised, not with the circumcision of men but by the putting off of your fleshly nature.

¹²And you were buried with him in baptism, being born again through your faith in the power of God who raised him from the dead.

Christ fulfilled the old Law with its legal demands

¹³God forgave us all our sins. For his Christ fulfilled the written Law with its legal demands and nailed it to the cross.

The Law was only a shadow of things to come – the reality is Christ

¹⁴Therefore let no one condemn you in matters concerning what you eat or drink or regarding religious festivals, New Moon celebrations or the Sabbath day.

¹⁵These were only a shadow of things to come. The reality is found in Christ.

*4 A nearby city about 10 km from Colosse.

*9 'elemental spirits of the universe' is a term for Satan and his demons.

They who teach false humility and the worship of angels have lost touch with Christ

¹⁶So let no one disqualify you by insisting on false humility and the worship of angels.

¹⁷Such people speculate in great detail about visions and their worldly minds puff them up with foolish notions.

¹⁸They have lost touch with Christ the Head from whom the whole body is supported and held together.

Such rules are based on the teachings of men?

¹⁹Since you died with Christ to worldly principles, why submit to their rules? "Do not handle! Do not taste! Do not touch!" ²⁰Such rules are based on the commandments and teachings of men.

Such rules have an appearance of wisdom but lack power

²¹Such rules indeed have an appearance of wisdom, with their worship, their false humility and their austere treatment of the body. But they have no power in restraining the indulgence of the flesh.

Set your hearts on things from above

²²Since you have been reborn in Christ, put on the new self. Set your hearts on things from above where Christ is seated at the right hand of God. Not on earthly things.

²³Then when Christ returns you will be gathered to him in glory.

Put to death sexual immorality and lust

²⁴Put to death whatever belongs to your fleshly nature: sexual immorality, impurity, lust, evil desires and coveting (which is idolatry). The wrath of God is coming upon all who do these things.

Rid yourselves of anger, malice, lying and filthy talk

²⁵You once walked in these sinful ways but now you must entirely rid yourselves of them. ²⁶Also anger, wrath, malice, slander, lying and filthy talk.

Christ is all that is necessary

²⁷There is no longer Greek or Jew, circumcised or uncircumcised, slave or free, but Christ is all and in all.

3

Clothe yourselves with kindness, humility and patience

¹Therefore as God's chosen people clothe yourselves with kindness, humility, patience, gentleness and compassion.

Forgive one another as the Lord forgave you

²Bear with each other and forgive whatever grievances you may have against one another. Forgive as the Lord forgave you.

Above all clothe yourselves with love

³And over all these virtues, clothe yourselves with love, which binds them all together in perfect harmony.

⁴Let the peace of Christ rule in your hearts and be thankful.

⁵Let the words of Christ dwell in you richly as you teach and admonish one another with wisdom.

Sing psalms, hymns and songs of the spirit

⁶Sing psalms, hymns and songs of the spirit with gratitude in your hearts to God.

⁷And whatever you do whether in word or deed, do it all in the name of the Lord Jesus giving thanks to God the Father through him.

Advice to husbands, wives and children

⁸Wives, submit to your husbands as is fitting in the Lord.

⁹Husbands, love your wives. Be not harsh with them.

¹⁰Children, obey your parents for this is pleasing to the Lord.

¹¹Fathers, provoke not your children lest they become discouraged.

Advice to slaves and masters

¹²Slaves, obey your earthly masters in all things, not only when their eye is upon you but with sincerity of heart. ¹³Work as if you are working for the Lord and not for men.

¹⁴All who do wrong will pay for their wrongdoing. There is no favouritism with the Lord.

¹⁵Masters, treat your slaves with justice and fairness for you too have a master in heaven.

Devote yourselves to prayer and pray for us also

¹⁶Devote yourselves to prayer, being watchful and thankful. ¹⁷Pray for us also that God may open doors for us to proclaim the mystery of Christ for which I am in chains. Pray that I may proclaim it clearly, as I should.

Act wisely toward unbelievers and let your conversation be graceful

¹⁸Be wise in how you act toward unbelievers. Make the most of every opportunity. ¹⁹Let your conversation be graceful and interesting.

²⁰Know how to answer everyone.

4

Tychicus will tell you all the news

¹Tychicus will tell you all the news about me. He is a dear brother, a faithful minister and a fellow servant in the Lord. I am sending him to you that you may be aware of our circumstances and that he may encourage your hearts. ²He is coming with Onesimus our faithful and dear brother who is one of you.

Greetings from those with Paul

³My fellow prisoner Aristarchus sends you his greetings as does Mark* the cousin of Barnabas. Jesus who is called Justus also sends his greetings.

⁴These are the only Jews among my fellow workers and they have proved a comfort to me.

*3 The author of the gospel of Mark.

COLOSSIANS 4

⁵Epaphras who is one of you sends greetings. He is always wrestling in prayer for you that you will stand firm and become mature in the will of God. ⁶I vouch that he is working hard for you and for those at Laodicea and Hierapolis.

⁷Luke^{F*} the beloved physician and Demas send their greetings.

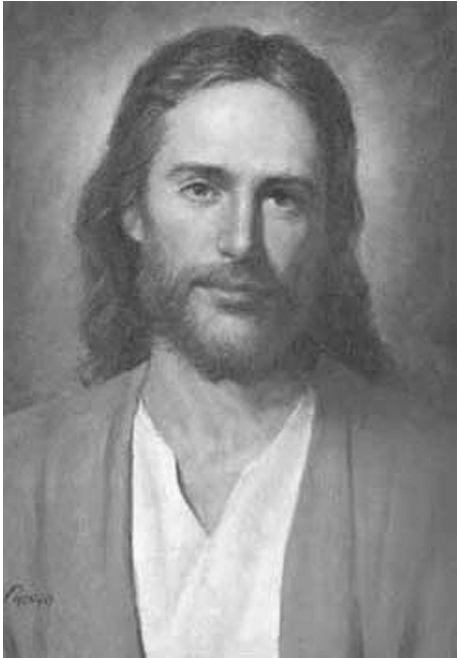
Greet the brethren at Laodicea

⁸Give my greetings to the brethren at Laodicea and to Nympha and the church that meets in her house.

⁹After this letter has been read to you, see that it is read also in the church of the Laodiceans. And that you in turn read the letter from Laodicea.^{F*}

I greet you in my own handwriting

¹⁰I Paul write this greeting in my own hand. Remember my chains. Grace be with you.



Jesus Christ by artist Del Parson.

*7 The author of the gospel of Luke and book of Acts.

*9 This letter has not survived unless it is the same one addressed to the Ephesians. See introduction to Ephesians.

PHILEMON

This short letter probably accompanied Paul's letter to the Colossians as it is addressed to a Colossian saint Philemon who was a friend of Paul.

Onesimus a runaway slave had become a Christian in Rome and had been assisting Paul in prison. However Paul is now returning him to his rightful owner Philemon with a personal appeal for love and forgiveness.

AUTHOR Paul the apostle.

Now although in Christ I could instruct you to do what is required, I Paul, an elder and a prisoner of Christ Jesus appeal instead to your love. Philemon 1:5.

CONTENTS

	Chapter		
Paul greets Philemon	1	If he owes you anything I will repay it	1
Your faith and love for the saints gives me great joy ...	1	I know you will do even more than I ask	1
I Paul appeal to your love	1	Prepare a room for me also	1
I am sending back your slave Onesimus	1	I hope to be restored to you	1
I would have been glad to have kept him	1	Greetings from those with Paul	1
Welcome him as you would welcome me	1	Paul's closing blessing	1

1

Paul greets Philemon

¹Paul, a prisoner of Jesus Christ, and Timothy our brother, to Philemon our dear friend and fellow worker and to the church that meet in your house^{F*} at Colosse. ²Grace and peace to you from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

Your faith and love for the saints gives me great joy

³I always thank my God as I remember you in my prayers, for I hear of your faith and your love for all the saints.

⁴You give me great joy and encouragement my brother, for you refresh the hearts of the saints. I pray that you may be active in sharing your faith.

I Paul appeal to your love

⁵Now although in Christ I could instruct you to do what is required, I Paul, an elder and a prisoner of Christ Jesus appeal instead to your love.

I am sending back your slave Onesimus

⁶I entreat you for Onesimus, who has become my son during my imprisonment.

⁷Formerly he was useless to you, but he has now become useful,^{F*} both to you and to me. Therefore I am sending him back to you.

I would have been glad to have kept him

⁸I would have been glad to have kept him with me so that he could continue to do what you would do for me yourself if you were here. But I preferred not to without your consent in order

that any good you do for me would be spontaneous.

Welcome him as you would welcome me

⁹Perhaps the reason you lost him for a little while was that you might have him back for good, no longer as a slave but as a close brother. ¹⁰Therefore if you regard me as a friend welcome him as you would me.

If he owes you anything I will repay it

¹¹If he has done you any wrong or owes you anything, charge it to me.

¹²I Paul write this with my own hand, "I will repay it." I do not mention that you owe me your very self. ¹³Yes my brother, let me have some benefit from you in the Lord.

I know you will do even more than I ask

¹⁴I am confident of your obedience and know that you will do even more than I ask.

Prepare a room for me also for I hope to be restored to you

¹⁵And one more thing, prepare a guest room for me as I hope to be restored to you in answer to your prayers.

Greetings from those with Paul

¹⁶Epaphras my fellow prisoner in Christ Jesus sends you greetings as do Mark, Aristarchus, Demas and Luke my fellow workers.

Paul's closing blessing

¹⁷The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit.

*1 It was a common practice for the early church to meet in homes. There is no evidence of any Christian church building before the third century.

*7 Onesimus means 'useful.'

EPHESIANS

Unlike most of Paul's letters, this one to the Ephesians does not address any particular problem among the saints at Ephesus. Rather it appears to be a loving and profound message written by a spiritually mature Paul, to edify and strengthen the church.

The letter is believed to have circulated further than Ephesus as three very old copies have been found that omit the words '*to the saints in Ephesus*' in the introduction.

Paul spent over two years in Ephesus during his third mission. This was the city where he stirred up the craftsmen who made silver shrines of the goddess Diana and where her world-famous temple was located. The craftsmen were concerned because Paul "*has led large numbers of people to change their religion*" (Acts 18:30).

Ephesus was located on the western Mediterranean coast of present day Turkey. It was a predominantly Greek city, the fourth largest in the Roman empire. However at the time Paul wrote, about 61 AD it was dwindling and dying due to silting up of the harbour. All that remains today is a maze of abandoned ruins over 10 kms from the sea.

AUTHOR Paul the apostle.

Let not even a hint of sexual immorality be among you, nor any kind of lewd conduct, or greed, for these are improper for God's holy people. Ephesians 2:20.

CONTENTS

		Chapter
Paul's introduction	1	Edify and build others up by your talk
We were predestined to become God's holy sons	1	Do not grieve the Holy Spirit
All things to be combined under Jesus Christ	1	Be kind, tender-hearted and forgiving
Our inheritance sealed by the Holy Spirit	1	Be imitators of God
I pray that you may know the Father better	1	Let not a hint of sexual immorality be among you
He has exalted Christ	1	Avoid suggestive talk and obscene joking
Christ appointed head over the church	1	No immoral person can inherit the kingdom of God ...
You were once dead in your sins	1	Live as children of light
We are saved by grace and faith not our works	1	Condemn deeds of darkness
God has exalted us as Christ	1	Make the best use of opportunities
You Gentiles once had no part in Christ or Israel	1	Do not get drunk
Christ broke down the dividing wall	1	Be filled with the Spirit
All people now have access to the Father	1	Uplift one another with psalms, hymns and songs ...
This mystery not revealed to former generations.....	1	Wives submit to your husband as to the Lord
I pray that your spirit be strengthened	1	Husbands love your wife as Christ loves the church..
I pray that you may comprehend the love of Christ....	1	He who loves his wife loves himself
God is able to do more than we can imagine	1	Children obey your parents
Be humble, gentle, patient and loving	2	Fathers provoke not your children
One church, one Spirit, one Lord, one faith	2	Slaves obey your masters
One baptism and one Father	2	Masters treat your slaves with respect
Each person given gifts to build up the church	2	Put on full armour of God to stand against devil
That we no more be blown by winds of doctrine	2	The armour of God
Indulge not in sensuality and impurity	2	Pray in the Spirit at every opportunity
Put off your old self and put on the new	2	Pray for me also
Speak truthfully	2	Tychicus will tell you all that has happened
Let not the sun go down on your anger	2	Paul's closing blessing
Steal no more	2	

Bold The Lord or an angel speaking.
Bold italics A prophet speaking under inspiration.

1

Paul's introduction

¹Paul an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, to the saints in Ephesus and all the faithful. ²Grace and peace to you from God our Father and from the Lord Jesus Christ.

**We were predestined
to become God's holy sons**

³Praise be to God the Father who has blessed us with every spiritual blessing in the heavenly realms, through Christ.

⁴For he chose us from before the creation of the world to be holy in his sight.

⁵Because he loved us he predestined us to become his sons through Jesus Christ.

All things to be combined under Jesus Christ

⁶Praise his glorious grace which he freely gave us in Jesus Christ whom he loves, and through whose blood we have forgiveness of our sins.

⁷For now God has made known to us the mystery to come into effect in the fullness of time. To combine all things in heaven and on earth under one head, Jesus Christ.

**Our inheritance in the kingdom of God
sealed by the Holy Spirit**

⁸We who were predestined and chosen for his glory, having believed when we first heard the word of truth, were marked with a seal, even the promised Holy Spirit. ⁹Who assures our inheritance in the kingdom of God along with all others who belong to God.

I pray that you may know the Father better

¹⁰For this reason I have not stopped giving thanks for you and remembering you in my prayers.

¹¹I pray that God the glorious Father will give you spiritual gifts of wisdom and revelation so that you may know him better.

¹²I pray that the eyes of your understanding may be opened, to know the richness of his glorious inheritance for the saints, and his incomparably great power.

**He has exalted Christ and
appointed him head over the church**

¹³For he raised Christ from the dead and seated him at his right hand in the heavenly realms. ¹⁴He exalted him far above all rulers, power, and dominion, not only for this age but for ages to come. ¹⁵God has placed all things under his feet and appointed him head over the church.

**You were once dead in your sins
when you followed the ways of this world**

¹⁶And you whom he has made alive were once dead in your sins, when you followed the ways of this world. ¹⁷The ways of the ruler of the realms of the spirit,^{F*} which spirit is still at work in those who are disobedient.

¹⁸We all lived like them at one time, gratifying the cravings of our flesh. By nature we were objects of God's wrath.

¹⁹But because of his great love for us, God who is rich in mercy saved us with Christ, even though we were dead in our sins.

**We have been saved by grace and faith
not by our works**

²⁰It is by his grace^{F*} that we have been saved, through our faith, not by our works.

²¹This grace is a gift of God so that no one can boast that they have saved themselves.

God has exalted us as Christ

²²God has exalted us as Christ and seated us with him in heavenly places. So that in coming ages he may show the immeasurable richness of his grace and kindness. ²³For we are his workmanship, created to do good works which God has prepared in advance for us to do.

You Gentiles once had no part in Christ or Israel

²⁴Remember you who were Gentiles by birth,^{F*} that you once had no part in Christ and were excluded from Israel. You were strangers to the Covenant and its promise, without hope and without God in the world.

Christ broke down the dividing wall

²⁵But now you who were once far away have been brought near, through the blood of Christ. For he has made the two peoples one and has broken down the dividing wall of hostility between Gentile and Israel.

²⁶Christ fulfilled in his flesh the old law with its commands and regulations, and created one new people out of the two, thus making peace and reconciling both to God.

All people now have access to the Father

²⁷For through Jesus Christ we both have access to the Father, by one Spirit.

²⁸You are no longer strangers but fellow citizens with God's people. And members of his household which is built upon the foundation of apostles and prophets, with Jesus himself as the chief cornerstone.

²⁹In him the whole building is joined together and rises to become a holy temple in the Lord. And you by his Spirit become part of the temple in which God lives.

³⁰For this reason I Paul am a prisoner of Christ,^{F*} for the sake of you Gentiles.

**This mystery was not revealed
to former generations**

³¹Now this mystery of Christ of which I have written briefly, that through the gospel Gentiles are heirs together with Israel, was made known to me by the Holy Spirit. ³²It was not revealed to former generations.

³³I became a servant of this gospel by the gift and power of God's grace. ³⁴Though I am the least of all the saints, this grace was given to me to reveal to the Gentiles the full richness of the mystery of Christ.

³⁵God's intent was that his wisdom now be

*20 Grace is a free gift from a loving God, of divine help, of divine power or favour, beyond the natural abilities of man.

*24 Gentiles are defined by Jews as any person not born of a Jewish mother.

*30 Paul wrote this letter from prison in Rome.

EPHESIANS 2

made known through the church to the rulers in the heavenly realms. F*

³⁶Now through Jesus Christ we can approach God with freedom and confidence. ³⁷Therefore be not discouraged because of my sufferings for you. It is for your glory.

I pray that your spirit be strengthened and that you may comprehend the love of Christ

³⁸For this reason I kneel before the Father from whom his whole family in heaven and on earth derive its name, and pray that he will strengthen your spirit with his Spirit that Christ may dwell within you.

³⁹I also pray that you may comprehend the vastness of the love of Christ and be filled with the fullness of God.

God is able to do more than we can imagine

⁴⁰For God is able to do immeasurably more than all we can ask or imagine, by his power working within us through the Holy Spirit.

⁴¹To him be glory for ever and ever. Amen.



Remains of the world-famous temple of the goddess Diana at Ephesus.

2

Be humble, gentle, patient and loving

¹Now as a prisoner for the Lord I urge you to live a life befitting your calling. ²Be humble, gentle and patient, bearing with one another in love.

³Maintain the unity that comes of the Holy Spirit, through peaceful living.

One church, one Spirit, one Lord, one faith, one baptism and one Father

⁴There is but one church, one Spirit, one Lord, one faith, one baptism, one God and Father of

*35 Paul appears to be saying that mysteries have been kept hidden by God from angels at certain levels of authority in the realms of heaven, as well as from man on earth (see also 1 Peter 1:11). We know there are degrees, or levels in heaven from Paul's statement in 2 Corinthians 3:45 about his being caught up to the third heaven, and the angel who appeared to Daniel (Daniel 10:9, 15:16) revealed varying degrees of authority among angels.

us all, who is over all, through all, and in all.

To each person is given gifts to build up the church

⁵But to each one of us is given gifts, by grace as Christ apportions them.

⁶He has called some to be apostles, some to be prophets, some to be evangelists. Some to be pastors and teachers. ⁷Each to do his part in good works, that the body of Christ may be built up until we all attain a oneness in the faith and become mature in the knowledge and fullness of Christ.

That we be no longer blown by every wind of doctrine

⁸Then we will no longer be as children, tossed to and fro and blown by every wind of doctrine by the craftiness of men in their scheming ways.

⁹Instead we will speak the truth in love, and grow up into Christ who is the head. For by him the whole body of the church is held together and grows in love as each part does its work.

Indulge not in sensuality and impurity

¹⁰Therefore I call upon you in the name of the Lord to no longer live in futility as do the Gentiles. For they have darkened their minds and separated themselves from God by their ignorance and hardness of heart.

¹¹Having lost their spiritual sensitivity they indulge in every kind of sensuality and impurity and continually lust for more.

Put off your old self and put on the new

¹²But you have been taught to put off your old corrupt self and to put on the new self, created to be like God in true righteousness.

Speak truthfully

¹³Put off falsehood and always speak truthfully to each other, for we are all members of one body.

Let not the sun go down on your anger

¹⁴Let not the sun go down on your anger. Do not give the devil a foothold.

Steal no more

¹⁵He who has stolen must steal no more, but must work with his own hands that he may give to those in need.

Edify and build others up by your talk

¹⁶Let not base talk come from your mouths, rather that which edifies and builds up according to the needs of those around you.

Do not grieve the Holy Spirit

¹⁷Do not grieve the Holy Spirit. Rid yourself of all bitterness, anger, brawling, slander and malice.

Be kind, tender-hearted and forgiving

¹⁸Be kind and tender-hearted, forgiving each another as Christ forgave you.

Be imitators of God

¹⁹Be imitators of God as his dearly loved children. Live a life of love, as Christ loved us and gave himself for us as an offering to God.

**Let not a hint of sexual immorality
be among you**

²⁰Let not even a hint of sexual immorality be among you, nor any kind of lewd conduct, or greed for these are improper for God's holy people.

Nor suggestive talk and obscene joking

²¹Nor should there be foolish or suggestive talk or obscene joking, but rather thanksgiving.

**No immoral person can
inherit the kingdom of God**

²²Of this you can be certain, no immoral, impure or greedy person (for such a person is an idolater^{F*}) has any inheritance in the kingdom of God.

²³Let no one deceive you in this matter for because of such things God's wrath comes upon the disobedient. Therefore do not associate with such people.

**Live as children of light and
condemn deeds of darkness**

²⁴For though you were once in darkness you are now in the light of the Lord.

²⁵So live as children of light, for the fruit of light is goodness, righteousness and truth.

²⁶Learn what pleases the Lord and have nothing to do with deeds of darkness, rather condemn them. ²⁷It is shameful even to mention what the evil do in secret.

Make the best use of opportunities

²⁸Be careful then how you live, for the times are evil. Be wise and make the best use of every opportunity.

Do not get drunk

²⁹Get not drunk on wine for it leads to debauchery.

**Be filled with the Spirit and uplift
one another with psalms, hymns and songs**

³⁰Instead be filled with the Spirit and uplift one another with psalms, hymns, and songs of the Spirit.

³¹Sing and offer melody to the Lord. And in your hearts continually give thanks to the Father for all things in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ.

3

Wives, submit to your husbands as to the Lord

¹Be submissive to one another, out of reverence for Christ.

²Wives, submit to your husbands as to the Lord, for the husband is head of the wife as Christ is head of the church. ³As the church submits to Christ so also should wives submit to their husbands in all things.

**Husbands, love your wives
as Christ loves the church**

⁴Husbands, love your wives, just as Christ loves the church and gave himself up for her to make her holy. And purified her by Living

Water^{F*} to present her to himself radiant and without blemish, holy and blameless.

**He who loves his wife loves himself
for both are one flesh**

⁵In this same way a husband ought to love his wife as if she were his own body. ⁶He who loves his wife loves himself, for it is written, "**A man will leave his father and mother and be united to his wife and the two shall become one flesh.**"

⁷There is a great mystery here, however I liken the marriage relationship to Christ and the church. ⁸So let each man love his wife as himself and each wife show respect for her husband.

Children obey your parents

⁹Children, obey your parents in the Lord, for this is right. ¹⁰"**Honour your father and mother that it may go well with you and that you may live long upon the earth.**" This is the first commandment with a promise.

Fathers, provoke not your children

¹¹Fathers, provoke not your children to anger. Rather raise them in the teachings of the Lord.

Slaves, obey your masters

¹²Slaves, obey your earthly masters with respect and fear, just as you obey Christ. Not only when their eye is upon you, but from your heart. ¹³Serve wholeheartedly as if you were serving the Lord and not a man. ¹⁴For the Lord rewards everyone for whatever good they do, whether slave or free.

Masters, treat your slaves with respect

¹⁵And masters, treat your slaves the same way. Do not threaten them, for God who is both their master and yours is in heaven. And there is no distinction between either of you in his eyes.

**Put on the full armour of God
to stand against cunning of devil**

¹⁶Finally, be strong in the Lord. Put on the full armour of God to stand against the cunning of the devil. ¹⁷For our struggle is not against flesh and blood, but against the powers of darkness, the spiritual forces of evil.

The armour of God

¹⁸Stand firm, with the belt of truth around your waist, with the breastplate of righteousness and your feet shod with preparedness. ¹⁹Take up the shield of faith, the helmet of salvation and the sword of the Spirit which is the word of God.

Pray in the Spirit at every opportunity

²⁰Take every opportunity to pray in the Spirit with prayers and requests of all kinds. Be attentive and always pray for the saints.

Pray for me also

²¹Pray for me also that whenever I speak, words shall be given me to fearlessly make

*22 The broader meaning of idolatry is when an earthly object or desire is of more importance to us than pleasing God.

*4 Living Water is another term for the Holy Spirit (John 7:29-30).

EPHESIANS 3

known the gospel, for which I am an ambassador in chains.

Tychicus will tell you all that has happened

²²Tychicus our dear brother and faithful servant in the Lord will tell you everything that has happened.^{F*} I am sending him to you for this purpose and also that he may encourage you.

Paul's closing blessing

²³Peace and grace to you brethren, and love and faith from God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

*²³ Tychicus probably delivered this letter to the Ephesians.

PHILIPPIANS

The church at Phillipi appears to have been Paul's favourite, and with good reason. They had looked after his needs from the very beginning, when he first took the gospel to them on his second mission (Acts 15:10). Even now about twenty years later while Paul is imprisoned in Rome they are still caring for him. They sent Epaphroditus a Philippian church member to stay with him and attend to his needs. They also sent him gifts.

This letter which is Paul's most joyous is primarily a personal thank you. Paul sent it back with Epaphroditus who being homesick had fallen seriously ill, but had been healed.

Phillipi was a prosperous Greek city. It was here that Paul drove out the demon spirit of a fortune-telling slave girl (Acts 15:16-20) and was imprisoned as a result. When the prison doors miraculously flew open at midnight he ended up converting the jailer and his family (Acts 15:24-32).

AUTHOR Paul the apostle.

I know what it is like to be in need and what it is to have plenty. But I have learned to be content in whatever circumstances I find myself. Philippians 3:7.

CONTENTS

Chapter

Paul's introduction	1	I have sent Epaphroditus back to you	2
I pray for you with joy	1	He longs for all of you and almost died	2
How I long for all of you	1	Beware the false brethren who preach circumcision	2
May your love abound with knowledge and insight ..	1	I once regarded the Law as being to my good	2
My imprisonment encourages courageous preaching..	1	I consider all a loss compared to knowing Christ	2
Whatever motive I rejoice that Christ is preached	1	I am not yet made perfect but I press on to win	2
Whatever happens to me will turn out for my good ...	1	Let us live up to what we already know	2
Whether I live or die Christ will be honoured	1	Many live as enemies of Christ	2
I desire to die and be with Christ	1	At our Saviour's return he will transform our bodies ..	2
More needful that I remain	1	Our lowly bodies will become like his glorious body ..	2
Conduct yourselves in a manner worthy of gospel ...	1	Therefore my dear friends stand firm in the Lord	2
Fear not those who oppose you	1	Help Euodia and Syntyche be reconciled	3
You are now suffering for Christ as I did	1	Rejoice in the Lord	3
Have Christ-like love and unity among yourselves ...	1	Take your cares to God in prayer	3
Jesus had the nature of God but was obedient	1	The peace of God will dwell in your hearts always ...	3
God has exalted him	1	Think on excellent and praiseworthy things	3
Every tongue shall confess Jesus Christ is Lord	1	I rejoice greatly over your concern for me	3
Continue to be obedient and work out your salvation...	1	I have learned to be content in all circumstances	3
Hold fast to the words of Eternal Life	1	You were the only church that gave for my needs	3
That I may boast of you when Christ comes	1	My God will fully satisfy all your needs	3
I hope to send Timothy to you soon	2	Greetings to the saints	3
I also hope to come myself	2	Paul's closing blessing	3

1

Paul's introduction

¹Paul and Timothy, servants of Jesus Christ, to all the saints at Phillipi together with the bishops^{F*} and deacons. ²Grace and peace to you from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

I pray for you with joy

³I thank my God for you and pray with joy, confident that the Spirit who began the good work in you will carry it on to completion until the day Christ Jesus returns. ⁴I feel this way about you since I have you in my heart.

*1 The early churches were presided over by bishops, who were assisted by deacons

How I long for all of you

⁵God can testify how much I long for all of you with the love of Jesus Christ. ⁶Whether I am in chains or preaching the gospel you share in God's grace with me.

May your love abound with knowledge and insight

⁷I pray that your love may abound more and more, with knowledge and insight to discern what is best. So that you will remain pure and blameless until the day of Christ.

My imprisonment has encouraged the brethren to preach more courageously

⁸Brethren, what has happened to me has

PHILIPPIANS 2

served to advance the gospel. ⁹It has become clear to the palace guards and to everyone else that I am in chains for Christ. ¹⁰Therefore most of the brethren have been encouraged to speak the word of God more courageously.

Whether from false motives or true I rejoice that Christ is preached

¹¹It is true that some preach Christ out of envy and rivalry, but others out of goodwill and love.

¹²The former preach out of ambition and without sincerity, supposing they can stir up trouble for me while I am in prison.

¹³But what does it matter? Whether from false motives or true, Christ is preached. Because of this I rejoice and will continue to rejoice.

Whether I live or die Christ will be honoured

¹⁴I know that through your prayers and the Spirit of Jesus Christ, whatever happens to me will turn out for my good. I will not be put to shame. Whether I live or die Christ will be honoured.

I desire to die and be with Christ but it is more needful that I remain

¹⁵For me, to live is to have Christ, and to die is to have more of Christ. I am torn between the two.

¹⁶I desire to die and be with Christ which is better by far. But it is more needful that I remain in the body for your sake. ¹⁷Convinced of this I know I shall remain in the body for your progress and your overflowing joy in the faith.

Conduct yourselves in a manner worthy of the gospel

¹⁸Therefore conduct yourselves in a manner worthy of the gospel of Christ. Then whether I am able to come and see you or only hear about you, I will know that you stand firm in one spirit.

Fear not those who oppose you

¹⁹Fear not those who oppose you. Their opposition is a sign that they will be destroyed, but you will be saved by God.

You are now suffering for Christ as I did when I was with you

²⁰For God intends that you not only believe in Christ but that you suffer for him. ²¹You are now going through the same struggle that I had when I was with you and that I still have.

Make my joy complete by having Christ-like love and unity among yourselves

²²With the comfort, love, tenderness, compassion and fellowship you enjoy from being united with Christ and having the Holy Spirit, make my joy complete by having the same love among yourselves and being of one mind.

²³Do nothing out of selfishness or pride but in humility consider others better than yourselves.

²⁴Care for the needs of others, not only for your own needs.

Even though Jesus had the nature of God he was humble and obedient

²⁵Your caring should be like that of Jesus

Christ who though having the nature of God, did not covet the Godhead but rather emptied himself and took upon himself the nature of a servant.

²⁶Being born as a man he humbled himself in obedience, even unto death on a cross.

God has exalted him and every tongue shall confess that Jesus Christ is Lord

²⁷Therefore God has exalted him to the highest place, and given him a name which is above every other name, the name of Jesus.

²⁸And it is written, "**Before which name every knee in heaven and earth shall bow and every tongue confess, that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.**"

Therefore continue to be obedient and work out your salvation

²⁹Therefore my dear friends, continue to be obedient and work out your salvation with reverence and trembling.

³⁰Do all things without complaint or question that you may become blameless and pure, children of God without blemish in the midst of this crooked and depraved generation.

Hold fast to the words of Eternal Life that I may boast of you when Christ comes

³¹Shine like the stars in the night sky as you hold fast to the words of Eternal Life, that I may boast when Christ comes that I did not labour in vain.

³²I am glad and rejoice with all of you. You also should be glad and rejoice with me.

2

I hope to send Timothy to you soon

¹I hope to send Timothy to you as soon as I see how things go with me, that I may be cheered when I receive news back about you.

²I have no one else who takes as much genuine interest in your welfare. Others look out for their own interests not those of Jesus Christ. But Timothy has proved himself and serves with me like a son.

I also hope to come myself soon

³I am also confident in the Lord that I myself will come soon.

I have sent Epaphroditus back to you

⁴I have thought it necessary to send back to you Epaphroditus our fellow worker and soldier whom you sent to take care of my needs.

He longs for all of you and almost died

⁵He has been longing for all of you, and was distressed because you heard he was unwell. Indeed he almost died, but God healed him to spare me more sorrow.

⁶Welcome with great joy and honour such men as him, for he almost gave his life to give me the help you could not give me.

Watch out for the false brethren who preach circumcision

⁷Finally brethren, watch out for those dogs,

those workers of evil who would mutilate your flesh through circumcision. ⁸For we worship by the Spirit of God and glory in Jesus Christ. We do not put our trust in the flesh.

I once regarded the Law as being to my good

⁹If anyone has reason to put trust in the flesh, I have more. I am of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin and in regard to the Law of Moses I was a Pharisee and was circumcised on the eighth day.

¹⁰As for zeal, I persecuted the church, but whereas I once regarded the Law as being to my profit, I now consider it loss for the sake of Christ.

I now consider everything a loss compared to the surpassing greatness of knowing Jesus Christ

¹¹I consider everything a loss compared to the surpassing greatness of knowing Jesus Christ as my Lord.

¹²I now have a righteousness not of my own efforts from the Law but from faith in Christ. ¹³I want to know him more and share in his sufferings and in the power of his resurrection.

I am not yet made perfect but I press on to win the prize

¹⁴Not that I have already been made perfect brethren, but I press on to win the prize. Forgetting what is behind me and straining toward what is ahead. For Jesus Christ has made me his own.

¹⁵All of us who are spiritually mature should take such a view of things.

Let us live up to what we already know

¹⁶If on some point you think differently God will make it clear to you, only let us live up to what we already know.

¹⁷Follow my example brethren and those who live according to the pattern we gave you.

For many live as enemies of Christ

¹⁸For I have said before and now say it again with tears, many live as enemies of Christ. Their destiny is destruction, their god is their stomach and their minds dwell on earthly things. They glory in their shame.

When our Saviour returns he will transform our lowly bodies to become like his glorious body

¹⁹But our hope dwells in heaven. We eagerly await our Saviour's return, the Lord Jesus Christ, who will transform our lowly bodies to become like his glorious body.

Therefore my dear friends stand firm in the Lord

²⁰Therefore my brethren my dear friends whom I love and long for, you who are my joy and my crown, stand firm in the Lord.

3

Help Euodia and Syntyche be reconciled

¹Now I plead with Euodia and Syntyche to be reconciled to each other in the Lord. Help these

women who have laboured at my side in the cause of the gospel, together with Clement and the rest of my fellow workers whose names are in the Book of Life.^{F*}

Rejoice in the Lord

²Rejoice in the Lord. Again I say rejoice. Let your gentleness be seen by all, for the Lord is near.

Take your cares to God in prayer and the peace of God will dwell in your hearts always

³Be not anxious in your minds, rather take your cares to God in prayer and gratitude. ⁴And the peace of God which surpasses all understanding will dwell in your hearts and watch over you always.

Think on excellent and praiseworthy things

⁵Finally brethren, whatever is true, noble, right, pure, lovely, and admirable. Whatever is excellent and praiseworthy, think on these things and the God of peace will be with you.

I rejoice greatly over your concern for me

⁶I rejoice greatly that you have again shown your concern for me. You have been concerned all along but had no opportunity to show it.

I have learned to be content in whatever circumstances I find myself

⁷I say this not because I am in need. I know what it is like to be in need and what it is to have plenty. But I have learned to be content in whatever circumstances I find myself.

⁸I can endure all things through him who gives me strength. ⁹Yet it was kind of you to share in my troubles.

You were the only church in the early days that gave for my needs

¹⁰In the early days of my preaching when I set out from Macedonia, not one church shared by giving me back something for what they had received except you Philippians. Even when I was in Thessalonica you sent me something for my needs again and again.

My God will fully satisfy all your needs

¹¹Not that I am looking for more gifts but I look for the reward you will receive for what you have done for me.

¹²I am amply supplied now that I have received the gifts you sent by Epaphroditus, a fragrant offering, a sacrifice acceptable and pleasing to God.

¹³And my God will fully satisfy all your needs through his glorious riches in Jesus Christ.

Greetings to the saints

¹³Greet every saint in Christ Jesus. All the saints here send you greetings especially those who belong to Caesar's household.

Paul's closing blessing

¹⁴To our God and Father be glory for ever and ever. The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit. Amen.

*1 The Book of Life (meaning Eternal Life). See note on Revelation 2:36.

TITUS

Paul has been released from his Rome prison for approx two years now and is again about his tireless missionary work.

He is believed to have visited Spain as planned (Romans 7:18), and then along with his capable Greek companion Titus, visited the island of Crete. At the time of this letter Paul has left Titus in Crete to help establish the new churches and appoint leaders while Paul continues his mission elsewhere, traditionally Philippi.

Paul now writes to Titus who is still in Crete, to give him some useful instruction on church leadership in general and to invite him to spend the winter with him in Nicopolis, a city on the west coast of Greece.

AUTHOR Paul the apostle.

A bishop should be hospitable, kind, discreet, upright, holy and self-disciplined.
Titus 1:6.

CONTENTS

Chapter

Paul greets Titus	1	Let no one treat you with disrespect	1
I left you in Crete to appoint bishops in every town ...	1	Remind saints to be obedient, honest and courteous ..	1
Qualities of a bishop	1	Avoid foolish controversies	1
False teachers must be silenced	1	Only warn a divisive man twice	1
Rebuke the people with sharpness	1	Once we too were sinners	2
Teach the older saints to be examples to the young .	1	But the loving kindness of God saved us	2
You yourself must be a model example	1	Try and come to me at Nicopolis for winter	2
Teach slaves to be subject to their masters	1	Help Zenas and Apollos on their way	2
Grace teaches us to say 'no' to worldly passions	1	Closing greetings and blessing	2

1

Paul greets Titus

¹Paul an apostle of Jesus Christ called to further the faith of God's elect. To Titus my true son in the faith we share.

²Grace and peace from God the Father and Christ Jesus our Saviour.

I left you in Crete to appoint bishops in every town

³The reason I left you in Crete was to put in order what remained to be done and to appoint bishops^{F*} in every town.

The qualities of a bishop

⁴Now a bishop should be blameless, have been married once only,^{F*} and be a man whose children believe and are not reckless or disobedient.

⁵Since he is entrusted with God's work he must be beyond reproach, not arrogant or quick-tempered, not given to drunkenness, not violent or greedy for gain.

⁶Rather a bishop should be hospitable, kind, discreet, upright, holy and self-disciplined.

*3 A bishop (sometimes translated elder or overseer) presided over a local church much as a pastor or parish priest does today.

*4 ie Not to be a man who has divorced and remarried. Having plural wives was mostly confined to Semitic peoples, ie Israelites, Arabs and some African tribes. It was forbidden among Romans and Greeks, however divorce was common.

⁷He must hold firmly to the gospel as it has been taught him so that he can preach sound doctrine and refute those who oppose it.

False teachers must be silenced

⁸For there are many who are rebellious, empty talkers and deceivers, especially Jews of the circumcision group. ⁹They must be silenced or they will bring ruin to whole households, teaching things that should not be taught.

¹⁰Although these teachers claim to know God, by their very actions they deny him. ¹¹They are detestable, rebellious and incapable of doing good. They teach for the sake of dishonest gain.

Rebuke the people with sharpness

¹²Now a man of Crete, one of their own prophets^{F*} has said, "Cretans are liars, evil beasts and lazy gluttons."

¹³There is truth in this, therefore rebuke the people with sharpness so they will remain sound in the faith, and pay no attention to Jewish myths, or the false teachings of those who have deviated from the truth.

¹⁴You must teach the saints sound doctrine.

*12 The Cretan poet Epimenides.

Teach the older saints to be a good example to the young

¹⁵Teach the older men to be temperate, respectable, self-disciplined and sound in faith, love and endurance.

¹⁶Likewise teach the older women to be reverent in their behaviour and not to gossip slanderously or be addicted to wine. ¹⁷Rather to teach by good example and to train the younger women to love their husbands and children. ¹⁸And to be sensible, chaste, busy at home, full of kindness and subject to their husbands, that the word of God may not fall into disrepute.

¹⁹Similarly encourage the younger men to be self-controlled.

You yourself must be a model example

²⁰In all things you yourself must be a model example. Show integrity, dignity and soundness of doctrine that cannot be criticised in all your teaching. ²¹Let those who oppose you be ashamed and not able to say anything bad about us.

Teach slaves to be subject to their masters

²²Teach slaves to be subject to their masters, to please them and not talk disrespectfully to them or steal from them. ²³That in every way they will make attractive the gospel of God our Saviour.

Grace teaches us to say 'no' to worldly passions

²⁴For the grace of God that saves has appeared and teaches us to say 'no' to worldly passions, and to live upright godly lives. ²⁵While we await the appearing in glory of the great God, and our Saviour Jesus Christ.^{F*}

Do not let anyone treat you with disrespect

²⁶Encourage and rebuke with authority. Let no one treat you with disrespect.

Remind the saints to be obedient, honest and courteous

²⁷Remind the saints to be subject to their rulers and to obey laws. Also to be ready to do honest work and not speak evil of anyone, but to be peaceable, considerate and courteous toward all.

And devote themselves to doing what is good

²⁸Stress these things so that those who trust in God will be careful to devote themselves to doing good. ²⁹Our people must learn to provide for their daily necessities and not live unproductive lives.

Avoid foolish controversies

³⁰Avoid foolish controversies, genealogies and arguments about the Law of Moses. These things are unprofitable and futile.

Only warn a divisive man twice

³¹Warn a divisive man once, and then a second time. After that have nothing more to do with him. You can be certain that such a man is perverse and sinful. He has condemned himself.

2

Once we too were sinners but the loving kindness of God saved us

¹At one time we too were foolish and disobedient, deceived and enslaved by all manner of passions and pleasures. ²We lived in malice, envy, and hate toward one another.

³But the loving kindness of God saved us, not because of any righteous works we had done, but because of his mercy.

⁴He saved us through the rebirth of baptism and renewal by the Holy Spirit, through Jesus Christ our Saviour.

⁵We have become heirs to the hope of Eternal Life.

Try and come to me at Nicopolis for winter

⁶When I send Artemas to you or Tychicus, try and come to me at Nicopolis for I have decided to winter there.

Help Zenas and Apollos on their way

⁷Do all you can to help Zenas the lawyer and Apollos on their way.^{F*} See that they have everything they need.

Closing greetings and blessing

⁸All here with me send you their greetings.

⁹Greet those with you who love us in the faith. Grace be with you all.



The island of Crete where Paul left Titus to establish the new churches and appoint leaders.

*²⁵ Both Jesus and Paul have made a statements such as this indicating that the Father is to accompany Jesus at his second coming. See also Matt-Mark-Luke 32:7 and note.

*⁷ Zenas and Apollos are believed to have delivered this letter to Titus in Crete.

1 TIMOTHY

Paul has left his young missionary companion Timothy in Ephesus to refute false teachers while he goes to visit the saints in Macedonia.

While in Macedonia Paul foresees a possible delay in his returning to Ephesus and writes this letter to Timothy giving him instructions to pass onto the saints.

Timothy was born of a devout Jewish mother (Eunice) and a Greek father. Paul converted Timothy during his second mission at Lystra and had him circumcised so that he would be accepted by the local Jews (Acts 15:1-3). Timothy appears to have been a very faithful young man but somewhat shy, more a follower than a leader. There is no doubt that Paul was very fond of him.

This letter contains much practical instruction. It is also noted for Paul's admission that he was the '*worst of all sinners*' and that the reason the Lord had mercy on him was to provide hope for other sinners. It also contains Paul's famous quote, "*The love of money is the root of all evil*" (1 Timothy 3:26).

AUTHOR Paul the apostle.

Here is a trustworthy saying, "***Jesus Christ came into the world to save sinners***" of whom I am the worst. 1 Timothy 1:11.

CONTENTS

Chapter

Paul greets Timothy	1	Let no one despise you because of your youth	2
Warn false teachers who promote controversy	1	Neglect not your spiritual gift	2
Our desire is to increase love among the saints	1	Treat older people with respect	2
Some men want to teach the old Law of Moses	1	Treat the young as brothers and sisters	2
The Law was given for sinners	1	Take care of widows who are genuinely in need	3
I thank Jesus Christ for appointing me to his service.....	1	A non-provider is worse than an unbeliever	3
I was also a sinner	1	Only worthy older widows to be supported by church	3
Jesus Christ came to save sinners	1	Younger widows should remarry	3
I the worst of sinners was shown mercy	1	Believing women should support widowed relatives	3
I was an example to others who would believe	1	Faithful bishops worthy of their keep	3
I give you the following instructions	1	Two or more witnesses required to accuse a bishop	3
Prayer to be offered for all men especially rulers	1	Do not ordain too hastily	3
Jesus the only mediator between God and man	1	Use a little wine for the sake of your stomach	3
Women should dress modestly	1	Slaves should respect their masters	3
Women not to have authority over men in church	1	The proud disagree with sound instruction	3
For Eve was formed after Adam	1	We brought nothing into this world	3
Eve was the one deceived not Adam	1	We take nothing out	3
Women are saved through child bearing	1	The love of money is the root of all evil	3
To aspire to be a bishop is noble	2	Advice to the rich in the church	3
The qualities of a bishop	2	Timothy to pursue godliness	3
The qualities of a deacon	2	Keep all these commands	3
I may be delayed in coming to you	2	Until the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ	3
In later times some will depart from the faith	2	Honour to God who lives in unapproachable light	3
False teachers will forbid marriage and certain foods	2	Whom no mortal man has seen	3
All food can be purified by prayer	2	Reject the godless babble falsely called Knowledge	3
Train yourself in godliness	2	Paul's closing blessing	3

Bold italics A prophet speaking under inspiration.

1

Paul greets Timothy

¹Paul an apostle of Jesus Christ by the command of God, to Timothy my true son in the faith. ²Grace, mercy and peace to you from God the Father and Christ Jesus our Lord.

Warn false teachers who promote controversy

³As I urged you before I left for Macedonia, stay there in Ephesus in order to warn certain men not to teach false doctrines any longer. Nor to devote themselves to myths and endless

genealogies. ⁴These things promote controversy rather than the building up of faith.

Our desire is to increase love among the saints

⁵Our desire is to increase love among the saints. Love which comes from a pure heart, a clear conscience and sincere faith.

Some men want to teach the old Law of Moses

⁶But some men have strayed from the faith and turned to meaningless talk. They desire to teach the old Law of Moses but do not know what they are talking about.

The Law was given not for the righteous but for sinners

⁷The Law is good if used properly, but the Law was not given for the righteous but for the ungodly and sinful. ⁸Murderers, adulterers, sodomites, slave traders, liars and all else contrary to the glorious gospel of the blessed God which he has entrusted me to teach.

I thank Jesus Christ for appointing me to his service though I was once a sinner

⁹I thank Jesus Christ our Lord who has given me grace and strength abundantly, and judged me as one who is faithful by appointing me to his service. ¹⁰Even though I was once a blasphemer, a persecutor and a violent man, he has shown me mercy. For I acted in ignorance.

Jesus Christ came to save sinners

¹¹Here is a trustworthy saying, "*Jesus Christ came into the world to save sinners*" of whom I am the worst.

I, the worst of sinners was shown mercy as an example to others who would believe

¹²The reason that I, the worst of sinners was shown mercy, was to enable Christ to display his unlimited patience in me, as an example to all those who would believe on him and receive Eternal Life.

I give you the following instructions

¹³Timothy my son I give you the following instructions in keeping with the prophecy once made over you, that you may fight a good fight and hold on to your faith and have a clear conscience.

¹⁴For some have rejected their conscience and shipwrecked their faith. Among these are Hymenaeus and Alexander whom I have handed over to Satan that they may learn not to blaspheme.

Prayer to be offered for all men, especially rulers

¹⁵First of all I desire that prayer and thanksgiving be offered for all men, especially for rulers^{F*} and others in authority, that we may live quiet peaceful lives in all holiness.

¹⁶This is good and pleases God who desires all men to be saved and to know the truth.

Jesus the only mediator between God and man

¹⁷There is but one God and one mediator between man and God, Christ Jesus who gave himself as a ransom for all.

¹⁸So let men everywhere lift up holy hands in prayer without anger or contention.

Women should dress modestly

¹⁹I also desire that women should dress modestly with decency and restraint. Not with braided hair or with gold, pearls, or expensive clothes, but with kindly deeds as befits women who profess to worship God.

Women not to teach or have authority over men in church

²⁰Women should learn in quietness and submission. I do not permit women to teach or to have authority over men in the church. They are to remain quiet.

For Eve was formed after Adam and she was the one deceived

²¹For Adam was formed first, then Eve. And Adam was not the one deceived, rather it was Eve who was deceived and transgressed.

Women are saved through child bearing

²²But women are saved through child bearing if they continue in faith, love, and holiness with chastity.

2

To aspire to be a bishop is noble

¹Here is another trustworthy saying, "*He who aspires to be a bishop desires a noble task.*"

The qualities of a bishop

²A bishop must be above reproach, have been married once only,^{F*} be temperate, self-controlled, respectable, hospitable, able to preach, not given to drunkenness, not violent but gentle, not quarrelsome nor a lover of money.

³He must manage his own family well and see that his children obey him with proper respect. For if a man cannot govern his own household how can he care for God's church?

⁴He must not be a recent convert or he may become puffed up and fall under the same condemnation as the devil.^{F*}

⁵Also he must have a good reputation with those outside the church that he not fall into disgrace, or a snare of the devil.

The qualities of a deacon

⁶Deacons^{F*} likewise are to be men worthy of respect. Sincere, not indulging in much wine and not eager for gain. ⁷Deacons must also have been married once only and govern their children and households well.

⁸In the same way their wives are to be women

*15 Timely advice, as Nero was now ruler of the Roman empire. Within two years the church would begin to suffer at his hands. Both Paul and Peter were put to death during his reign.

*2 ie Not divorced. See note on Titus 1:4.

*4 The devil and his angels are traditionally believed to have been cast out of heaven because of the sin of pride.

*6 Deacons were assistants to bishops.

1 TIMOTHY 3

worthy of respect, not malicious gossipers but temperate and trustworthy in all things.

⁹Deacons must hold to the deep truths of the faith with a clear conscience. ¹⁰Let them first be tested and if they prove themselves let them serve.

¹¹For they who serve well gain a good standing and great boldness in their faith in Jesus Christ.

I may be delayed in coming to you

¹²Although I hope to come to you soon, I write you these instructions, that if I am delayed you will know how the saints should conduct themselves in the church of God.

In later times some will depart from the faith

¹³For the Spirit clearly reveals to me, that in later times some will depart from the faith and give heed to deceiving spirits and doctrines of demons.

False teachers will forbid marriage and certain foods

¹⁴Such teachings will come through hypocritical liars whose consciences have been seared as if with a hot iron.

¹⁵They will forbid people to marry and require them to abstain from foods which God created to be used with thanksgiving by those who believe.

All food can be purified by prayer

¹⁶For everything God created is good and nothing is to be rejected if it is received with thanksgiving, for it is purified by the word of God and prayer.

¹⁷If you teach these things to the brethren you will be a good minister of Jesus Christ.

Train yourself in godliness

¹⁸Have nothing to do with godless myths and legends, rather train yourself in godliness. ¹⁹Physical training is of some value, but godliness has value for all things, both in this life and the life to come.

Let no one despise you because of your youth

²⁰So command and teach all these things to the people. ²¹Let no one despise you because of your youth. Set the believers an example in your speech and conduct and in your love, faith and purity.

Neglect not your spiritual gift

²²Until I return, attend to the public reading of scripture and to preaching and teaching. ²³Do not neglect your gift which was given you by prophecy when the elders laid their hands on you. ²⁴Be diligent in all these matters that all may see your progress.

Treat older people with respect and the young as brothers and sisters

²⁵Do not rebuke an older man, but exhort him as if he were your father. ²⁶Treat younger men as brothers, and older women as you would your mother, and younger women as sisters with total purity.

3

Take care of widows who are genuinely in need

¹Take care of widows who are genuinely in need. But if a widow has children or grandchildren, they should live their religion by caring for their own for this is pleasing to God.

²However a widow who is alone and genuinely in need places her hope in God and prays day and night for help.

³But a widow who lives for pleasure is spiritually dead even while she lives.

A non-provider worse than an unbeliever

⁴So warn the saints with this following instruction that none may incur guilt. ***"If anyone does not provide for his own, and especially his immediate family, he has denied the faith and is worse than an unbeliever."***

Only worthy older widows to be supported by church

⁵No widow is to be supported by the church unless she is over sixty years of age, has been married once only, and is known for her good works. ⁶And who has raised children, shown hospitality, washed the feet of the saints, assisted those in distress and devoted herself to doing good in every way.

Younger widows should remarry

⁷Do not put younger widows on the list, for when their sensual desires overcome their dedication to Christ they wish to marry again, bringing judgement upon themselves having broken their vow.^{F*}

⁸Besides that, they often become idle and go from house to house gossiping and being busybodies, saying things they should not.

⁹I counsel younger widows to remarry and to have children and manage their homes, thus giving our enemies no opportunity to criticise us. For some have already turned away to follow Satan.

Believing women should support widows who are their relatives

¹⁰If any believing woman has a relative who is a widow she should support her and not let her become a burden to the church. So that the church can help the widows who are truly in need.

Faithful bishops worthy of their keep

¹¹Bishops who rule faithfully in the church are worthy of double honour, especially those who preach and teach, for the scripture says, ***"The labourer is worthy of his hire."***^{F*}

Two or three witnesses required to accuse an bishop

¹²Do not act on an accusation against a bishop unless it is brought by two or three

*7 It is believed that a widow supported by the church was expected to make a vow to the Lord to devote the rest of her life to serving him within the church. By remarrying after making such a vow she would incur guilt.

*11 Paul here quotes the words of Jesus from the gospel of Luke.

witnesses. ¹³However a bishop who does sin is to be rebuked publicly, that the others may take warning.

¹⁴I command you to maintain these rules without partiality. Do nothing out of favouritism.

Do not ordain too hastily

¹⁵Be not too hasty in the laying on of hands, to avoid sharing in the guilt of other men's sins.

¹⁶The sins of some men are immediately obvious but the sins of others only come to light later.

¹⁷Good works are also obvious, but even when they are not, they cannot long be hidden.

Use a little wine for the sake of your stomach

¹⁸Keep yourself pure. No longer drink only water but use a little wine for the sake of your stomach and frequent ailments.

Slaves should respect their masters

¹⁹Slaves should respect their masters so that God's name and our teaching not be slandered.

²⁰Slaves who have believing masters should not show less respect for them because they are brothers in the gospel. Instead they should serve them even better for they are dear to them.

The proud disagree with sound instruction

²¹These are all the things you must teach the saints. If anyone teaches otherwise and disagrees with the sound instruction of our Lord Jesus Christ, he is puffed up with pride and understands nothing.

²²Such men also have an unhealthy interest in controversies that cause strife and constant friction between men of corrupt minds. They regard godliness as a means to financial gain.

We brought nothing into this world and we take nothing out

²³But we brought nothing into this world and we take nothing out of it.

²⁴If we have food and clothing we should be content with that. Godliness with contentment is great gain.

The love of money is the root of all evil

²⁵Men who desire to get rich fall into temptation. They are snared by foolish and

harmful desires that plunge them into ruin.

²⁶For the love of money is the root of all evil.

²⁷Some men eager for riches have wandered from the faith and pierced themselves with many sorrows.

Advice to the rich in the church

²⁸Therefore command those who are rich in this present world, not to be arrogant, nor to put their trust in uncertain wealth, but to put their trust in God who richly provides us with everything for our enjoyment.

²⁹Command them to be rich in good deeds, to be generous and willing to share. In this way they will lay up a firm foundation for the coming age so they may possess Life that is truly Eternal Life.

Timothy to pursue godliness

³⁰And you, man of God, pursue godliness, faith, love, endurance and gentleness. Fight the good fight of the faith and take hold of Eternal Life to which you were called.

Keep all these commands until the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ

³¹Now, in the sight of God I charge you to keep all these commands without blame, until the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ which God will bring about in his own time.

Honour to God who lives in unapproachable light and whom no mortal man has seen

³²Blessed be God the King of kings and Lord of lords, who alone has immortality and who lives in unapproachable light, whom no mortal man has seen or can see.^F* To him be honour and might forever. Amen.

Reject the godless babble falsely called Knowledge

³³O Timothy, guard well those who have been entrusted to your care. ³⁴Reject the godless babble and contradictions of what is falsely called Knowledge, which some have professed and in so doing have strayed from the faith.

Paul's closing blessing

³⁵Grace be with you all.

*³² There are many accounts in the Bible of men seeing God. For an explanation of this apparent contradiction see note on John 1:8.

2 TIMOTHY

This is Paul's final letter. He is again imprisoned at Rome but this time under the reign of the emperor Nero, a notorious persecutor of Christians. Nor is he living in a rented house as he did during his previous imprisonment but is chained in a cold dungeon.

Paul appears to feel lonely and somewhat abandoned by his old friends. He knows that his work on earth is done and that death awaits him, but he longs to see Timothy and also Mark before he dies. Twice in this letter he urges Timothy to come to him in Rome. Yet despite his circumstances, Paul still devotes most of his letter to uplifting and strengthening Timothy.

In this last letter Paul makes his triumphant statement, "*I have fought the good fight. I have finished the race. I have kept the faith.*"

Nero had Paul publicly beheaded not long after this letter was written.

AUTHOR Paul the apostle.

A servant of the Lord must not be quarrelsome but be kindly to all, able to teach and gently correct opponents without arousing resentment. 2 Timothy 2:4.

CONTENTS

Chapter

Paul greets Timothy	1	Ever instructed but never able to discern the truth	2
I remember your tears at our parting	1	Follow my way of life	2
I long to see you again	1	All who desire to live a godly life will be persecuted	2
The sincere faith of your grandmother lives in you ...	1	Hold to the scriptures	2
Fan into flame your gift of the Spirit	1	Scripture inspired by God	2
Be not ashamed of the Lord or of me	1	Scripture useful to a man of God in his work	2
Hold to my pattern of sound teaching	1	Preach, correct, rebuke and encourage	2
Onesiphorus refreshed me when he visited Rome ...	1	Men will surround themselves with false teachers	2
Be strong my son, choose reliable men as teachers ...	1	False teachers tell them what they want to hear	2
I am chained like a criminal	1	Remain steady and endure hardship	2
I endure all things for the elect	1	Time for my departure has come	2
If we endure we will reign with Christ	1	A crown of righteousness awaits me	2
Warn the brethren against disputations	1	Come to me soon	2
Some teach that the resurrection has already been ...	1	Only Luke is with me	2
The Lord knows those who belong to him	1	Bring Mark with you when you come	2
A cleansed man will be used by the Master	2	Also my cloak and scrolls	2
Flee the passions of youth	2	Guard against Alexander the coppersmith	2
Avoid foolish controversies	2	All deserted me at my first court hearing	2
A servant of the Lord must be kindly and gentle	2	The Lord will bring me to his heavenly kingdom	2
Gently correct without arousing resentment	2	Greetings	2
Sins of men in the last days	2	Paul's closing blessing	2

Bold italics A prophet speaking under inspiration.

1

Paul greets Timothy

¹Paul an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, to Timothy my dear son. ²Grace, mercy and peace to you from God the Father and Christ Jesus our Lord.

I remember your tears at our parting and long to see you again

³I thank God whom I serve with a clear conscience as I remember you in my prayers, recalling your tears as we parted. ⁴I long to see you again, that I may be filled with joy.

The sincere faith of your grandmother and mother lives in you

⁵I think often of your sincere faith which first lived in your grandmother Lois and your mother Eunice, and now lives in you.

Fan into flame your gift of the Spirit

⁶For this reason I remind you to fan into flame the gift of God bestowed upon you through the laying on of my hands. ⁷For God gave us not a Spirit of timidity, but a Spirit of boldness, love and wisdom.

Be not ashamed of the Lord nor of me

⁸Be not ashamed of the testimony of our Lord, nor of me his prisoner, but join with me in suffering for the gospel.

⁹God appointed me an apostle and teacher of this gospel and for this reason I am suffering.

¹⁰Yet I am not ashamed. I know in whom I believe, and I know that he is able to guard all whom I have entrusted to him until the day of his return.

Hold to my pattern of sound teaching

¹¹Hold firmly to the pattern of sound teaching you received from me, along with faith and love and the help of the Holy Spirit who lives in us.

Onesiphorus refreshed me when he visited Rome

¹³You know of those in the province of Asia^{F*} who have turned away from me including Phygelus and Hermogenes.

¹⁴But may the Lord on the day of his return show mercy to Onesiphorus and his household, for he refreshed me and was not ashamed of my chains.

¹⁵When he came to Rome he searched hard until he found me and you know how many ways he helped me in Ephesus.

Be strong my son and choose reliable men as teachers

¹⁶So you too my son, be strong in grace. Entrust to reliable men the things you have heard me teach, men who are qualified to teach others.

¹⁷Endure hardship with me as a good soldier of Jesus Christ. For a soldier does not become entangled in civilian affairs but seeks to please his commander. And likewise an athlete is not crowned unless he competes by the rules.

¹⁹Reflect on what I am saying and the Lord will give you insight.

I am chained like a criminal but I endure all things for the elect

²⁰Remember Jesus Christ, descended from David in the flesh^{F*} and raised from the dead. This is the gospel for which I am suffering, being chained like a criminal.

²¹But the word of God is not chained, therefore I endure all things for the sake of the elect that they may obtain the salvation and eternal glory that is in Christ.

If we endure we will reign with Christ

²²Here is a trustworthy saying, *"If we die with him we will live with him. If we endure we will reign with him. If we disown him he will disown us. ²³Yet if we are faithless he will still remain faithful."*

Warn the brethren against disputations

²⁴Keep reminding the brethren of these things. Warn them in the name of the Lord against disputations over words. ²⁵It is of no value and brings to ruin those who listen.

*13 Timothy was in the province of Asia in the city of Ephesus.

*20 Through Mary the mother of Jesus who was a descendant of David.

Charge them to avoid such godless babble.

²⁶Those who indulge in it become more and more ungodly. Their words eat away like gangrene.

Some teach that the resurrection has already taken place

²⁷Among such men are Hymenaeus and Philetus who have departed from the truth and say that the resurrection has already taken place. ²⁸They are destroying the faith of some.

The Lord knows those who belong to him

²⁹Nevertheless, God's solid foundation stands firm, sealed with this inscription: *"The Lord knows those who belong to him,"* and *"Let everyone who confesses the name of Christ turn from wickedness."*

2

A cleansed man will be used by the Master for noble purposes

¹In a large house are found many vessels, some for noble use and some for ignoble use. If a man cleanses himself from the ignoble he will become a vessel used for noble purposes, made holy and useful to the Master, ready for any good work.

Flee the passions of youth and avoid foolish controversies

²Flee the passions of youth. Pursue righteousness, faith, love and peace. ³Have nothing to do with foolish and senseless controversies for you know they breed quarrels.

A servant of the Lord must be kindly and able to gently correct without arousing resentment

⁴A servant of the Lord must not be quarrelsome but be kindly to all, able to teach and gently correct opponents without arousing resentment. ⁵And to do so in the hope that God will perhaps bring them to repentance, that they may know the truth and escape the snare of the devil who has taken them captive.

The sins of men in the last days

⁶For in the last days there will be perilous times. Men will be lovers of themselves, lovers of money, boasters, proud, arrogant, abusive, disobedient to parents, ungrateful, unholy, inhuman, unforgiving, slanderous.

⁷Without self-control, brutal, haters of good, treacherous, rash, conceited, lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God. ⁸Possessing a form of religion but denying its power.

⁹Avoid such men. They are the kind who worm their way into houses and captivate foolish women.

Ever being instructed but never able to discern the truth

¹⁰Such men are laden down with sins, driven by all kinds of desires. Ever being instructed but never able to discern the truth.

¹¹Just as Jannes and Jambres^{F*} opposed

*11 The Egyptian sorcerers who opposed Moses in Pharaoh's court (Exodus chapter 4).

2 TIMOTHY 2

Moses, so too do these men oppose the truth. They have corrupt minds and a counterfeit faith.

Follow my way of life

¹²You however know my teaching, my way of life, my purpose, my faith, my patience, my love and endurance and also my persecutions and sufferings. All that I endured in Antioch, Iconium and Lystra. And yet the Lord rescued me from all of them.

All who live a godly life will be persecuted

¹³Indeed all who desire to live a godly life in Jesus Christ will be persecuted. But the wicked go from bad to worse and deceive others and themselves.

Hold to the scriptures

¹⁴As for you, continue in what you have learned, for from infancy you have known the scriptures which are able to give you wisdom and lead you to salvation through faith in Christ Jesus.

Scripture is inspired by God and useful in equipping a man of God in his work

¹⁵All scripture is inspired by God and useful for teaching, rebuking, correcting, and training in righteousness. That a man of God may be equipped for his good work.

Preach, correct, rebuke and encourage with utmost patience and care

¹⁶Now in the presence of God and of Christ Jesus who will judge the living and the dead, I give you this charge. ¹⁷Persist in preaching the word of God, whether the time be favourable or unfavourable. Correct, rebuke, and encourage with the utmost patience in teaching.

Men will surround themselves with teachers who will tell them what they want to hear

¹⁸For the time is coming when men will not accept sound doctrine. Instead they will surround themselves with teachers who will tell them what their ears want to hear. ¹⁹They will turn away from hearing the truth and wander away into myths.

Remain steady and endure hardship

²⁰But as for you Timothy, remain steady in all situations. Endure hardship, preach the good message, and fulfil your ministry.

The time for my departure has come

²¹I am ready to be sacrificed. The time for my departure has come.^{F*} ²²I have fought the good fight. I have finished the race. I have kept the faith.

A crown of righteousness awaits me

²³Henceforth there awaits me a crown of righteousness which the Lord will award to me on the day of his appearing. ²⁴And not only me, but all who have longed for his coming.

Come to me soon

²⁵Do your best to come to me soon. Demas who is in love with this present world has deserted me and gone to Thessalonica.

Only Luke is with me

²⁶Crescens has gone to Galatia and Titus to Dalmatia.^{F*} I have sent Tychicus to Ephesus. Erastus stayed in Corinth and I left Trophimus sick in Miletus. Only Luke is with me.

Bring Mark with you when you come also my cloak and scrolls

²⁷Bring Mark with you when you come for he is helpful to me. ²⁸Also bring the cloak that I left with Carpus at Troas, and my scrolls especially the parchments.

Guard against Alexander the coppersmith

²⁹Alexander the coppersmith did me a great deal of harm. The Lord will repay him for what he has done.

³⁰You too should be on your guard against him for he strongly opposes our message.

All deserted me at my first court hearing

³¹At my first court hearing no one came to my defence. All deserted me. ³²May it not be held against them. ³³But the Lord gave me strength and I was delivered from the lion's mouth.

The Lord will bring me safely to his heavenly kingdom

³⁴I know the Lord will rescue me from all evil and bring me safely to his heavenly kingdom. To him be glory for ever and ever. Amen.

Greetings

³⁵Greet Priscilla and Aquila and the household of Onesiphorus.

³⁶Eubulus, Pudens, Linus, Claudia and all the brethren greet you. Do your best to get here before winter.

Paul's closing blessing

³⁷The Lord be with your spirit and grace be with you all.



The Mamertine prison in Rome where Paul was imprisoned.

*21 Paul died within months of writing of this letter.

*26 Present day Yugoslavia.

1 PETER

This elegant letter of Peter appears to have been written primarily to strengthen the saints in their trials under the persecution of the Roman emperor Nero.

He reminds the saints that Jesus himself also suffered and encourages them with clear uplifting gospel truths and down to earth wisdom.

Peter also reveals that while the physical body of Jesus lay in the tomb, Jesus went in his spirit body and taught the good news of the gospel to imprisoned spirits of the dead in the spirit world (Sheol), especially those who died over 2000 years ago during the flood of Noah. This teaching by Jesus to the dead is prophesied by Jesus himself in John 5:20 and is also prophesied in the Old Testament through the prophet Zechariah by the *'Spirit of Christ'* (1 Peter 1:9). ie *"Because of the blood of my covenant I shall set free the prisoners from Sheol. Wait in your stronghold O prisoners of hope, for I will restore you double (Zechariah 4:8).*

Not long after this letter and its companion letter 2 Peter were written, Peter was arrested at Rome and put to death by crucifixion. He is said to have insisted on being crucified upside down, claiming he was unworthy to die as Jesus had done.

AUTHOR Peter with the help of Silas (1 Peter 3:11).

Wives, be submissive to your husbands so that even if they do not at first believe, they may be won over by the purity and reverence of your lives. And let not your beauty be from outward adornment; braided hair, gold jewellery and fine clothes. Instead let it come from the unfading loveliness of a calm and gentle spirit, which is of great worth in the eyes of God. 1 Peter 2:1-2.

CONTENTS

Chapter

Peter's introduction	1	Repay not evil with evil	2
We have been born again to an unfading inheritance..	1	Who will harm you if you do good?	2
Trials have come to prove your faith genuine	1	Better to suffer for doing good than for doing evil	2
Rejoice with inexpressible joy	1	Answer all who ask you the reason for your hope	2
You are achieving the salvation of your souls	1	Christ preached in his spirit to the spirits in prison	2
Prophets of old spoke of Christ	1	To those who died in the days of Noah	2
The mystery of Christ has now been revealed	1	Noah's rescue from the flood symbolises baptism	2
Even angels longed to know	1	Christ is now at the right hand of God in heaven	2
Be as obedient children and holy	1	If you willingly suffer you have broken from sin	2
Live your lives in reverent fear	1	Unbelievers will have to account for their sins	2
You are redeemed with the precious blood of Christ ..	1	The gospel was preached to the dead	2
Love one another deeply and rid yourselves of sin ..	1	That they too might be judged	2
You are a chosen people, a royal priesthood	1	The end is drawing near	2
Live blameless lives	1	Love covers over a multitude of sins	2
Submit to rulers	1	Use your gifts of the Spirit to serve others	2
Slaves, submit yourselves to your masters	1	Rejoice that you too can suffer with Christ	2
Patiently endure unjust suffering	1	That you be filled with joy when he comes	2
You were all called to suffering by Christ's example ..	1	Do not be ashamed to suffer as a Christian	2
He bore our sins in his body on the tree	1	Judgement will begin with us who belong to God	2
Wives, be submissive to your husbands	2	Advice to church leaders	3
Let your beauty come from a calm and gentle spirit ..	2	All of you humble yourselves before God	3
Husbands, treat your wives with consideration	2	The devil prowls around like a roaring lion	3
Your prayers will not then be hindered	2	I have written this letter with the help of Silas	3
Live in harmony and love	2	Greetings and closing blessing	3

Bold italics A prophet speaking under inspiration.

1

Peter's introduction

¹Peter an apostle of Jesus Christ, to God's elect, strangers in the world, chosen by the fore-knowledge of God the Father. ²Sanctified by the Spirit to a life of obedience in Jesus

1 PETER 2

Christ, being purified by his blood. ³Grace and peace be yours in abundance.

We have been born again to an inheritance that can never fade

⁴Praise to the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ. For in his great mercy we have been born again unto a living hope through his resurrection from the dead. ⁵An inheritance that can never fade, held in heaven to be revealed at the end times.

Trials have come to prove your faith genuine

⁶Rejoice greatly, even though for a short time you suffer distress through trials. ⁷These are to prove that your faith is genuine so that you will have glory and honour when Jesus Christ is revealed.

Rejoice with inexpressible joy for you are achieving the salvation of your souls

⁸Though you do not now see him, you love him and believe in him and rejoice with inexpressible joy. For you are achieving the goal of your faith which is the salvation of your souls.

The prophets of old spoke of Christ by the Spirit of Christ

⁹The prophets of old spoke of this salvation by the Spirit of Christ which was in them. They predicted the sufferings of Christ and the glories that would follow.

The mystery of Christ has now been revealed which even angels longed to know

¹⁰Now the mystery of Christ has been clearly revealed, by those who have preached the gospel to you through the Holy Spirit sent from heaven. ¹¹Even angels had longed to know these things.

Be as obedient holy children

¹²Therefore rid your minds of every encumbrance and prepare for the grace^{F*} to be given you when Jesus Christ returns.

¹³Be as obedient children and yield no longer to sinful desires as you did when you lived in ignorance. ¹⁴For he who called you is holy therefore you too must be holy in all that you do.

Live in reverent fear for you are redeemed with the precious blood of Christ

¹⁵Since you pray to a Father who judges the works of each man impartially, live your lives in reverent fear.

¹⁶For it was not with silver or gold that you were redeemed from the empty way of life of your forefathers, but with the precious blood of Christ. A lamb without blemish who was chosen from before the creation of the world.

¹⁷God raised him from the dead and glorified him, therefore your faith is in God.

Love one another deeply and rid yourselves of sin

¹⁸By your obedience to the truth you have purified yourselves, therefore love one another

deeply from the heart. ¹⁹Rid yourselves of all malice, deceit, hypocrisy, envy and lying of every kind.

²⁰Like new-born babies, crave pure spiritual milk that you may grow up to salvation. For you have tasted that the Lord is good.

You are a chosen people, a royal priesthood

²¹Come to the Living Stone, rejected by men but chosen by God. For you too are living stones, being built into a spiritual temple and a holy priesthood to offer spiritual sacrifices acceptable to God.

²²You are a chosen people, a royal priesthood, a holy people who belong to God. That you may proclaim the glorious works of him who called you out of darkness into his wonderful light.

Live blameless lives

²³My dear friends I urge you to abstain from fleshly desires which war against your soul. Live blameless lives in the sight of unbelievers even though they may falsely accuse you of wrongdoing.

²⁴Let them see your good works so they will give glory to God on the day he comes.

Submit to rulers

²⁵For the sake of the Lord submit yourselves to rulers among men, to the emperor^{F*} and his governors. ²⁶Live as free men and servants of God. ²⁷Show proper respect to everyone. Love the brethren, revere God, and honour the emperor.

Slaves, submit yourselves to your masters and patiently endure unjust suffering

²⁸Slaves, submit yourselves to your masters with all respect, not only to those who treat you kindly but also to those who are harsh.

²⁹It is good that a man patiently endure unjust suffering when he has a knowledge of God. For what credit can you claim when you suffer for doing wrong?

You were all called to suffering by Christ's example

³⁰As for suffering, to this you were all called. Christ suffered for you as an example, therefore you should follow in his steps.

He bore our sins in his body on the tree

³¹He bore our sins in his body on the tree and by his wounds you have been healed.

³²You were like sheep going astray but now you have returned to the Shepherd of your souls.

2

Wives, be submissive to your husbands

¹Wives, be submissive to your husbands so that even if they do not at first believe, they may be won over by the purity and reverence of your lives.

*12 Grace is the free gift from a loving God, of divine help, divine power or favour, beyond the natural abilities of man.

*25 Most of the biblical world was under the rule of the Roman emperor at this time.

**Let your beauty come from
a calm and gentle spirit**

²And let not your beauty be from outward adornment; braided hair, gold jewellery and fine clothes. Instead let it come from the unfading loveliness of a calm and gentle spirit, which is of great worth in the eyes of God.

³For this is the way the holy women of old adorned themselves, living in obedience to their husbands.

⁴Sarah obeyed Abraham and called him her master. And you are her daughters if you do what is right and not be fearful.

**Husbands, treat your wives with consideration
and respect that your prayers be not hindered**

⁵Husbands, in the same way be considerate of your wives. Treat them with respect as the more tender partner and as heirs with you of the gift of Eternal Life. So that nothing will hinder your prayers.

**Live in harmony and love and
repay not evil with evil**

⁶Finally all of you, live in harmony and brotherly love. ⁷Be kind and humble and do not repay evil for evil, nor insult for insult. Rather, bless those who afflict you that you may be blessed.

Besides who will harm you if you do good?

⁸Besides, who will harm you if you are eager to do good? ⁹For it is written, *“If you love life and desire to see many good days, keep your tongue from untruths, turn from evil and do good, seek peace and pursue it.*

¹⁰*For the eyes of the Lord are upon the righteous and his ears are attentive to their prayers.”*

**It is better to suffer for doing good
than for doing evil**

¹¹Even if you do suffer for doing good you will be blessed. ¹²For if God wills that you suffer, it is better that you suffer for doing good than for doing evil.

**Be prepared to answer all who ask you
the reason for the hope you have within you**

¹³So in your hearts accept Christ as Lord, and be prepared to give an answer to all who ask you the reason for the hope you have within you.

**Christ preached in his spirit to the spirits
in prison who died in the days of Noah**

¹⁴For Christ died for our sins, the righteous for the unrighteous, to reconcile us to God. ¹⁵His body was put to death but he was quickened in his spirit, by which he went and preached to the spirits in prison.^{F*} ¹⁶Those who disobeyed long ago in the days of Noah who built an ark in which only eight people were rescued from the water.

*15 Peter here reveals that during the two days that the body of Jesus lay dead in the tomb, Jesus went in his spirit and taught the gospel to spirits in Sheol, the spirit world of the dead (aptly called a prison by Peter), who had perished during the flood of Noah (see verse 22 of this chapter, also John 5:20 and Zechariah 4:8).

**Noah's rescue from the flood
a symbol of baptism**

¹⁷This rescue from water prefigured the baptism that now saves us, not as a symbol of washing the body, but as a seeking from God for a cleansing of guilt through the raising up of Jesus Christ from the grave.^{F*}

Christ is now at the right hand of God in heaven

¹⁸For Christ has ascended into heaven and is now at the right hand of God, with the angels and all spiritual powers in submission to him.

**If you willingly suffer in the flesh
you have broken away from sin**

¹⁹Since Christ suffered in the flesh, you too should take to yourselves the same spirit, for he who willingly suffers in the flesh has broken away from sin. He lives his earthly life submitting to the will of God rather than satisfying his sinful lusts of the flesh.

Unbelievers will have to account for their sins

²⁰For in the past you lived as unbelievers do, in sensuality, lust, drunkenness, orgies, carousing and shameful idolatry.

²¹Unbelievers now think it strange that you do not join with them and they heap abuse on you. But they will have to give an account to he who judges the living and the dead.

**The gospel was preached to the dead
that they too might be judged**

²²That is why the gospel was preached even to the dead,^{F*} that they too might be judged as men in the flesh, but live according to God in the spirit.

The end is drawing near

²³The end of all things is drawing near. Therefore be alert and prayerful.

Love covers over a multitude of sins

²⁴Above all love each other deeply, for love covers over a multitude of sins. Be hospitable to one another without complaining.

Use your gifts of the Spirit to serve others

²⁵Each one should use whatever gift of the Spirit he has received, to serve others.

²⁶The one who prophesies should do so as befits one who speaks the words of God.

²⁷The one who serves should do so with the full strength God provides. That in all things God may be glorified through Jesus Christ.

**Rejoice that you too can suffer with Christ that
you be filled with joy when he comes**

²⁸So my dear friends, be not surprised at the painful trials you are suffering as though it were something strange. ²⁹But rejoice that you too can share in the suffering of Christ, that you too may be filled with joy when his glory is revealed. ³⁰However if you suffer it should not be as a wrong doer.

*17 Baptism primarily symbolises a rebirth, an arising from burial in a grave of water to a reformed life (Romans 3:4). It probably also symbolises the washing away of past sins.

*22 See verse 15 of this chapter and footnote.

1 PETER 3

Do not be ashamed to suffer as a Christian

³¹Therefore be not ashamed to suffer as a Christian. Rather praise God that you bear that name.

³²Those who suffer by God's will should entrust their lives to their faithful Creator and continue to do good.

Judgement will begin with us who belong to God

³³For judgement will begin with those who belong to God. And if it begins with us, what will be the end for those who do not obey the gospel of God?

³⁴As it is written, ***"If it is hard for the righteous to be saved, what will become of the ungodly and the sinner?"***

3

Advice to church leaders

¹Now to the bishops among you, I appeal to you as a fellow shepherd and as an eyewitness of Christ's sufferings. Be shepherds of the flock of God under your care.

²Serve as leaders not by compulsion, but because you are willing. Not for gain but because you are eager to serve. Not lording it over those entrusted to you, but being examples to the flock.

³Then when the Chief Shepherd appears you shall win the crown of glory that will never fade.

All of you humble yourselves before God

⁴Young men, be submissive to those who are older. And all of you, be clothed with humility toward one another for it is written, ***"God opposes the proud but gives grace to the humble."***

⁵Therefore humble yourselves before God's

mighty hand that he may lift you up in due time.
⁶Cast all your cares upon him, for he loves you.

Your enemy the devil prowls around like a roaring lion

⁷Be sober and alert for your enemy the devil prowls around like a roaring lion seeking to devour. ⁸Resist him and stand firm in the faith. Know that your brothers throughout the world are undergoing the same trials.

⁹After you have suffered a little while, the God who called you to his eternal glory in Christ will restore you, and make you strong and firm and steadfast. ¹⁰To God be the glory and the power for ever and ever. Amen.

I have written this letter with the help of Silas

¹¹I have written this letter to you with the help of Silas a faithful brother, to encourage you and to testify that this gospel is the true grace of God. Stand fast in it.

Greetings and closing blessing

¹²The church here in Babylon^{F*} sends you greetings as does my son Mark.^{F*}

¹³Greet one another with a kiss of love.

¹⁴Peace to all of you who are in Christ.



"Be shepherds of the flock of God under your care" 1 Peter 3:1. In his advice to bishops Peter uses the common Biblical imagery of a shepherd and his flock.

*12 Traditionally Rome. Peter is believed to have used the word Babylon symbolically, as it is used in chapter 13 of the book of Revelation. The ancient city of Babylon was destroyed 300 years before Jesus was born but still symbolised worldliness, wealth, power, domination and sin, all characteristics of the Rome of Peter's day.

*12 Author of the gospel of Mark and close companion of Peter, not his literal son.

2 PETER

This second letter of Peter was written in everyday vigorous Greek, as would be expected of a fisherman called to be an apostle of the Lord. Peter's first letter with the aid of the educated Silas was written in polished literary Greek (1 Peter 3:11).

However this letter is not lacking in power or truth. Peter informs the saints that he is writing "to stir up your memories of the words of the prophets and of us the apostles of the Lord and Saviour" (2 Peter 2:1).

Early in his letter Peter prophesies that he is soon to die, and then bears strong testimony of the transfiguration of Jesus on the mountain of which he was an eyewitness. He strongly warns the saints against false teachers as Paul often did in his letters. Also like Paul he touches on the mighty events to accompany the return of Jesus Christ.

AUTHOR Peter the apostle.

However there have been false prophets arisen in the past and there will be false teachers among you also. They will secretly introduce destructive heresies, even denying the Lord who redeemed them. 2 Peter 1:16.

CONTENTS

Chapter

Peter's introduction	1	Believers who return to sin worse off than before	1
Jesus Christ has called us to his own divine glory	1	Better to have not known the way of righteousness .	1
Therefore increase your faith, goodness, knowledge ..	1	I have written to arouse your memories of truth	2
Make your calling and election sure	1	Scoffers will arise and say, 'Where is his coming?' ..	2
I am soon to lay aside my body	1	The heavens and earth to be destroyed by fire	2
We were eyewitnesses of the transfiguration	1	One day is as a thousand years in eyes of Lord	2
The words of the prophets made more certain	1	The Lord is allowing us time for repentance	2
Prophecy originates in men moved by the Holy Spirit .	1	At Lord's coming the heavens will vanish with a roar ..	2
There have been false prophets in the past	1	The earth will burn with fire	2
There will be false teachers among you also	1	Therefore you ought to be holy and godly	2
Ungodly punished on day of judgement	1	New heavens and new earth promised by the Lord ..	2
The Lord will rescue godly men from trials	1	Paul also speaks of these things in his letters	2
The wicked indulge in sinful lusts of the flesh	1	Some things in Paul's letters hard to understand	2
They despise divine authority	1	Be on your guard against the error of wicked men ...	2
They follow the way of Balaam	1		

Bold The Lord or an angel speaking.

1

Peter's introduction

¹Peter, a servant and apostle of Jesus Christ, to those who have received the precious faith through our God and Saviour Jesus Christ.

²Grace and peace be yours in abundance.

Jesus Christ has called us to his own divine glory

³For God's divine power has given us all we need for Eternal Life and godliness, through Jesus Christ who called us to his own glory and goodness. ⁴That we may partake of the divine nature and escape from sin caused by evil desires.

Therefore increase your faith, goodness, knowledge, etc

⁵Therefore make every effort to increase your faith, goodness, knowledge, self-control, endurance, godliness, brotherly kindness and

love. ⁶For when these things abound you will be productive in your knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ.

⁷Whoever lacks these things is short sighted or blind. He has forgotten that he has been cleansed from his past sins.

Make your calling and election sure

⁸Therefore brethren be eager to make your calling and election sure. If you do this you will never fall, and you will receive a rich welcome into the eternal kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.

I am soon to lay aside my body

⁹I feel I should refresh your memory of these things, even though you know them and are firmly established in the truth. ¹⁰For our Lord

2 PETER 2

Jesus Christ has made known to me that I will soon lay aside my body.^{F*}

¹¹Therefore I will do all that I can to ensure that after my departure you will always remember these things.

We were eyewitnesses of the transfiguration of Jesus Christ

¹²For we did not teach cleverly fabricated lies when we preached to you about the power and coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, but we were eyewitnesses of his glory.

¹³We^{F*} were with him on the sacred mountain when he was transfigured in honour and glory from God the Father and we heard the voice that came from heaven, from the Majestic Glory saying, **“This is my beloved Son whom I have chosen and with whom I am well pleased.”**

The words of the prophets made more certain

¹⁴Therefore the words of the prophets are made more certain and you will do well to take heed of them, for they are like a lamp that illuminates a dark place.

Prophecy in scripture has its origin in men speaking by the Holy Spirit

¹⁵No prophecy in scripture ever had its origin in the prophet’s own mind, but men spoke from God as they were moved by the Holy Spirit.

There have been false prophets in the past and there will be false teachers among you also

¹⁶However there have been false prophets arisen in the past and there will be false teachers among you also. They will secretly introduce destructive heresies, even denying the Lord who redeemed them.

¹⁷For the sake of greed these teachers will exploit you with falsehoods and bring swift destruction upon themselves. ¹⁸Yet many will follow their shameful ways and bring the way of truth into disrepute.

The Lord will punish the ungodly but will rescue godly men from trials

¹⁹However, if God spared not the angels who sinned,^{F*} but cast them down to hell^{F*} into the nether gloom to await judgement. ²⁰If he spared not the ancient world when he brought the flood upon its ungodly people, rescuing only righteous Noah and seven other persons. ²¹If he burned the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah to ashes as an example of what will happen to the ungodly, rescuing only Lot, a righteous man who was distressed by the filthy lives of wicked men.

²²These things being so, then the Lord knows

how to rescue godly men from trials, and to hold the ungodly until the day of judgement, to be punished.

The wicked indulge in the sinful lusts of the flesh and despise divine authority

²³This is especially true of those who indulge in the sinful lusts of the flesh, and despise divine authority.

²⁴These men are bold and arrogant and do not fear to slander the glorious ones. Yet even angels do not bring such accusations in the presence of the Lord.

²⁵But these sinful men blaspheme in matters they do not understand. They are like brute beasts, creatures of instinct born only to be caught and destroyed, and they too will perish.

²⁶Their idea of pleasure is to revel in broad daylight. They are blots and blemishes, revelling in their pleasures while they feast with you.

²⁷Their eyes are full of adultery. They seduce the unstable and never cease to sin.

They follow the way of Balaam

²⁸They follow the way of Balaam who loved the wealth of wickedness. He who was rebuked by a donkey, a beast without speech who spoke with the voice of a man and restrained the prophet in his madness.^{F*}

²⁹Such men are springs without water. The nether gloom of darkness is reserved for them.

Believers who return again to their sins are worse off than before

³⁰For if men escape the wickedness of the world by knowing our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ and then again become entangled in it, and are overcome. They are worse off than they were before they knew the Lord.

Better if they had not known the way of righteousness

³¹It would have been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness than to have known it and turned their backs on it.

³²Of such men these proverbs are true, “A dog returns to its vomit” and “A sow that is washed goes back to her wallowing in the mud.”

2

I have written to arouse your memories of truth

¹Beloved, this is now my second letter to you. I have written them both to stir up your memories of the words of the prophets and of us the apostles of the Lord and Saviour.

Scoffers will arise and say, ‘Where is his coming?’

²For in these last days, scoffers who walk in the sinful lusts of the flesh will arise and say, “Where is this coming he promised? For everything continues on as it has since the beginning of creation.”

*10 Peter was crucified at Rome not long after writing this letter.

*13 The apostles Peter, James and John (Matt-Mark-Luke 17:23-31).

*19 Peter may be referring to an account of lustful angels in the apocalyptic book of Enoch which was widely circulated at that time. Apocalyptic means ‘hidden revelation’ (see introduction to Jude).

*19 Tartarus, a Greek term for the wickedest, darkest part of Hades the spirit world of the dead.

*28 The account of Balaam and his donkey is found in Numbers chapter 10.

The heavens and earth to be destroyed by fire

³They choose to forget that long ago by God's word the earth was formed out of water. And also by his word water deluged and destroyed the world.

⁴By his same word the present heavens and earth are to be destroyed by fire, being reserved for the day of judgement and the destruction of ungodly men.

One day is as a thousand years in the eyes of the Lord

⁵And remember this beloved, in the eyes of the Lord one day is as a thousand years and a thousand years as one day.

The Lord is allowing us time for repentance

⁶The Lord is not slow in keeping his promise, rather he is patient, not wanting any person to perish but all to repent.

At the Lord's coming the heavens will vanish with a roar and the earth will burn with fire

⁷But the day of the Lord will come as a thief. The heavens will vanish with a loud roar, the elements^{F*} will melt with fire and the earth and all worldly things will be burned up.

Therefore you ought to be holy and godly, looking forward to the great day

⁸Since all things will be burned in this way, what kind of people ought you to be? You

should be holy and godly, looking forward to the great day of God and desiring to speed its coming.

The Lord has promised new heavens and a new earth

⁹For the Lord has promised new heavens, and a new earth in which righteousness dwells. ¹⁰So beloved make every effort to be found spotless and at peace with him. ¹¹Count our Lord's patience as a means of salvation.

Paul also speaks of these things in his letters

¹²Our dear brother Paul has also written to you with the wisdom that God gave him. He speaks of these things in his letters.

Some things in Paul's letters hard to understand

¹³There are some things in them that are hard to understand which the ignorant and unstable twist to their own destruction, as they do the other scriptures.

Be on your guard against the error of wicked men

¹⁴Therefore beloved friends, be on your guard so that you may not be carried away by the error of wicked men and fall from your secure place.

¹⁵But grow in the grace and knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. To him be glory both now and forever. Amen.

*7 Not the natural elements of the earth but man-made structures. From the Greek word 'stoicheion' meaning 'orderly arrangements.'

JUDE

Jude, which can also be translated Judas (or Judah in Hebrew) was a half brother to Jesus Christ, both he and Jesus were born of the same mother, Mary. However Jude was conceived through Joseph the carpenter not by God the Father as with his older brother. James who was the author of the book of James was another half brother to Jesus (Matt-Mark-Luke 14:49).

Jude wrote this vigorous letter, drawing in part from Peter's second letter, to counter an unnamed false doctrine, probably Gnosticism that was spreading among Christians and justified sexual immorality (see introduction to 1 John).

As Paul prophesied in Acts 19:19, false doctrines and false teachers were to become a major problem in the church, and it has remained so even to modern times.

In his letter, Jude quotes from two books that were popular in his day and were regarded as scriptural; *The Book of Enoch* and *The Assumption of Moses*. These two Jewish apocalyptic books (apocalyptic means 'secret revelation') along with other apocryphal books (apocryphal means of doubtful authenticity) were written in the period between the Old and New Testaments, apparently to satisfy a hunger for revelation from the Lord, which had ceased. Such books were usually falsely attributed to a long dead prophet to give them authenticity.

Apocalyptic and apocryphal books contain much truth as they draw upon genuine history, scripture and prophets for basic material, but tend to embellish the truth with speculation.

AUTHOR Jude, a half brother of Jesus Christ.

These worldly men who divide you, who follow mere natural instincts do not have the Holy Spirit. Jude 1:17.

CONTENTS

	Chapter
Jude's introduction	1
I urge you to fight for the faith	1
Immoral men have secretly slipped in among you	1
These men are like those of Sodom and Gomorrah .	1
They speak abusively against the glorious ones	1
They follow the way of Cain, Balaam and Korah	1
	These men are fault finders, boasters and flatterers ...1
	The apostles have prophesied of such scoffers1
	These men do not have the Holy Spirit1
	Beloved, build up your faith and pray in the Spirit1
	Convince those who doubt1
	Glory, majesty, power and authority to God1

Bold The Lord or an angel speaking.
Bold italics A prophet speaking under inspiration.

1

Jude's introduction

¹Jude, a servant of Jesus Christ and brother of James.^{F*} To those who have been called and loved by God the Father and set apart for Jesus Christ.

²Mercy, peace and love be yours in abundance.

I urge you to fight for the faith

³Beloved, I urge you to fight for the faith. I was eager to write to you about the salvation we share but felt I had to write and urge you to fight for the faith that was once delivered to the saints.

Immoral men have secretly slipped in among you

⁴For certain men have secretly slipped in among you, godless men who pervert the gospel of our God's grace into a licence for immorality. They even deny Jesus Christ our Master and Lord. ^{F*}

⁵Those who rebelled of old were destroyed by the Lord, and I remind you that although Jesus delivered his people out of Egypt^{F*} he later destroyed those who did not believe.

⁶And the angels who did not keep their due

^{*4} Jude is probably referring to Gnosticism which began about this time. See introduction to 1 John for more detail.

^{*5} The Jehovah of the Old Testament who appeared and spoke to Moses and delivered the Israelites out of Egypt was the pre-mortal Jesus who came in the name of the Father (see note on 1 Corinthians 4:13).

^{*1} Not the apostle James who was no longer alive at this time, but James the half brother of Jesus, who appears to have been the presiding elder or bishop over the entire church at Jerusalem.

order, are held by him in darkness for judgement on the great Day.^{F*}

**These immoral men are like those
of Sodom and Gomorrah**

⁷Also Sodom and Gomorrah, who likewise indulged in sexual immorality and perversion serve as an example of those who will suffer the punishment of Eternal Fire.

**They speak abusively
against the glorious ones**

⁸In the same manner these dreamers^{F*} defile their own bodies, reject authority and despise the glorious ones.

⁹Even the archangel Michael, when he was disputing with the devil about the body of Moses did not dare bring an accusation against him but said, "**The Lord rebuke you.**"^{F*}

¹⁰However these men speak abusively against whatever they do not understand. They do things by instinct, like unreasoning animals and so corrupt themselves.

**They follow the way of
Cain, Balaam and Korah**

¹¹Woe to them. They have taken the path of Cain. They have rushed into Balaam's error, and will perish as did Korah's rebellion.

¹²These men are blemishes at your love feasts. Shepherds who feed only themselves.

¹³They are like clouds without rain, like barren fruit trees in autumn. Like wild waves of the sea, foaming up their shame. Wandering stars for whom the nether gloom of darkness has been reserved forever.

¹⁴Enoch prophesied of such men saying, "**See, the Lord is coming with thousands upon**

thousands of his holy ones, to judge all people and to convict all the ungodly."^{F*}

**These men are fault finders,
boasters and flatterers**

¹⁵These men are complainers and fault finders. They follow their own evil desires, boasting of themselves and flattering others to gain advantage.

The apostles have prophesied of such scoffers

¹⁶Beloved, remember that the apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ have prophesied, "**In these last days scoffers who walk in the sinful lusts of the flesh will arise.**"^{F*}

These men do not have the Holy Spirit

¹⁷These worldly men who divide you, who follow mere natural instincts do not have the Holy Spirit.

**Beloved, build up your faith
and pray in the Spirit**

¹⁸But you beloved, build up your holy faith and pray in the Holy Spirit. Keep yourselves in God's love as you await the Eternal Life that the Lord Jesus Christ will bring you.

**Convince those who doubt and
snatch others from the fire**

¹⁹Convince those who doubt, and snatch others from the fire to save them, hating even the garment defiled by the flesh.

Glory, majesty, power, and authority to God

²⁰To him who is able to keep you from falling and to make you stand without blemish in the presence of his glory with rejoicing, to the only God our saviour be glory, majesty, power and authority through Jesus Christ our Lord, now and forever. Amen.

*6 Jude is apparently referring to an account of lustful angels in the apocalyptic book of Enoch which was widely circulated at that time. Apocalyptic means 'hidden revelation' (see introduction for more details).

*8 Dreamers in the sense of being conceited and vain.

*9 This refers to an account in the apocalyptic book *The Assumption of Moses*. The devil maintained that Moses belonged to him as he was a murderer (referring to the incident in Exodus 1:21). Michael was outraged by this claim but did not rebuke the devil directly. Old Testament Biblical evidence indicates that Moses was translated (see note on Deuteronomy 10:30).

*14 Quoted from the apocalyptic book of Enoch.

*16 Jude is quoting from 2 Peter 2:2.

HEBREWS

This profound and eloquent letter by an unnamed author appears to have been written for Hebrew (Jewish) converts to the early church to strengthen their faith during the persecution they were suffering at this time, and to prevent them from drifting back into the legalism of the Law of Moses.

The unnamed author (most likely Barnabas) displays a sound knowledge of the Old Testament and Christian doctrine in general and also a keen interest in the priesthood. His discourse on faith in chapter 4 is particularly inspiring.

AUTHOR

Unnamed, although Bibles translated between 400 and 1600 AD ascribe the letter to Paul, probably because of some of the ideas expressed and reference to Timothy at the close. However the style is altogether different from Pauls, and Paul was always particular to identify himself. The early church writer Tertullian (200 AD) names the author as Barnabas, '*an epistle to the Hebrews under the name of Barnabas*' (De Pudicitia, 20). Barnabas was a Levite (the priestly tribe of Israel) and a missionary companion and associate of Paul. He was also called an apostle by Luke (Acts 13:11).

Jesus Christ is the same, yesterday, today, and forever. So do not be led astray by strange teachings. Hebrews 5:16.

CONTENTS

Chapter

In the past God spoke through prophets	1	Jesus a priest forever after order of Melchizedek	2
But now by a Son	1	Old Law is now set aside for it was useless	2
The Son now sits at the right hand of God	1	Jesus able to save forever those who come to him ..	2
How then can we escape if we pay no heed?	1	Man-made sanctuary only a copy of the heavenly ..	2
God has testified to the truth of the gospel	1	Jesus sacrificed for sins once for all	2
By signs, miracles and gifts of the Holy Spirit	1	Man destined to die once and after that to be judged ..	2
God will make all things subject to us	1	Not possible for animal blood to take away sins	2
Jesus the pioneer of our salvation	1	We are made holy through sacrifice of Jesus Christ ..	2
He calls us his brothers	1	Body and blood of Jesus can cleanse us from guilt ..	3
He died to destroy the devil	1	Spur one another on to love and good works	3
Devil holds the power of death	1	Do not neglect meeting together	3
Jesus has become a merciful high priest	1	If we keep on sinning no sacrifice for sin is left	3
Jesus atones for sins of the people	1	We trample the Son of God under foot	3
Jesus worthy of greater honour than Moses	2	We are deserving of severe punishment	3
Harden not your hearts as our fathers did	2	Remember your persecution of early days	3
We must endure to the end in faith	2	How you cheerfully submitted	3
Word of God sharper than a two-edged sword	2	Endure in faith to receive what is promised	3
Nothing hidden from God's sight	2	Faith defined	4
Jesus able to sympathise with our weaknesses	2	Without faith it is impossible to please God	4
Jesus has also been tempted in every way	2	Men of faith – Abel, Enoch, and Noah	4
High priests among men also compassionate	2	Abraham's faith	4
A high priest must be called of God	2	All these were still living by faith when they died	4
Jesus learned obedience by what he suffered	2	God has prepared a heavenly city for them	4
This is hard to explain as you are slow to learn	2	Abraham had faith to offer Isaac as a sacrifice	4
Let us move on from the first truths of Christ	2	The faith of Isaac, Jacob, and Joseph	4
No repentance for sinning against the Holy Spirit	2	The faith of Moses	4
We are confident of better things in your case	2	The faith of the Israelites of old	4
Continue in diligence to the very end	2	The faith of Gideon, Barak, Samson, and Jephthah ..	4
Do not become slothful	2	The faith of David, Samuel, and the prophets	4
For Abraham patiently endured	2	They will all be made perfect together with us	4
Jesus has gone before us as a high priest	2	Therefore let us run the race with endurance	4
Jesus a priest after the order of Melchizedek	2	Let us fix our eyes on Jesus the pioneer	4
Melchizedek's order of priesthood continues forever ..	2	You have not yet resisted evil to shedding blood	4
Melchizedek was greater than Abraham	2	The Lord disciplines those he loves	4
Melchizedek's priesthood greater than Levitical	2	Submit to the discipline of the Father of our spirits ..	4
Perfection not attained through Levitical priesthood ..	2	Live in peace with all men	5
When the priesthood changes the law changes also ..	2	Avoid sexual immorality and godlessness	5

City of the living God lies before you	5	Offer to God a sacrifice of praise	5
Show hospitality to strangers	5	Do good and share with others	5
Some have entertained angels unawares	5	By grace we are strengthened, not by rules on food ...	5
Remember those in prison	5	Submit to your church leaders	5
Keep the marriage bed undefiled	5	Pray for us also	5
Do not love money, be content with what you have	5	Greetings	5
Imitate the faith of those who preached to you	5	Closing blessing	5
Christ the same yesterday, today, and forever	5		

Bold The Lord or an angel speaking.
Bold italics A prophet speaking under inspiration.

1

**In the past God spoke through prophets
but now by a Son**

¹In the past, God spoke to our forefathers through the prophets, but in these last days he has spoken to us by a Son, whom he appointed heir of all things, and through whom he made the worlds.

The Son now sits at the right hand of God

²The Son reflects God’s glory and bears the stamp of his nature. He sustains all things by his powerful word.

³After he had provided the way to purify us from our sins, he sat down at the right hand of the greatness of God in heaven, as superior to the angels as is the name he has inherited.

⁴For to which angel did God ever say, **“You are my Son. Today I have become your Father.”** Or **“Sit at my right hand until I make your enemies a footstool for your feet.”**^{F*}

**How then can we escape if we pay no heed
to the message we have heard**

⁵Therefore we must pay closer attention to the message we have heard, lest we drift away from it. ⁶For if messages spoken by angels were binding and every disobedience received its just punishment, how shall we escape if we pay no heed to a salvation so great as this?

**For God has testified to the truth of the gospel
by signs, miracles and gifts of the Holy Spirit**

⁷The message of the gospel was first announced by the Lord himself and then confirmed to us by those who heard him. God has also testified to it by signs and miracles and by gifts of the Holy Spirit.

God will make all things subject to us

⁸It is not to angels that God will give control of the world to come, for it is testified somewhere, **“What is man that you are mindful of him, that you care for him? You have made him little lower than the angels^{F*} and crowned him with glory and honour, subjecting all things under his feet.”**

⁹In putting everything under his feet, God

*4 These scriptures are found in Psalms 14:4 and 54:1.
*8 This psalm of David (Psalms 34:3-4) clearly reads in the original Hebrew, ‘little lower than God’ (*Eloheim*). The quote above by the author of Hebrews is taken from the old Greek Septuagint translation which substitutes the word ‘angels’ for God.

made all things subject to him, although at present we do not see this.

¹⁰But we do see Jesus who for a little while was made lower than the angels, but is now crowned with glory and honour for he suffered death for everyone.

Jesus is the pioneer of our salvation

¹¹It was fitting, that God in bringing many of his sons to glory should make the pioneer of their salvation perfect through suffering.

He calls us his brothers

¹²We are of the same family, so Jesus is not ashamed to call us brothers. He said, **“I will proclaim your name to my brothers.”** And again, **“Here am I and the children God has given me.”**

**He died to destroy the devil
who holds the power of death**

¹³Since the children were flesh and blood, he also took upon himself flesh and blood, so that by his death he might destroy him who holds the power of death, who is the devil.

**Jesus has become a merciful high priest
to atone for the sins of the people**

¹⁴Therefore Jesus became a merciful and faithful high priest^{F*} to atone for the sins of the people.

2

Jesus worthy of greater honour than Moses

¹Therefore my holy brethren, fix your thoughts on Jesus, the apostle and high priest whom we confess. ²For he was faithful to the one who appointed him, just as Moses was faithful.

³But Jesus is worthy of greater honour than Moses, just as the builder of a house is worthy of greater honour than the house itself.

Harden not your hearts as our fathers did

⁴So as the Holy Spirit says through scripture, **“Harden not your hearts as you did when you rebelled in the desert where your fathers tested me. I declared in my anger, ‘They shall never enter my rest.’”**

⁵Therefore, see to it brethren that none of you

*14 Under the Law of Moses the high priest atoned for the sins of the people each year by animal sacrifice.

HEBREWS 2

have a sinful unbelieving heart that turns away from the living God. But encourage one another daily that none of you become hardened by sin.

We must endure to the end in faith

⁶For we will share in Christ only if we endure to the end.

⁷Those of old who disobeyed were not able to enter the promised land because of unbelief. The message they heard was of no value to them because they did not combine it with faith.

⁸We also have had a message preached to us just as they did, therefore be careful that none of you fall short of it.

Word of God sharper than a two-edged sword

⁹For the word of God is living and active, sharper than a two-edged sword. It penetrates even to dividing soul and spirit, joints and marrow and to discerning the thoughts and attitudes of the heart.

Nothing hidden from God's sight

¹⁰Nothing in all creation is hidden from God's sight. All is laid bare before the eyes of him to whom we must give account.

Jesus able to sympathise with our weaknesses for he has been tempted in every way

¹¹Therefore since we have a great high priest in Jesus the Son of God, exalted above the heavens, let us hold firmly to the faith we profess.

¹²Jesus is able to sympathise with our weaknesses, for he has been tempted in every way, just as we are, yet he did not sin.

High priests chosen among men also able to deal compassionately

¹³High priests chosen among men are appointed to offer sacrifice for sin. They too are able to deal compassionately with those who are ignorant and going astray, since they themselves are subject to sin.

¹⁴This is why they offer sacrifices for their own sins as well as for the sins of the people.

A high priest must be called of God

¹⁵No one takes upon himself the honour of a high priest, he must be called of God as was Aaron.

¹⁶So also Christ did not take upon himself the glory of becoming a high priest, but God said to him, "**You are a priest forever after the order of Melchizedek.**" ^{F*}

Jesus learned obedience by what he suffered

¹⁷During his life on earth Christ offered up prayers and requests with loud cries and tears to the one who could save him from death. And he was heard because of his godly submission.

¹⁸Although he was a son he learned obedience by that which he suffered.

¹⁹And being made perfect he became the source of Eternal Life for all who obey him. A high priest after the order of Melchizedek.



An artist's view of Aaron the first Levite high priest of Israel from whom the writer of Hebrews appears to have been descended.

This is hard to explain as you are slow to learn

²⁰We have much to say about this but it is difficult to explain as you are slow to learn.

²¹By now you should be teachers yourselves, but you need someone to instruct you in the first truths of God's word all over again. You need milk not solid food.

Let us move on from the first truths of Christ to maturity

²²Therefore let us move on from the first truths of Christ; repentance from sin, faith in God, instruction on baptism, laying on of hands, resurrection of the dead and eternal judgement, and go on to maturity.

Those who have shared in the Holy Spirit and fall away cannot be restored again by repentance

²³This we will do if God permits, but it is impossible for those who have shared in the Holy Spirit tasting the powers of the coming age and who then fall away, to be restored again by repentance.

²⁴For they have crucified the Son of God all over again and subjected him to public disgrace.

We are confident of better things in your case

²⁵Even though we speak like this beloved, we are confident of better things in your case. ²⁶God is not unjust. He will not forget your work and the love you show him as you continue to serve the saints.

Continue in diligence to the very end and do not become slothful

²⁷We want each of you to continue this same diligence to the very end and to make your hope sure, and not become slothful.

For Abraham patiently endured

²⁸For Abraham patiently endured and obtained this promise from God, "**I will surely bless you and multiply you.**"

*16 This scripture is found in Psalms 54:4.

**Jesus has gone before us as a high priest
after the order of Melchizedek**

²⁹And we have the hope as an anchor to our soul of entering the inner sanctuary behind the veil where Jesus has gone before us. He being made a high priest forever after the order of Melchizedek.

**Melchizedek's order of
priesthood continues forever**

³⁰Now Melchizedek was king of Salem^{F*} and a priest of God Most High. He met Abraham returning from the defeat of the kings and blessed him and Abraham gave him a tenth of everything.

³¹Melchizedek means 'king of righteousness' and his order of priesthood is not dependent on ancestry. It has no beginning or end. Like the Son of God he continues a priest forever.

Melchizedek was greater than Abraham

³²Consider how great Melchizedek was, for even Abraham gave him a tenth of the spoil.

³³The Law of Moses also required priests who are descendants of Levi to collect a tenth from the people. Melchizedek however did not trace his descent from Levi. Yet he collected a tithe from Abraham the patriarch who had the promises, and he blessed him.

**Melchizedek's priesthood greater than
the Levitical priesthood**

³⁴It is without doubt that the lesser person is blessed by the greater.

³⁵In the one case the tithe is collected by men whose priesthood dies with them, but in this other case, by him who is declared to be a priest forever.

³⁶One could even say that Levi paid the tithe through Abraham, for when Melchizedek met Abraham, Levi was still in his loins.

**Perfection not attained through
the Levitical priesthood**

³⁷If perfection could be attained through the Levitical priesthood why was there a need for another priest to come, one after the order of Melchizedek?

**When there is a change of priesthood
there is also a change of law**

³⁸Also when there is a change of priesthood there must also be a change of the law.^{F*} For Jesus belonged to a different tribe, he was descended from Judah.^{F*} No one from that tribe ever served at the altar.^{F*}

**Jesus a priest forever after
the order of Melchizedek**

³⁹This becomes more clear now. For another priest like Melchizedek has appeared, not on

the basis of his ancestry but on the basis of the power of a never ending life. For the scripture declares, "You are a priest forever, after the order of Melchizedek."

⁴⁰And this priesthood was confirmed with an oath, whereas others who became priests took their office without an oath.

**Jesus is able to save forever those
who come to God through him**

⁴¹There have been many Levitical high priests, for death prevented them from continuing in office. ⁴²But because Jesus lives eternally he has a permanent high priesthood. Therefore he is able to intercede and save forever those who come to God through him.

**The man-made Temple sanctuary only
a copy of the true one in heaven**

⁴³Such a high priest meets our need, one who is holy and pure, exalted above the heavens in the true sanctuary. Not a man-made sanctuary that is only a copy of the true one.

Jesus sacrificed for sins once for all

⁴⁴Unlike former high priests he does not need to offer sacrifices day after day, first for his own sins and then for the sins of the people. ⁴⁵This he did once for all, when he offered himself.

**The old Law is now set aside
for it was useless**

⁴⁶The old Law is now set aside for it was weak and useless and made nothing perfect.

⁴⁷On the other hand a better hope is introduced by which we can approach God. Jesus has become the guarantee of a better covenant.

**Man destined to die once and
after that to face judgement**

⁴⁸For just as man is destined to die once and after that to face judgement, so Christ was sacrificed once to take away the sins of many.

⁴⁹And he will come a second time, not to bear sin but to bring salvation to those who are waiting for him.

**Not possible for animal blood
to take away sins**

⁵⁰The Law of Moses was only a shadow of the good things that were to come, not the reality itself. It could never make perfect those who worshipped.

⁵¹If it could, sacrifices would have stopped being offered. But the sacrifices were an annual reminder of sins, and it is not possible for the blood of bulls and goats to take away sins.

**We have been made holy through the
sacrifice of the body of Jesus Christ**

⁵²Therefore when Christ came into the world he said, "Here I am. I have come to do your will O God."

⁵³And by that will, we have been made holy through the sacrifice of the body of Jesus Christ, once and for all.

*30 Salem means 'peace' and is believed by Jewish scholars to have been the ancient name of Jerusalem.

*38 The Levitical priesthood which commenced with Aaron the brother of Moses was passed on from father to son. This lesser priesthood and the temporary law of Moses appear to go hand in hand.

*38 Through his mother Mary.

*38 Only priests from the tribe of Levi were permitted to serve at the altar under the law of Moses.

The body and blood of Jesus can cleanse us from a guilty conscience

¹Therefore brethren, since we can enter the Most Holy Place by the blood of Jesus and the veil that is his body, let us approach God with a sincere heart in full faith. ²Being sprinkled with his blood to cleanse us from a guilty conscience, and having our bodies washed with pure water.

Spur one another on to love and good works

³Let us hold fast to the hope we profess, for he who promised is faithful. ⁴And let us consider how we might spur one another on toward love and good works.

Do not neglect meeting together

⁵Let us not neglect meeting together, as some are in the habit of doing but let us encourage one another, and all the more as you see the Great Day approaching.^{F*}

If we deliberately keep on sinning no sacrifice for sin is left, only judgement

⁶For if we deliberately keep on sinning after we have received knowledge of the truth, no sacrifice for sin is left. Only a fearful expectation of judgement and of the raging fire that will consume the enemies of God.

He who has trampled the Son of God under foot is deserving of severe punishment

⁷Anyone who violated the Law of Moses died without mercy on the testimony of two or three witnesses.

⁸Therefore how much more deserving of severe punishment do you think a man will be who has trampled the Son of God under foot and insulted the Holy Spirit?

⁹It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God.

Remember how you cheerfully submitted to persecution in the early days

¹⁰Remember how in the early days when you first received the light, you stood your ground in the face of suffering. ¹¹How you were publicly exposed to insult, persecution and prison, and cheerfully submitted to the confiscation of your property. For you knew you had better and lasting possessions.

Therefore endure in faith to receive what is promised

¹²Do not throw away that confidence, it will be richly rewarded, but you must endure in faith to receive what is promised.

Faith defined

¹Faith is to be confident in what we hope for, but do not see.

Without faith it is impossible to please God

²Without faith it is impossible to please God.

*5 In the early days of the church the return of Jesus was thought to be imminent. See note on 1 Corinthians 3:18.

³Anyone who comes to him must believe that he exists and that he rewards those who earnestly seek him.

Men of faith – Abel, Enoch and Noah

⁴By faith we understand that the worlds were formed at God’s command.

⁵By faith Abel offered God a better sacrifice than did Cain.

⁶By faith Enoch did not experience death, God took him away. And before he was taken he was commended as one who pleased God.

⁷By faith Noah when warned about things not seen, built an ark to save his family.

Abraham’s faith

⁸By faith Abraham when called to go to a land he would later receive as his inheritance, obeyed and went. ⁹By faith he lived in tents in the promised land as a stranger in a foreign country, so did his sons Isaac and Jacob.

¹⁰By faith Abraham even though he was past age, and Sarah was barren, became a father. For he trusted him as faithful who made the promise. ¹¹And so from this one man and he as good as dead, came descendants as numerous as the stars in the sky and as countless as the sand on the seashore.

All these people were still living by faith when they died

¹²All these people were still living by faith when they died. They had not yet received the things promised, they only saw them from a distance and admitted that they were pilgrims on earth.

Abraham has prepared a heavenly city for them

¹³They longed for a better homeland, a heavenly one, therefore God has prepared a city for them.^{F*}

Abraham had faith to offer Isaac as a sacrifice

¹⁴When God tested Abraham by commanding him to offer Isaac as a sacrifice, he was by faith prepared to sacrifice his one and only son, even though God had said to him, “**It is through Isaac that your offspring will be reckoned.**”

¹⁵But Abraham believed that God could raise the dead.

The faith of Isaac, Jacob and Joseph

¹⁶By faith Isaac blessed Jacob and Esau with regard to their future.

¹⁷By faith Jacob when he was dying blessed Joseph’s two sons as he leaned on his staff.

¹⁸By faith Joseph when his end was near prophesied of the exodus of the Israelites from Egypt and gave instructions regarding his bones.

The faith of Moses

¹⁹By faith the parents of Moses hid him for three months after he was born, for they saw that he was no ordinary child. They did not fear Pharaoh’s edict.

²⁰By faith Moses when he had grown up

*13 The New Jerusalem, see Revelation chapter 17.

refused to be known as the son of Pharaoh's daughter. He chose to be mistreated along with the people of God rather than enjoy the pleasures of sin for a short time.

²¹By faith he kept the Passover and the sprinkling of blood so that the destroying angel would not touch the firstborn of Israel.

The faith of the Israelites of old

²²By faith the Israelites passed through the Red Sea as if on dry land.

²³By faith the walls of Jericho fell after the people had marched around the city seven days.

²⁴And by faith the harlot Rahab was not put to death with those who were unbelieving, because she welcomed the spies.

The faith of Gideon, Barak, Samson, Jephthah, David, Samuel and the prophets

²⁵And what more shall I say? I have not time to tell about Gideon, Barak, Samson, Jephthah, David, Samuel and the prophets who through faith conquered kingdoms, administered justice, gained what was promised. ²⁶Shut the mouths of lions, quenched flames, escaped the sword, turned weakness to strength, became powerful in battle and routed armies.

²⁷Women received back their dead, raised to life again. Others were tortured, refusing deliverance that they might gain a better resurrection.

²⁸Some faced jeers and flogging, others were chained, imprisoned, stoned, sawn in two, and put to death by the sword. They went about in skins, poor, persecuted and mistreated.

²⁹The world was unworthy of them. They wandered in deserts and mountains and in caves and dens in the ground.

They will all be made perfect together with us

³⁰These were all commended for their faith, yet none of them received what had been promised. For God had planned something better for them, so that together with us they would be made perfect.

Therefore let us run with endurance the race marked out for us

³¹Therefore, since we are surrounded by such a great cloud of witnesses let us throw off all that hinders and the sin which so easily entangles us and run with endurance the race marked out for us.

Let us fix our eyes on Jesus the pioneer

³²Let us fix our eyes on Jesus, the pioneer and perfecter of our faith who for the sake of the joy set before him endured the cross, scorning its shame, and who has taken his seat at the right hand of the throne of God.

You have not yet resisted evil to the point of shedding your blood

³³Remember him who endured so much from sinful men. ³⁴So do not grow weary and lose heart, for in your struggle against evil you have not yet resisted to the point of shedding your blood.

The Lord disciplines those he loves

³⁵The Lord disciplines those he loves. Therefore endure hardship as a discipline.

³⁶God is treating you as sons. For what son is not disciplined by his father?

³⁷If you are not disciplined then you are not his true sons.

Submit to the discipline of the Father of our spirits

³⁸Moreover our human fathers disciplined us and we respected them. ³⁹How much more then should we submit to the Father of our spirits, and have Eternal Life.

⁴⁰God disciplines us for our good, that we may share in his holiness.

⁴⁰Discipline is painful at the time, but later yields fruit of righteousness and peace.

5

Live in peace with all men

¹Live in peace with all men and be holy. For without holiness no one will see the Lord. ²See to it that no one fails to obtain the grace of God. And that no bitterness arises to cause trouble and defilement.

Avoid sexual immorality and godlessness

³See that no one is sexually immoral, or godless like Esau who for a single meal sold his inheritance as the eldest son. ⁴For as you know, later when he desired to inherit this blessing he was rejected, though he sought it with tears.

The city of the living God lies before you

⁵You do not have before you a mountain burning with fire that can be touched, but you do have before you the heavenly Jerusalem, the city of the living God.

⁶You have before you thousands upon thousands of angels in joyful assembly, and the church of the Firstborn whose names are written in heaven.

⁷You have before you God the judge of all men, and the spirits of righteous men made perfect. ⁸And Jesus, the mediator of a new covenant and his sprinkled blood that speaks more graciously than the blood of Abel.

Show hospitality to strangers for some have entertained angels unawares

⁹Therefore continue to love one another as brothers. And do not neglect hospitality to strangers for by so doing some have entertained angels unawares.

Remember those in prison

¹⁰Remember those in prison as if you were their fellow prisoners. And those who are suffering as if you yourselves were suffering.

Keep the marriage bed undefiled

¹¹Marriage should be honoured by all and the marriage bed kept undefiled. For God will judge fornicators and adulterers.

HEBREWS 5

Do not love money, be content with what you have

¹²Keep your lives free from the love of money and be content with what you have. ¹³For God has promised, “**Never will I leave you. Never will I forsake you.**”

¹⁴So we say with confidence, “*The Lord is my helper, I will not fear. What can man do to me?*”

Imitate the faith of those who preached to you

¹⁵Remember those who preached the word of God to you. Consider the outcome of their way of life and imitate their faith.

Christ the same yesterday, today and forever

¹⁶Jesus Christ is the same yesterday, today, and forever. So do not be led astray by strange teachings.

Offer to God a sacrifice of praise

¹⁷Through Jesus then let us continually offer to God a sacrifice of praise, the fruit of lips that confess his name.

Do good and share with others

¹⁸And remember to do good and to share with others, for with such sacrifices God is pleased.

By grace we are strengthened not by rules on food

¹⁹And also remember that it is by grace we are strengthened. Not by rules regarding food,

which have not benefited those who observe them.

Submit to your church leaders

²⁰Obeys your leaders and submit to their authority, for they are keeping watch over your souls as men who must give an account. Let their work be a joy to them not a burden.

Pray for us also

²¹Pray for us also, in particular that I may come to you soon. ²²Our brother Timothy has been set free and if he arrives soon he will be with me when I come to you.

²³Brethren, I urge you to bear with my letter of exhortation.

Greetings

²⁴Greet all your leaders and all the saints. Those from Italy send you their greetings.

Closing blessing

²⁵May the God of peace who brought back from the dead our Lord Jesus bless you with everything good for doing his will.

²⁶May he work in us what is pleasing to him, through Jesus Christ to whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen.

²⁷Grace be with you all.

1 JOHN

This letter of the apostle John, like all of his writings, maintains a high spiritual tone and emphasises the great importance of love. It was written mainly to combat the false doctrine of Gnosticism which was spreading throughout the Roman empire and being taught to the saints, a term by which the early church members were known.

Gnosticism originated as an eastern religion. It taught that the human spirit was a pure creation of God, but that human flesh was a creation of Satan, and entirely evil. Therefore it did not matter how much we sinned with the flesh as it could not be contaminated further. It also taught that a person could only be saved through secret knowledge and by afflicting the flesh.

Like most of the popular false religions the attractive part was that it permitted sexual freedom, for since under Gnosticism the flesh was inherently evil, sins of the flesh did not really count and were inevitable.

Accepting Gnostic doctrine presented a difficult problem for believing Christians, for if flesh was a creation of Satan, Jesus Christ the Son of God could not have come in the flesh. Strange theories therefore had to be devised to get around this problem. One popular theory was that Jesus had only an illusory body.

John was an elderly man when he wrote this letter and evidently a very saintly person. He was much loved and respected by the church at Ephesus which had been his home since the fall of Jerusalem in 70 AD. He appears to have ministered to the seven churches in the area. Later during a period of severe persecution he was banished by the Roman authorities to the Island of Patmos where he received and wrote the book of Revelation.

AUTHOR The apostle John.

There is no fear in love. Perfect love drives out fear. 1 John 3:19.

CONTENTS

Chapter

John's testimony of Jesus Christ	1	If our conscience is at rest we receive from God	2
God is light	1	These are God's commandments	2
If we walk in the light the blood of Jesus purifies us .	1	To believe in Jesus and to love one another	2
We deceive ourselves if we claim not to have sinned ..	1	Test the spirits	3
Jesus the atoning sacrifice for sins	1	Many false prophets in the world	3
If we obey his commandments we will know him	1	Spirits from God proclaim Jesus is come in the flesh ..	3
Anyone who hates his brother walks in darkness	1	Holy Spirit greater than the spirits of the world	3
Whoever loves his brother lives in light	1	How to recognise spirits of falsehood	3
Do not love the world and its lusts	1	Let us love one another	3
We believe it is the last hour	1	How God showed his love for us	3
For antichrists have gone out from us	1	If we love not our brother we cannot love God	3
Whoever denies Jesus the Christ is an antichrist	1	When we love, God lives in us through his Spirit	3
Continue in the anointing you have received	1	God is love	3
We are children of God	2	Perfect love drives out fear	3
Anyone who continues to sin has not known Jesus ..	2	He who has faith in Jesus overcomes the world	3
The Son of God came to destroy the devil's work	2	God says, 'He who has the Son has Eternal Life'	3
Love one another	2	Whatever we ask according to God's will we obtain ..	3
Anyone who hates his brother is a murderer	2	Pray for a brother who commits a sin not unto Death ..	3
Be not surprised that the world hates you	2	Anyone who does not sin is protected from the devil ..	3
We ought to lay down our lives for our brothers	2	Whole world under control of the evil one	3
Do not love with words only but with actions	2		

Bold The Lord or an angel speaking.

1

John's testimony of Jesus Christ

¹He who was from the beginning, whom we have heard and seen and touched, who was

with the Father and who appeared to us, we proclaim to you, even the Word of Eternal Life.

1 JOHN 2

²That you too may have fellowship with the Father, and with his son Jesus Christ.

God is light

³We write this to make our joy complete. ⁴This is the message we proclaim to you from him, **“God is light, and in him there is no darkness at all.”**

If we walk in the light the blood of Jesus purifies us from all sin

⁵If we claim to have fellowship with him yet still walk in the darkness of sin, we lie and do not live by the truth. ⁶But if we walk in the light, the blood of Jesus purifies us from all sin.

We deceive ourselves if we claim to have never sinned

⁷If we claim to have never sinned, we deceive ourselves and the truth is not in us. We make him out to be a liar and his word has no place in our lives.

⁸But if we confess our sins he will forgive us and purify us from all unrighteousness.

Jesus is the atoning sacrifice for sins

⁹My dear children,^{F*} I write this to you so that you will not sin. ¹⁰But if anybody does sin we have one who speaks to the Father in our defence, Jesus Christ the Righteous One who is the atoning sacrifice for the sins of the whole world.

If we obey his commandments we will know him

¹¹By this we can be sure we know him; if we obey his commandments. ¹²For he who says “I know him” but does not obey his commandments, is a liar and the truth is not in him. ¹³But whoever obeys his word, God’s love is perfected in him. He should walk as Jesus did.

Anyone who hates his brother walks around in darkness

¹⁴Anyone who claims to be in the light but hates a brother, walks around in darkness. He does not know the way to go for darkness blinds him.

Whoever loves his brother lives in the light

¹⁵But whoever loves a brother lives in the light and will not stumble.

Do not love the world and its lusts

¹⁶Do not love the world or anything in the world. If anyone loves the world the love of the Father is not in him.

¹⁷For everything in the world, the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes and the foolish pride of life comes not from the Father but from the world.

¹⁸The world and its lusts will pass away, but the man who does the will of God has Eternal Life.

We believe it is the last hour for antichrists have gone out from us

¹⁹Dear children, this is the final hour,^{F*} and as

^{*9} John most likely referred to the saints as his children because he was now an elderly apostle, possibly over 90.

^{*19} In the early years of the church the return of Jesus was thought to be imminent. See note on 1 Corinthians 3:18.

you have heard the Antichrist^{F*} is coming.

²⁰We believe it to be the last hour for even now many antichrists have come. ²¹They went out from us but did not really belong to us or they would have remained with us. ^{F*}

²²But you have been anointed^{F*} by the Holy One and know the truth. No lie comes from the truth.

Whoever denies Jesus is the Christ is an antichrist

²³Who is a liar? Whoever denies that Jesus is the Christ. ²⁴Such a person is an antichrist for he denies both the Father and the Son. No one who denies the Son has the Father.

Continue in the anointing you have received

²⁵I am writing these things to you about those who are trying to lead you astray.^{F*}

²⁶Let that which was taught to you from the beginning abide in you. If it does, you will abide in the Son and in the Father and inherit what he has promised us, even Eternal Life.

²⁷If you continue in the anointing you have received, you will not need that anyone teach you, for his anointing teaches you all things and is true.

²⁸Therefore little children, abide in the Son so that when he comes we may not be ashamed.

2

We are children of God

¹O what great love the Father has bestowed upon us, that we should be called the children of God.

²Beloved, we are indeed children of God. What this means hereafter is not yet fully made known, but we do know that when he comes we shall be like him and shall see him as he is.

Anyone who continues to sin has not truly known Jesus

³Anyone who has this hope in him purifies himself just as Jesus is pure, and ceases to sin. ⁴Anyone who continues to sin has not truly known him, for no person born of God will continue to sin. For God’s nature lives within him. He cannot go on sinning.

⁵This is how we know who are the children of God and who are the children of the devil. Anyone who sins, or does not love his brother is not a child of God.

⁶So dear children let no one lead you astray. He who does what is right is righteous, and he who does what is sinful is of the devil.

^{*19} The Antichrist is a great evil world leader to arise in the last days, also known as the Beast, or Gog. He will have alongside of him a false prophet who will perform impressive miracles (see Revelation, chapters 9 and 10).

^{*21} John is referring to men who formerly belonged to the church but strayed from the teachings of Christ and became false teachers.

^{*22} Anointing is a term for receiving the Holy Spirit.

^{*25} The false teaching of Gnosticism was beginning to trouble the church at this time. It taught that the human spirit was a pure creation of God but that human flesh was a creation of Satan and therefore entirely evil. Therefore it did not matter how much we sinned with the flesh as it could not be contaminated further (see also introduction to this letter).

The Son of God came to destroy the devil's work

⁷For the devil was a sinner from the beginning. But the Son of God came to destroy the work of the devil.

Love one another

⁸The message you heard from the beginning was to love one another. Anyone who does not love remains in Death.^{F*}

Anyone who hates his brother is a murderer

⁹Anyone who hates his brother is a murderer, and you know that no murderer has Eternal Life abiding in him. ¹⁰Do not be like Cain who belonged to the evil one and murdered his brother Abel. Why? Because his own actions were evil and those of his brother righteous.

Be not surprised that the world hates you

¹¹So do not be surprised brethren that the world hates you.

We ought to lay down our lives for our brothers

¹²This is how we know what love is: Jesus Christ laid down his life for us. Therefore we ought to lay down our lives for our brothers.

Let us love not with words only but with actions

¹³If anyone has enough of the world's goods and sees his brother in need yet closes his heart to him, can the love of God be in him?

¹⁴Dear children, let us love not with words only, but with actions.

If our conscience is at rest we receive from God anything we ask

¹⁵This is how we know that we belong to the truth: when our conscience is at rest in the presence of God.

¹⁶If our conscience does not condemn us, we are confident before God and receive from him anything we ask.^{F*} For we obey his commandments and do what pleases him.

These are his commandments – to believe in Jesus and to love one another

¹⁷And these are God's commandments; to believe in the name of his son Jesus Christ and to love one another.

¹⁸Those who obey these commandments live in him and he in them through the Holy Spirit he gave us. ²¹And his commandments are not burdensome.

3

Test the spirits for many false prophets are in the world

¹Beloved, do not believe every spirit but test the spirits to see if they are of God. For many false prophets are in the world.

A spirit from God will proclaim that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh

²Every spirit that proclaims that Jesus Christ

has come in the flesh, is from God.^{F*} But a spirit that will not acknowledge that Jesus has come in the flesh is not of God. ³Rather it is the spirit of antichrist, which you have heard is coming and even now is already in the world.

The Holy Spirit in you is greater than the spirits of the world

⁴But you dear children are of God and have overcome such spirits. For the Holy Spirit who is in you is greater than the spirits of the world.

How to recognise spirits of falsehood

⁵Because these spirits are of the world, what they speak is of the world and the world listens to them.

⁶But we are of God. Whoever knows God listens to us, and whoever is not of God does not listen to us.

⁷This is how we recognise the Spirit of truth and the spirit of error.

Let us love one another

⁸Beloved, let us love one another, for love is of God. Whoever loves is born of God and knows him.

⁹Whoever does not love, does not know God, for God is love.

How God showed his love for us

¹⁰This is how God showed his love for us: he sent his only begotten Son into the world, that we might live through him.

¹¹In this is love, not that we loved God, but that he loved us, and sent his Son as an atoning sacrifice for our sins.

If we love not our brother we cannot love God

¹²Beloved, since God so loved us we should also love one another. ¹³For whoever does not loves his brother whom he has seen, cannot love God whom he has not seen. And no man has seen God.^{F*}

When we love one another God lives in us through his Spirit

¹⁴If we love one another, God lives in us and we live in him, for he has given us his Spirit.

¹⁵We testify that the Father has sent his Son to be the Saviour of the world. ¹⁶God abides in those who acknowledge that Jesus is the Son of God, and they abide in God.

God is love

¹⁷God is love, and they who abide in love abide in God.

¹⁸In this way love is made perfect among us, so that we will have confidence on the day of judgement. For in this world we are like him.

Perfect love drives out fear

¹⁹There is no fear in love. Perfect love drives out fear.

²⁰For fear has to do with punishment, therefore

*8 ie Living in such a way as to inherit the Second Death, which is to be cut off forever from the presence of God (see Revelation 16:19 and note).

*16 1 John 3:26 adds 'according to his will.'

*2 Gnosticism taught that Jesus as Son of God could not have come in the flesh, for all flesh is evil.

*13 See note in the gospel of John, 1:8, for an explanation of this apparently contradictory statement.

1 JOHN 3

whoever fears is not perfect in love.

²¹We love because he first loved us.

He who has faith in Jesus overcomes the world

²²This is the victory that overcomes the world, even our faith. He who has faith that Jesus is the Son of God, overcomes the world. ²³He is the one who came by water and blood.^{F*}

God says, "He who has the Son has Eternal Life"

²⁴We accept man's testimony but God's testimony is greater. Here is the testimony God has given us. ²⁵**"Eternal Life is in his Son. Whoever has the Son has Eternal Life. Whoever has not the Son of God does not have Eternal Life."**

Whatever we ask according to God's will we obtain

²⁶This is the confidence we have in approaching God: if we ask anything according to his will, we know we have obtained it.

Pray for a brother who commits a sin that does not lead to Death

²⁷If you see your brother commit a sin you should pray for him. And God will still grant him Eternal Life.

²⁸I refer to those whose sin is not unto Death for there is a sin that leads to Spiritual Death.^{F*} I do not say that you should pray about that.

²⁹All wrongdoing is sin but there is sin that does not lead to Death.

Anyone born of God who does not sin is protected from the devil

³⁰Anyone born of God and who does not sin is protected. The devil cannot harm him.

The whole world under the control of the evil one

³¹We are children of God, but the whole world is under the control of the evil one.

³²Dear children, keep yourselves from idols.

*23 Elements of the flesh. John may be countering the false teaching of Gnosticism,

*28 John is probably referring to the sin of blaspheming against the Holy Spirit for which Jesus said there was no forgiveness (see Matt-Mark-Luke 13:30-31). Spiritual Death (or the Second Death) is the opposite of Eternal Life and means to be cut off forever from the presence of God (see note on Revelation 16:19).

2 JOHN

This short personal letter by John to a prominent but unnamed Christian woman and her children, and also the following letter, 3 John are both of a size that could conveniently be written on a single sheet of papyrus.

The two letters are thought to be typical of much of the personal correspondence of the early apostles and may have been preserved from oblivion only by becoming attached to 1 John early in church history.

In this letter John warns the unnamed woman, who probably allowed her house to be used for church meetings, to stay with the original Christian teachings she received in the beginning and not allow false teachers into her home.

AUTHOR The apostle John.

I am not writing you a new commandment but one we have had from the beginning.
That is, that we love one another. 2 John 1:4.

CONTENTS

	Chapter
John's greeting	1
Great joy that some of your children walk in truth	1
We must obey his commands as in the beginning ...	1
Many deceivers have gone forth into the world	1

1

John's greeting

¹The Elder,^{F*} to the elect lady and her children whom I love in the truth, not only I but all who know the truth.

²Grace, mercy and peace from God the Father and from Jesus Christ in truth and love.

Great joy that some of your children walk in truth

³It has given me great joy to find some of your children walking in the truth, just as the Father commanded us.

We must obey his commandments as received in the beginning

⁴And now dear lady, I am not writing you a new commandment but one we have had from the beginning. That is, that we love one another.

⁵And this is love, that we obey his commandments as we heard them in the beginning.

For many deceivers have gone forth into the world

⁶For many deceivers have gone forth into the world who do not proclaim that Jesus Christ

has come in the flesh. Such men are antichrists.

⁷Therefore be careful that you do not lose that which you have worked for, but win the full reward.

Forbid from your house any man who does not teach the doctrine of Christ

⁸Anyone who does not remain in the doctrine of Christ but goes beyond, has not the Father and the Son. ⁹Therefore if any man comes to you teaching a different doctrine do not take him into your house.

¹⁰For whoever welcomes such a man shares in his wicked work.

I hope to visit you soon and speak with you face to face

¹¹I have much to say to you but would rather not use paper and ink. Instead I hope to visit you soon and speak with you face to face that our joy may be complete.

John's closing greeting

¹²The children of your elect sister send their greetings.

*1 The apostle John.

3 JOHN

This personal letter of John to a faithful church member named Gaius is similar to that of the previous letter 2 John and was probably written at the same time. It provides an interesting glimpse into the inner problems of the early church, in this case the lack of hospitality of a church leader named Diotrephes.

The main purpose of the letter appears to have been to introduce and recommend Demetrius, a travelling missionary or believer. It was customary for such Christian travellers to stay with church members. Demetrius would probably have carried this letter to Gaius himself.

AUTHOR The apostle John.

Anyone who does what is good is of God, but anyone who does what is evil does not know God. 3 John 1:11.

CONTENTS

Chapter

John's greeting and blessing to Gaius	1	Imitate what is good	1
No greater joy than to hear my children walk in truth ...	1	Demetrius is well spoken of by all	1
The brethren have testified of your hospitality	1	I hope to see you soon and speak face to face	1
I have written to the church	1	Closing greetings	1
Diotrephes does not acknowledge our authority	1		

1

John's greeting and blessing to Gaius

¹The Elder, to my beloved Gaius whom I love in the truth.

²Beloved, I pray that you may enjoy good health and that all may go well with you. I know it is well with your spirit.

No greater joy than to hear that my children walk in the truth

³It gave me great joy to have some brethren come and tell how you continue to walk in the truth. ⁴I have no greater joy than to hear that my children are walking in the truth.

The brethren have testified of your hospitality

⁵Beloved, it is a loyal thing you do when you render hospitality to the brethren, even though they are strangers to you. They have testified of your love before the church.

⁶You do well to send them on their way in a manner worthy of God, for in his name they go out, receiving no help from unbelievers. ⁷We ought to support such men that we may work together for the truth.

I have written to the church but Diotrephes acknowledges not our authority

⁸I have written to the church but Diotrephes,

who loves to be first does not acknowledge our authority.

⁹So if I come I will bring up what he is doing and his maligning words about us, and how, not being content with that, he refuses to welcome the brethren.^{F*} ¹⁰He even prevents those who wish to do so and expels them from the church.

Beloved, imitate what is good

¹¹Beloved, do not imitate what is evil but what is good. Anyone who does what is good is of God, but anyone who does what is evil does not know God.

Demetrius is well spoken of by all

¹²Demetrius is well spoken of by all, and by Truth itself. I also testify of him and you know that my testimony is true.

I hope to see you soon and speak face to face

¹³I have much to say to you but would rather not write with pen and ink. I hope to see you soon and we will speak face to face.

John's closing blessing and greeting

¹⁴Peace to you. The friends here send their greetings. Greet the friends there by name.

*9 Traveling Christian preachers, such as Demetrius (see verse 12).

REVELATION

Reading the book of Revelation can be a frustrating experience to the western mind, which is used to having facts presented literally and logically instead of symbolically. But we should bear in mind that Revelation is an eastern book, originally revealed to and written for eastern peoples who as a rule delight in symbolic and picturesque writing. The book of Revelation therefore uses much symbolism to depict eternal truths and to reveal literal events that lie in the future.

The book is similar in many ways to the Old Testament book of Daniel which also employs symbolism to depict future real events. This kind of religious writing is called apocalyptic and the book of Revelation is named *'The Apocalypse of St John'* in some older translations of the Bible.

Having accepted that this book contains much symbolism we should not assume that the real future events described in the book are symbolic also, even if some may sound extreme. We must remember that they still lie in the future. Until recent years it was difficult to imagine how people might be prevented from buying or selling without a special name or number (Revelation 10:7-8), or how an image could be made to speak (Revelation 10:5-6) whereas nowadays the banking facilities and video technology are already in place. Bible prophecies have in the past been fulfilled to the letter.

The symbolic parts of Revelation are generally so bizarre as to leave no doubt that symbolism is intended, and the symbols are mostly explained in the book. The non-symbolic, real events described are those that will lead up to and follow the second coming of Jesus Christ.

Along with the rest of the early church in his day, John appears to have believed that the second coming was imminent, which is understandable for even Jesus admitted he did not know the day (Matt-Mark-Luke 28:41). Therefore this belief is reflected in John's writing which can create the impression that the prophecies were to be fulfilled in his day. Because of this, and also because the first three verses introducing the book (which are unlikely to have been written by John) state that the prophetic events described *'must soon take place'* some scholars take the view that the events described are now in the past, or entirely symbolic. However in taking such a view they are driven to very unconvincing historic explanations. For example no ocean catastrophe in the past 2000 years has destroyed a third of the fish and ships of the sea (Revelation 6:10).

Jesus himself also prophesied of the worldwide terrors to foreshadow his second coming, especially ocean disturbances. In Matt-Mark-Luke 28:32 he said, *"Nations shall be in great distress at the roaring and great waves of the sea. People will faint with terror, fearful of what is coming on the earth, for the powers of the heavens will be shaken."* Old Testament prophets have also predicted similar things (see introduction to Joel).

The majority view of Christians is that the cataclysmic events described in the book of Revelation still lie in the future and will commence approx seven years before the return of Jesus Christ (see Revelation 7:13-23 and 9:7, also Daniel 5:24-27).

Revelation commences with separate messages from Jesus to each of the seven churches which surrounded and included the city of Ephesus. This is the same region where John lived and ministered during the years prior to his exile on the island of Patmos.

John is then caught up into heaven and relates in thrilling detail his visions of the splendour of heaven and his marvellous visions of the future. Nor was John merely a passive watcher, he was totally involved. His sentences begin with "I saw..., I heard..., I wept..., I was given..., I ate..., He carried me..., etc."

John is first shown an overview of the events leading up to the second coming of Jesus Christ (the first six seals) and then sees the same events again in greater detail. He is then shown the thousand year Millennium and the final winding up scenes including the great day of judgement.

REVELATION

Finally John sees and attempts to describe the massive and beautiful crystalline city the New Jerusalem (which is to be our eventual heaven) as it descends to the new earth. This vast city is 2200 kms wide and 2200 kms long and covers such a huge area that more than 3000 cities the size of London could be encompassed within its walls.

AUTHOR The apostle John.

Behold, he will come in the clouds and every eye will see him, even those who pierced him, and the peoples and nations of the earth will wail because of him. Even so shall it be. Amen. Revelation 1:8.

CONTENTS

Chapter

Introduction

A revelation from God to Jesus of things to come1
Jesus made it known to John by sending his angel ..1

John's testimony

John greets the seven churches in province of Asia .1
Jesus will come in the clouds1
Every eye shall see him1
John banished to the island of Patmos1
John in the Spirit on the Lord's Day1
John hears a voice like a trumpet1
Sees a glorious angel1
The angel standing among seven lampstands1
Angel speaks on behalf of Jesus1
Meaning of the seven lampstands and stars1

To the Ephesian church

You are enduring patiently2
But you have forsaken the love you had at first2
Repent and do the works you did at first2
In your favour you hate the deeds of the Nicolaitans ...2
Whoever overcomes will eat from the Tree of Life2

To the Smyrna church

I know your poverty yet you are rich2
You are about to suffer but be faithful2

To the Pergamum church

You live where Satan has his throne, yet remain true .2
Some hold to teachings of Balaam and Nicolaitans ..2
The Hidden Manna and the White Stone2

To the Thyatiran church

You are now doing more than you did at first2
Yet you tolerate the immoral woman Jezebel2
She will suffer intensely for she will not repent2
And all who have committed adultery with her2
Satan's so-called deep secrets2
He who does my will shall be as the Morning Star2

To the Sardis church

Awaken and repent for you are dead2
He who overcomes I will not blot out of Book of Life ...2

To the Philadelphian church

You have kept my word and not denied my name2
I will keep you safe from the world's hour of trial2
The New Jerusalem and the New Name2

To the Laodicean church

You are lukewarm, I will spew you out of my mouth2
You are not rich but poor, blind and naked2
I stand at the door and knock2
The faithful will sit with me on my throne2

John's vision

John taken up into heaven in spirit, sees God3
Twenty-four elders seated on thrones3
The seven spirits of God3
God's throne surrounded by a sea of crystal glass ...3
The four cherubim3
A scroll sealed with seven seals3
Lion of Judah worthy to open the scroll3
Jesus depicted as a slain lamb takes the scroll3
The elders bow before the Lamb and sing3
Myriads of angels join in the singing3
All of creation sing3

The First Seal

Rider on white horse – sent to conquer the earth4

The Second Seal

Rider on red horse – men to slay one another4

The Third Seal

Rider on black horse – famines on earth4

The Fourth Seal

Rider on green horse – power to kill fourth of earth4

The Fifth Seal

Saints slain for testifying word of God4

The Sixth Seal

Great earthquake darkens the sun4
Moon turns blood red4
Stars fall from the sky4
Sky recedes and mountains and islands move4
The Father and Son are seen4
Unbelievers on earth try to hide4
Servants of God marked with a seal5
Destroying angels given power to harm the earth5
12,000 from each tribe of Israel sealed – 144,000 ...5
John sees the saints who die in the Great Tribulation .5
The Lamb at the throne to be their shepherd5

The Seventh Seal

Plagues of the seven trumpets6
Fire from the altar hurled to earth6

The First Trumpet

Hail of fire falls upon the earth6
A third of the trees and all green vegetation burned .6

The Second Trumpet

A blazing mountain falls into the sea6
A third of the fish and ships destroyed6

The Third Trumpet

A blazing star falls on a third of the rivers6
A third of the rivers poisoned6

The Fourth Trumpet

Light on earth darkened by a third 6
 Woe to the inhabitants of the earth 6
 Because of last three trumpet blasts 6

The Fifth Trumpet

Locust-like creatures sting and torment men 6
 Those with the seal of God on foreheads not stung 6
 The stinging creatures described 6

The Sixth Trumpet

A third of mankind killed by an army of 200,000,000 ... 6
 Survivors still do not repent of their sins 6
 An angel descends from heaven holding a scroll 7
 Seven thunders prophesy 7
 John not permitted to write the prophecy 7
 No more delay 7
 John told to eat the scroll 7
 Prophecies of scroll bitter to John's stomach 7
 Jerusalem to be trampled three and a half years 7
 Two prophets to witness from Jerusalem 7
 The two prophets given great power 7
 The Beast to eventually kill the two prophets 7
 All nations will gaze on their dead bodies and rejoice . 7
 After three and a half days they will return to life 7
 They will ascend into heaven 7
 A severe earthquake at the same hour 7

The Seventh Trumpet

World to become kingdom of God and his Christ 8
 Time has come to reward the saints 8
 The corrupters of the earth to be destroyed 8
 An Ark seen in the heavenly temple 8
 On earth another earthquake and great hail 8
 Sign of a woman about to give birth 8
 Satan depicted as a great red dragon 8
 The male child caught up to God and the throne 8
 The church to be cared for during the final 3½ years .. 8
 Michael and his angels hurl Satan from the heavens .. 8
 Satan defeated by blood of the Lamb and martyrs ... 8
 Woe to the earth 8
 Satan is filled with fury and his time is short 8
 Church on earth escapes into the wilderness 8
 Satan tries to prevent church's escape by a flood 8
 Satan wages war against all who obey God 8
 The Beast (the Antichrist) arises from the sea 9
 An apparently fatal head wound healed 9
 Whole world worships Satan by following the Beast ... 9
 Beast to exercise authority for 3½ years 9
 Blasphemes God, given power over nations 9
 All who are not in Book of Life worship the Beast ... 9
 Many saints destined to be captured or killed 9
 A second beast rises up out of the earth 10
 Second beast the False Prophet 10
 False Prophet performs great miracles 10
 Image set up in honour of the Beast 10
 Image given power of speech 10
 All who refuse to worship image are put to death ... 10
 No one able to buy or sell without Beast's mark 10
 The name of the Beast adds up to 666 10
 The 144,000 sing a new song before the throne 11
 The 144,000 chaste and blameless men 11
 First fruits to God 11
 The hour of God's judgement has come 11
 The great Babylon is fallen 11
 Whoever worships the Beast will drink God's fury .. 11
 They will have no peace day or night 11
 Saints must endure and obey commandments 11
 Blessed are the dead who die in the Lord 11

Time to reap the harvest of the earth 11
 The grapes of God's wrath are gathered 11
 Grapes to be trampled in the winepress 11
 Blood flows high as a horse's bridle 11
 Seven last plagues 12
 John sees those who died resisting the Beast 12
 Standing on a sea of fiery glass 12
 They held harps and sang the song of Moses 12
 Seven angels with plagues come out of temple 12

The First Plague

Sores break out on those who have mark of Beast 12

The Second Plague

The sea becomes like blood 12
 Everything living in the sea dies 12

The Third Plague

The rivers and springs of water become blood 12

The Fourth Plague

Sun becomes scorching hot 12

The Fifth Plague

Kingdom of the Beast plunged into darkness 12

The Sixth Plague

Spirits of demons go out to gather the kings 12
 For great battle at Armageddon 12

The Seventh Plague

A tremendous earthquake collapses all cities 12
 Whole face of the earth changes 12
 Giant hail falls 12
 John carried away and shown the Great Harlot 13
 Sees a richly dressed woman on a scarlet beast ... 13
 The woman drunk with blood of martyred saints 13
 Mystery of the woman and of the Beast 13
 The Beast once lived, and now is dead 13
 But he will come again out of the Pit 13
 Beast's heads represent seven hills and kings 13
 Horns of the Beast are ten future kings 13
 The kings will give their power to the Beast 13
 The Beast and kings will wage war against Lamb .. 13
 The waters represent many nations 13
 The ten kings and Beast will bring the Harlot to ruin . 13
 Harlot is the great city that rules over kings 13
 The great Babylon has fallen 14
 Come out of her my people 14
 Her sins are piled up to heaven 14
 Babylon destroyed by plagues, famine, and fire 14
 The rulers of the earth will weep and mourn 14
 Merchants of the earth shall weep and mourn 14
 Seamen will weep and mourn 14
 The saints, apostles, and prophets will rejoice 14
 Great Babylon to be thrown down with violence 14
 No more will be heard the sound of music 14
 Or workman, or bride and groom 14
 The great Babylon led astray the nations 14
 Shed the blood of the saints and prophets 14
 Hallelujah sounded in heaven by great multitude ... 15
 Wedding of the Lamb 15
 Blessed are those invited to the wedding supper ... 15
 John forbidden to worship angel of the Lord 15
 Jesus returns to earth riding a white horse 15
 Jesus clothed in a blood red robe 15
 Armies of heaven follow Jesus on white horses 15
 Birds called to the great supper 15
 To eat flesh of those who fall at Armageddon 15
 Kings of the earth gather their armies 15
 Beast and False Prophet are captured 15

REVELATION 1

Cast alive into the Lake of Fire	15
Kings and their armies slain	15
Birds gorge on their flesh	15
Satan bound in the Pit for a thousand years	15
The faithful spirits are resurrected	16
They reign with Christ on earth a thousand years ...	16
Rest of the dead not yet resurrected	16
Until thousand years are ended	16
Satan then to be released from prison	16
To again deceive the nations	16
Nations again gather to attack the Holy City	16
Fire comes down from heaven and devours them	16
The final resurrection and day of judgement	16
The Book of Life	16
The Second Death	16
New heavens and a new earth	17
God to dwell on earth among men	17
Every tear to be wiped from their eyes	17
All things to be made new	17
Those who will inherit the Second Death	17
The New Jerusalem descends from heaven	17

Like a brilliant jewel clear as golden crystal	17
High crystalline walls with twelve pearl gates	17
Length and breadth of the city 12,000 stadia	17
City and streets like transparent gold	17
Glory of God and the Lamb its light	17
Only those written in Book of Life will enter city	17
The river of the Water of Life	17
The Tree of Life	17
All in the city will see the face of God	17
These words are trustworthy and true	18
John forbidden to worship the angel	18
Time draws near	18
Jesus coming soon	18
I will repay everyone according to their works	18
Blessed are they who keep the commandments	18
They will enter the New Jerusalem	18
Those who now sin to live outside the city	18
Jesus the bright Morning Star	18
Come and take free gift of Water of Life	18
Do not add or take away from this book	18
Jesus to come soon	18

Bold The Lord or an angel speaking.

1

INTRODUCTION

A revelation from God to Jesus of things to come

¹The revelation which God gave Jesus Christ to show his servants what must soon take place.^{F*}

Jesus made it known to John by sending his angel

²Jesus made it known by sending his angel to his servant John, who has testified of everything he saw and heard.

³Blessed is he who reads or hears the words of this prophecy and takes to heart what is written, for the time draws near.

JOHN'S TESTIMONY

John greets the seven churches in province of Asia

⁴John, to the seven churches in the province of Asia.^{F*} Grace and peace to you from he who is, who was, and who is to come.^{F*}

*1 The bulk of this book of Revelation pertains to events preceding the second coming of Jesus Christ, which in the early days of the Church was thought to soon take place (see note on 1 Corinthians 3:18 and John 28:41). The events of the first three chapters, including the messages to the seven churches that John ministered to, belong to John's day, but the events from chapter four onward, when the sixth seal is opened are yet to occur.

*4 The Roman province of Asia, especially the city of Ephesus in this province which had been John's home since the fall of Jerusalem in 70 AD. He is believed to have ministered to the seven churches mentioned. During a recent period of severe persecution he was exiled by the Roman authorities to a penal colony on the Island of Patmos where he received visions and wrote this book.

*4 John is here referring to the Father (see following verse where Jesus is mentioned separately) and by using the words 'who is to come' it appears that both the Father and the Son are to come at the return of Jesus Christ. This view is also supported by Revelation 4:16, 1 Peter 1:24, Titus 1:25, 1 Thessalonians 2:11, Matt-Mark-Luke 32:7 and Psalms 54:5. However the Father will not remain on earth to dwell with mankind as will Jesus (Revelation 15:27-29, 16:4-6) until after the thousand year Millennium when the New Jerusalem descends from heaven upon the new earth (Revelation chapter 17).

⁵Also from the seven Spirits before his throne, and from Jesus Christ who is the faithful witness, the firstborn from the dead and ruler of the kings of the earth. ⁶Who loves us and has freed us from our sins by his blood, and has made us kings and priests unto God his Father.

⁷To him be glory and power for ever and ever. Amen.

Jesus will come in the clouds and every eye shall see him

⁸Behold, he will come in the clouds and every eye shall see him, even those who pierced him, and the peoples and nations of the earth will wail because of him. Even so shall it be. Amen.

⁹**"I am the Alpha and the Omega^{F*} says the Lord God who is, who was, and who is to come, the Almighty."**

John banished to the island of Patmos

¹⁰John your brother, who shares with you in the suffering, the patient endurance, and the kingdom that is ours in Jesus, was on the island of Patmos^{F*} for proclaiming the word of God and testifying of Jesus.

John in the Spirit on the Lord's Day and hears a voice like a trumpet

¹¹I was in the Spirit on the Lord's Day^{F*} when I heard behind me a loud voice like a trumpet

*9 Alpha and Omega are the first and last letters of the Greek alphabet.

*10 Patmos is a small, windswept island off the coast of Ephesus. John had been banished there by Roman authorities to prevent him from preaching. He is said to have lived in a cave.

*11 Sunday the day on which Jesus rose from the dead. Being 'in the Spirit' is a state of heightened spiritual consciousness brought about by the influence of the Holy Spirit.

saying, “Write what you see and send it to the seven churches, to Ephesus, Smyrna, Pergamum, Thyatira, Sardis, Philadelphia, and Laodicea.” F*

John sees a glorious angel standing among seven lampstands and holding seven stars

¹²I turned to see the voice that was speaking to me and saw seven golden lampstands. In the midst of the lampstands stood an angel, in appearance like the Son of Man.F* He was clothed in a long robe with a golden girdle around his chest.

¹³His hair was white as snow, like pure wool and his eyes blazed like fire. His feet were as bronze that glows in a furnace and his voice was like the sound of rushing waters.

¹⁴In his right hand he held seven stars, and from his mouth came a sharp two-edged sword.F*

¹⁵His face was like the sun shining in full brilliance.

The angel speaks on behalf of Jesus

¹⁶When I saw him I fell at his feet as if dead. He laid his right hand upon me and spoke saying, “Fear not, I am the First and the Last. I am the Living One. I was dead, and behold I am alive for ever more.F* ¹⁷I hold the keys of the grave and Hades.” F*

¹⁸“Now write what you see, what is and what will take place later.”

The meaning of the seven lampstands and stars

¹⁹“The meaning of the seven stars you saw in my right hand and the seven golden lampstands is this. The stars represent the leaders of the seven churches and the lampstands represent the churches.”

2

**TO THE EPHESIAN CHURCH
You are enduring patiently but have forsaken the love you had at first**

¹“To the leader of the church in Ephesus write, ‘The words of him who holds the seven stars in his right hand and walks among the seven golden lampstands:’

²“I know your works, your toil and endurance, and how you refuse to tolerate the wicked. ³And how you tested those who claimed to be apostles but were not and found them false. ⁴You are enduring patiently for my name and have not grown

*11 John would have been familiar with the seven churches referred to which are all within a 150 km radius of Ephesus. There were of course numerous other churches throughout the Roman empire.

*12 Not Jesus himself but his angel-messenger or Spirit (see Revelation 2:14 and 11:17). Also John was familiar with the resurrected Jesus and would have almost certainly identified him had he come in person.

*14 A two-edged sword is symbolic of the power of the word of God (Hebrews 2:9).

*16 Throughout the Bible, whenever an angel or the Holy Spirit brings a message from God, they almost always speak as if the Father or the Son were speaking in person.

*17 Hades is the Greek term for the spirit world of the dead. See also Revelation 16:14.

wear. Yet I hold this against you; you have forsaken the love you had at first.”

Repent and do the works you did at first

⁵“Consider the height from which you have fallen. Repent and do the works you did at first. ⁶If you do not repent I will remove your lampstand from its place.”

In your favour you hate the practices of the Nicolaitans

⁷“Yet you have this in your favour; you hate the practices of the NicolaitansF* which I also hate.”

Whoever overcomes will eat from the Tree of Life in the Paradise of God

⁸“He who has an ear let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches. To him who overcomes I will give the right to eat from the Tree of Life in the Paradise of God.”



Patmos, a small crescent shaped island to which John was exiled for about 18 months.

TO THE SMYRNA CHURCH

I know your poverty yet you are rich

⁹“To the leader of the church in Smyrna write, ‘The words of him who is the First and the Last, who died and came to life again:’

¹⁰“I know your afflictions and your poverty. Yet you are rich. ¹¹I know the lies of those who claim to be Jews and are not, but are a synagogue of Satan.”

You are about to suffer, but be faithful

¹²“Be not afraid of what you are about to suffer. The devil will cast some of you in prison, that you may be tested, and you will suffer persecution for ten days. ¹³Be faithful even to the point of deathF* and I will give you the crown of Eternal Life.” F*

*7 A sect within the church which taught that there was sufficient leeway in their spiritual freedom for them to practice sexual immorality. They appear to have taught: ‘As long as you believe in Christ you can do what you like.’

*13 Polycarp the bishop of Smyrna was in fact eventually put to death.

*13 Eternal Life is to live forever in the presence of God the Father in the glorious New Jerusalem (Revelation chapters 17 and 18). Jehovah, the name/title of God also means ‘Eternal’ therefore Eternal Life means God’s Life or life in the presence of

REVELATION 2

14“He who has an ear let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches. He who overcomes will not suffer the Second Death.” F*

TO THE PERGAMUM CHURCH You live where Satan has his throne yet remain true

15“To the leader of the church in Pergamum write, ‘The words of him who has the sharp, two-edged sword:”

16“‘I know where you live, where Satan has his throne, F* yet you remain true to my name. 17You did not renounce your faith in me, even in the days of Antipas my faithful witness who was put to death in your city where Satan lives.”

Yet some of you hold to the teachings of Balaam and the Nicolaitans

18“Nevertheless I have a few things against you; some among you hold to the teaching of Balaam, who taught Balak to entice the Israelites to sin by eating food sacrificed to idols and by committing sexual immorality. 19And you also have those who hold to the teaching of the Nicolaitans.” F*

20“Therefore you must repent. If you do not I will come and war against you with the sword of my mouth.”

The Hidden Manna, White Stone and New Name

21“He who has an ear let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches. To him who overcomes I will give some of the Hidden Manna, F* and also a White Stone F* with a New Name F* written on it known only to him who receives it.”



Location of the seven churches
in Asia and the island of Patmos.

God. There is no literal death of the spirit as far as the scriptures reveal. All will be resurrected and exist forever (Revelation 16:7). However see note on the ‘Second Death’ and the ‘Lake of Fire’ Revelation 16:19.

*14 The ‘Second Death’ is a symbolic term meaning to be cut off forever from the presence of God. See note on Revelation 16:19.

*16 Pergamum was the chief city of the province of Asia and the centre of idolatry with many shrines and altars for the worship of pagan gods such as Zeus. A temple dedicated to Roman emperor-worship was also located there.

*19 The Nicolaitans were a sect. See note on Revelation 2:7.

*21 Jesus speaks of manna symbolically in John 6:30-31.

*21 The White Stone may be a type of Urim and Thummim. See note on Haggai 1:13.

*21 A New Name is also spoken of in Revelation 2:47 and 15:14.

TO THE THYATIRAN CHURCH

You are now doing more than you did at first

22“To the leader of the church in Thyatira write, ‘The words of the Son of God whose eyes are like blazing fire and whose feet are like burnished bronze:”

23“‘I know your works; your love, your faith, your service and patient endurance. You are now doing more than you did at first.”

Yet you tolerate the immoral woman Jezebel

24“Nevertheless I have this against you; you tolerate that woman Jezebel who calls herself a prophetess and misleads my servants into sexual immorality and the eating of food sacrificed to idols.”

She and all who have committed adultery with her
will suffer intensely unless they repent

25“‘I have given her time to repent of her immorality but she is unwilling. Therefore I will cast her on a bed of sickness and those who have committed adultery with her will also suffer intensely unless they repent.”

26“‘I will strike her children dead, then all the churches will know that I am he who searches hearts and minds and repays each of you according to your deeds.”

Satan’s so-called deep secrets

27“To the rest of you in Thyatira who do not hold to her teaching and have not learned Satan’s so-called deep secrets, F* I will impose no other burden upon you. 28Only hold on to what you have until I come.”

He who does my will shall
be as the Morning Star

29“To him who overcomes and does my will to the end, I will give authority over the peoples and nations to rule them with an iron sceptre, breaking them to pieces like pottery, just as I have received authority from my Father. And I shall make him as the Morning Star.” F*

30“‘He who has an ear let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches.”

TO THE SARDIS CHURCH

Awaken and repent for you are dead

31“To the leader of the church in Sardis write, ‘The words of him who has the seven Spirits of God and the seven stars:”

32“‘I know your deeds; you have a reputation of being alive but are dead. 33Awaken! Strengthen what remains and is about to die, for I have not found your works perfect in the sight of my God.”

34“Remember what you have received and heard, and obey and repent. If you do not awaken I will come like a thief at an hour you expect not.”

*27 Probably Gnosticism, a false doctrine teaching that ‘the sins of the flesh do not count as the flesh is inherently evil,’ and that ‘only secret knowledge can lead you to salvation.’

*29 Jesus himself is the Morning Star (Revelation 18:13).

He who overcomes I will not blot out of the Book of Life

³⁵“Yet you still have among you some who have not soiled their garments. They will walk with me dressed in white. ³⁶He who overcomes will be clothed in white and I will never blot out his name from the Book of Life^{F*} but will acknowledge his name before my Father and his angels.”

³⁷“He who has an ear let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches.”

TO THE PHILADELPHIAN CHURCH

You have kept my word and not denied my name

³⁸“To the leader of the church in Philadelphia write, ‘The words of he who is holy and true, who holds the key of David. ³⁹What he opens no one can shut, and what he shuts no one can open.’”

⁴⁰“I know your deeds, therefore I have placed before you an open door that no one can shut.”

⁴¹“I know you have little strength, yet you have kept my word and not denied my name. ⁴²I will make those who are of the synagogue of Satan who claim to be Jews but are liars, fall down at your feet and acknowledge that I have loved you.”

I will keep you safe from the world's hour of trial

⁴³“Since you have kept my commandment to endure patiently, I will keep you safe from the hour of trial that will come upon the whole world. ⁴⁴I am coming soon. Hold fast to what you have that no one take your crown.”

The New Jerusalem and the New Name

⁴⁵“He who overcomes I shall make a pillar in the temple of my God and never again will he go out. ⁴⁶I will write on him the name of my God and the name of the city of my God, the New Jerusalem^{F*} which shall come down out of heaven from my God. ⁴⁷I will also write on him my New Name.” ^{F*}

⁴⁸“He who has an ear let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches.”

TO THE LAODICEAN CHURCH

Because you are lukewarm I will spew you out of my mouth

⁴⁹“To the leader of the church in Laodicea

write, ‘The words of the Amen,^{F*} the faithful and true witness, the ruler of God's creation:”

⁵⁰“I know your deeds, you are neither cold nor hot. I would that you were one or the other. So because you are lukewarm and neither cold nor hot, I will spew you out of my mouth.”

You are not rich, but poor, blind, and naked

⁵¹“You say, ‘I am rich and prosperous.^{F*} I do not need anything.’ Little do you know that you are wretched, pitiful, poor, blind and naked.”

⁵²“Therefore I counsel you, buy from me gold refined by fire that you become truly rich. And white clothes to cover your shameful nakedness, and salve to anoint your eyes and restore your sight.”

I stand at the door and knock

⁵³“Those whom I love I rebuke and discipline, therefore be earnest and repent.”

⁵⁴“Here I am. I stand at the door and knock. If anyone hears my voice and opens the door I will come in and eat with him and he with me.”

The faithful will have the right to sit with me on my throne

⁵⁵“To him who overcomes I will give the right to sit with me on my throne, just as I overcame and sat down with my Father on his throne. ⁵⁶He who has an ear let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches.”

3

John taken up into heaven in the spirit sees God the Father on a throne

¹After this I saw above me in the heavens an open door, and the voice I had first heard speaking to me like a trumpet said, “Come up here and I will show you what must take place after this.”

²At once I was in the spirit^{F*} and there before me in heaven I saw a throne and upon the throne sat him whose appearance sparkled like golden crystal. Radiating from around his throne was a rainbow tinged in emerald.^{F*}

Twenty-four elders seated on thrones

³There also were twenty-four other thrones around about the main throne, and seated upon them were twenty-four elders,^{F*} each

*³⁶ The Book of Life (Life meaning ‘Eternal Life’) is mentioned often in Revelation (Revelation 9:9, 13:10, 16:16-19 and 17:27) and there are other references elsewhere in the Bible (Exodus 20:2-3, Daniel 11:11, Psalms 44:9, Matt-Mark-Luke 19:34 and Philippians 3:1). It appears to be a record written at the creation of the world (Revelation 9:9) listing the names of those yet to be born (see note on Job 1:5) who were expected to live faithful lives and inherit Eternal life (Romans 4:3-4). It does appear however that names can be blotted out of the book if individuals fail to live up to their potential and neglect to repent of their sins (Exodus 20:3, Revelation 2:36). There are also other books kept in heaven recording our deeds which are to be consulted on the day of judgment (Daniel 5:12, Revelation 16:17).

*⁴⁶ A magnificent crystalline city of jewels, pearls and transparent gold, 2200 kms square that is to come down upon the new earth after the thousand year millennial reign of Jesus Christ and day of final judgement. See Revelation chapter 17.

*⁴⁷ New Name. See also Revelation 3:21 and 15:14.

*⁴⁹ Amen, when used as a noun or name, as in this instance, means ‘trustworthy.’ However, when used as an interjection, or at the close of a prayer, it means ‘so be it.’”

*⁵¹ Laodicea was a banking centre and the richest city in the province of Asia. It was also noted for its famous eye salve (see following verse 52).

*² In this particular instance by his statement “At once I was in the spirit,” John probably means that his spirit body was lifted up into heaven, while his mortal body remained unconscious on earth. See also Ezekiel 3:3 for a similar instance.

*² A similar description of a heavenly throne is given by the prophet Ezekiel (Ezekiel 1:16-18).

*³ Elders were generally mature men holding religious or civic authority. These twenty-four elders in heaven may have been (or may represent) former church leaders who had died, for in verses 21-22 of this chapter they claim to have been redeemed by Jesus Christ and are destined to reign on earth as kings and priests.

REVELATION 4

clothed in white and wearing a crown of gold upon his head.

The seven spirits of God

⁴From the main throne came flashes of lightning and voices like peals of thunder, and before the throne burned seven flaming torches, the seven Spirits of God.

The floor around the throne like a sea of crystal clear glass

⁵The floor around the throne had the appearance of a sea of glass, clear as crystal.

The four cherubim

⁶Around the sides of the throne were four living creatures. The first had a face like a lion, the second like an ox, the third like a man and the fourth like an eagle. ⁷Each of the four creatures had six wings, and they were covered with eyes all over, even under their wings.^{F*}

⁸Day and night they sing, “**Holy, holy, holy is the Lord God Almighty who was, who is, and who is to come.**”

⁹And whenever the living creatures give glory, honour, and gratitude to him who sits on the throne and who lives forever, the twenty-four elders also fall down before him who sits on the throne.

¹⁰They lay their crowns before the throne and sing, “**You are worthy our Lord and God to receive glory and honour and power, for you have created all things. By your will they came into existence.**”

A scroll sealed with seven seals

¹¹Then I saw in the right hand of him who sat on the throne, a scroll, with writing on both sides and sealed with seven seals. ¹²And a mighty angel proclaimed in a loud voice, “**Who is worthy to break the seals and open the scroll?**”

The Lion of Judah worthy to open the scroll

¹³But no one in the heavens or on earth, or under the earth^{F*} could open the scroll, or even look into it. ¹⁴I wept much that no one was found who was worthy.

¹⁵Then one of the elders said to me, “**Weep not, behold, the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the Root of David^{F*} has triumphed. He is able to open the scroll and its seven seals.**”

Jesus depicted as a slain lamb takes the scroll

¹⁶Then I saw a Lamb, in appearance as if it had been slain, standing by the throne encircled by the four living creatures and the elders.

*7 These winged creatures, called cherubs (plural cherubim) were also seen by the prophets Isaiah and Ezekiel and possibly Adam and Eve and David (Genesis 3:24, Micah 1:18-19, Ezekiel 1:4-12 and Psalms 11:4). They were also depicted in temple decoration and in the carved images on the lid of the Ark of the Covenant (Exodus 16:7, 14). They are sometimes described as having four wings and at other times six.

*13 The term ‘under the earth’ usually means the spirit world of the dead, known as Sheol in Hebrew and Hades in Greek.

*15 The Lion of Judah and Root of David are both titles of Jesus, as also ‘Lamb’ in the following verse.

¹⁷He had seven horns and seven eyes, representing the seven Spirits of God sent out into all the earth. ¹⁸He came and took the scroll from the right hand of him who sat on the throne.

The twenty-four elders with harps and bowls of incense bow before the Lamb and sing

¹⁹When he had taken it the four living creatures and the twenty-four elders fell down before the Lamb.

²⁰Each elder had a harp, and held a golden bowl full of incense which represented the prayers of the saints.^{F*}

²¹And they sang a new song.

“**You are worthy to take the scroll and open its seals, for you were slain and with your blood you redeemed us for God from every nation.** ²²**You have made us to be kings and priests to serve our God and we will reign on the earth.**”

Myriads of angels join in the singing

²³Then I looked and heard the voice of myriads of angels numbering thousands of thousands. ²⁴They encircled the throne, the living creatures and the elders and in a loud voice they sang, “**Worthy is the Lamb who was slain, to receive power, wealth, wisdom, strength, honour, glory and praise.**”

All of creation sing

²⁵Then I heard every creature in the heavens and on earth and under the earth and in the sea singing,^{F*} “**To him who sits on the throne and to the Lamb, be praise and honour and glory and power for ever and ever.**”

²⁶The four living creatures cried out, “**Amen!**” and the elders fell down and worshipped.

4

THE FIRST SEAL

Rider on a white horse to gain victory over the earth

¹I watched as the Lamb opened the first of the seven seals. Then I heard one of the four living creatures say in a voice like thunder, “**Come!**” ²And I saw a white horse, and its rider held a bow. He was given a crown and rode out as a conqueror to gain victory over the earth.

THE SECOND SEAL

Rider on a red horse, men to slay one another on earth

³When the Lamb opened the second seal I heard the second living creature say, “**Come!**” Then a bright red horse came out. ⁴Its rider was empowered to take peace from the earth so that men should slay one another and he was given a large sword.

*20 The term ‘saints’ as used in the Bible refers to all faithful members of the early church.

*25 This verse is sometimes quoted as evidence that animals and birds will have power of speech in the new earth. See also Genesis 3:1 and Numbers 10:20.

THE THIRD SEAL**Rider on a black horse, famines on earth**

⁵When the Lamb opened the third seal I heard the third living creature say, “Come!” And I saw before me a black horse and its rider was holding a pair of scales in his hand. ⁶Then I heard a voice from among the four living creatures say, “A ration of wheat and three rations of barley for a day’s wages^{F*} but spare the oil and the wine.”

THE FOURTH SEAL**Rider on a pale green horse with power to kill fourth earth**

⁷When the Lamb opened the fourth seal I heard the voice of the fourth living creature say, “Come!” And I saw a pale green horse.^{F*} ⁸Its rider was named The Grave, and Hades was following close behind him. They were given authority over a fourth of the earth to kill by sword, famine, plague and wild animals.

THE FIFTH SEAL**Saints slain for testifying word of God**

⁹When the Lamb opened the fifth seal I saw an altar and below the altar were the spirits of those who had been slain because of the word of God and for the testimony they had borne.^{F*} ¹⁰They cried out in a loud voice, “How long Almighty Lord holy and true until you judge the inhabitants of the earth and avenge our blood?”

¹¹Then each one was given a white robe and told to rest a little longer until the number of their fellow servants and brethren who were to be killed as they had been, was complete.

THE SIXTH SEAL**Great earthquake darkens the sun and the moon turns red**

¹²As the Lamb opened the sixth seal there was a great earthquake on earth. The sun turned dark like sackcloth made from goat hair and the moon turned blood red.

Stars fall from the sky

¹³Stars fell from the sky to earth as late figs fall when a fig tree is shaken by a strong wind.

The sky recedes and mountains and islands move

¹⁴The sky receded like a scroll rolling up and every island fled and the mountains were not to be found.^{F*}

The Father and Son are seen and the unbelievers on earth try to hide

¹⁵Then the kings of the earth, the nobles, the rulers, the rich, the powerful, the slave and the free, all hid themselves in caves and among

*6 These are famine food prices.

*7 These four horsemen were also seen in a vision by the prophet Zechariah (Zechariah 2:5-7,50-51).

*9 It has been reported that more Christians have been put to death for their beliefs during the 20th century than in all the other centuries combined. *CWR Revival World Report, Nov-Dec 1997, p7.*

*14 This phenomena of islands and mountains moving is also mentioned in Revelation 12:30. See also note on Revelation 6:1.



An artist's view of the four horsemen John saw.

REVELATION 5

the rocks of the mountains. ¹⁶They called out to the mountains and the rocks saying, "Fall upon us. Hide us from the face of him who is seated on the throne and from the wrath of the Lamb, for the great day of their wrath has come and who can stand?"

5

The servants of God marked with a seal before the destroying angels harm the earth

¹After this I saw four angels, standing at the four corners of the earth, holding back the four winds from blowing on the land or on the sea.

²Then I saw another angel, coming up from the east, having the seal of the living God. ³He called out in a loud voice to the four angels who had been given power to harm the land and the sea saying, "**Do not harm the land or the sea or the trees until we put a seal on the foreheads of the servants of our God.**"

144,000 servants of God, 12,000 from each tribe of Israel sealed on their foreheads

⁴Then I heard the number of those who were sealed, 144,000 from all the tribes of Israel. 12,000 each from the tribes of Judah, Reuben, Gad, Asher, Naphtali, Manasseh, Simeon, Levi, Issachar, Zebulun, Joseph and Benjamin.^{F*}

John sees the vast number of saints who die during the Great Tribulation

⁵After this I saw before me a great multitude that no man could number taken from all peoples and nations, standing before the throne and in front of the Lamb.

⁶They were wearing white robes and were holding palm branches in their hands. They cried out in a loud voice, "**Salvation belongs to our God who sits on the throne and to the Lamb.**"

⁷And all the angels stood around the throne and around the elders and the four living creatures. They fell on their faces and worshipped God singing, "**Amen. Praise, glory, wisdom, gratitude, honour, power and strength be to our God for ever and ever. Amen.**"

⁸Then one of the elders said to me, "**This great multitude in white robes, who are they and where did they come from?**"

I answered, "Sir, you know."

⁹He said, "**These are they who have come out of the Great Tribulation,^{F*} and have washed their robes and made them white in the blood of the Lamb.**"

*4 The tribe of Dan is omitted, and Ephraim is listed under the name of his father Joseph. No reason for these changes is given. There is an old tradition that the Antichrist is to come from the tribe of Dan.

*9 The Great Tribulation is a seven year period of testing and suffering immediately prior to the return of Jesus Christ (see also Isaiah chapters 7-6, Daniel chapter 11, and Matt-Mark-Luke 28:30-36). The multitude that John saw were probably spirits, as the first resurrection had not yet occurred.

The Lamb at the throne to be their shepherd

¹⁰"**Therefore they are before the throne of God and serve him day and night in his Temple, and he will shelter them.**"

¹¹"**Never again will they hunger or thirst or the sun beat upon them with scorching heat.** ¹²**For the Lamb at the throne shall be their shepherd and he will lead them to springs of Living Water, and God shall wipe away every tear from their eyes.**"

6

THE SEVENTH SEAL

Plagues of the seven trumpets

¹When the Lamb opened the seventh seal there was silence in heaven for about half an hour.^{F*}

²And I saw the seven angels who stand before God, and to them were given seven trumpets.

³Another angel who had a golden censer came and stood at the altar. He was given much incense to offer with the prayers of the saints on the golden altar before the throne.

⁴The smoke of the incense together with the prayers of the saints went up before God from the angel's hand.

Fire from the altar hurled to earth

⁵Then the angel took the censer and filled it with fire from the altar and hurled it upon the earth. There came peals of thunder, loud noises, flashes of lightning and an earthquake.^{F*}

THE FIRST TRUMPET

Hail of fire falls upon the earth A third of the trees and vegetation burned

⁶Then the seven angels who had the seven trumpets prepared to sound them.^{F*} ⁷The first angel sounded his trumpet and a hail of blood-red fire fell upon the earth. ⁸A third of the earth was burned up, a third of the trees, and all the green vegetation.^{F*}

THE SECOND TRUMPET

A blazing mountain falls into the sea A third of the fish and ships destroyed

⁹The second angel sounded his trumpet and

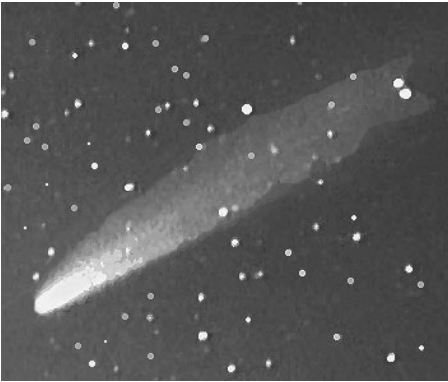
*1 The six seals opened so far appear to be a short overview of the trauma and upheaval to precede the second coming of Jesus Christ. These events are described in greater detail in the following chapters. The first five of the seals may pertain to events in the earth's past history as well as the Great Tribulation to come, however the events described in the sixth and seventh seals have not yet occurred on earth. This present chapter and the next eight that follow cover this final period in more detail and divide the time into two 3½ year periods—a total of seven years. The first 3½ year period is a time of geographic and oceanic upheaval, and the second period the reign of the Beast (or Antichrist) and the False Prophet. (See also Isaiah chapters 6-15, and Daniel chapter 11.)

*5 Not the great and final earthquake of Revelation 12:26-28.

*6 The trumpets herald the plagues that commence the seven years of great tribulation to precede the second coming of Christ and his thousand year reign on earth commonly known as the Millennium.

*8 Probably meaning all the green vegetation within the third part of earth affected, for verse 18 of this chapter states, "They were ordered not to harm the grass of the earth."

what looked like a huge blazing mountain was cast into the sea and a third of the sea turned blood red.¹⁰A third of the living creatures in the sea died and a third of the ships were destroyed.



First a 'Hail of blood-red fire' (verse 7), then 'what looked like a huge blazing mountain cast into the sea' (verse 9), next 'a great star, blazing like a torch' (verse 11) and finally 'a third of earth's light darkened' (verse 13). Some believe the first four trumpets depict an asteroid collision with earth.

THE THIRD TRUMPET

**A blazing star falls on a third of the rivers
A third of the rivers poisoned**

¹¹The third angel sounded his trumpet and a great star blazing like a torch fell from the sky upon a third of the rivers and springs of water.¹²The name of the star is Wormwood.^{F*} A third of the waters were poisoned and many people died from the waters that had become bitter.

THE FOURTH TRUMPET

Light on earth darkened by a third

¹³The fourth angel sounded his trumpet and the sun was struck so that a third of its light was darkened, also a third of the light of the moon and of the stars. Therefore the day lost a third of its light and also the night.

**Woe to the inhabitants of the earth
because of the last three trumpet blasts**

¹⁴Then I heard an eagle flying in mid-air crying out in a loud voice, "Woe. Woe. Woe, to the inhabitants of the earth, because of the trumpet blasts about to be sounded by the other three angels."

THE FIFTH TRUMPET

Locust-like creatures sting and torment men like scorpions for five months

¹⁵The fifth angel sounded his trumpet and I saw an angel descending to the earth. He was given the key to the shaft of the Pit.^{F*} ¹⁶When he opened the Pit, smoke arose from it like the smoke from a gigantic furnace, darkening the sun and sky. ¹⁷Out of the smoke locusts came upon the earth and were given power like that of scorpions.

*12 Wormwood is a very sour poisonous plant.

*15 The spirit abode of demons.

**Those with the seal of God
on their foreheads not stung**

¹⁸They were ordered not to harm the grass of the earth nor any plant or tree, but only those people who had not the seal of God on their foreheads.

¹⁹They were not given power to kill them but only to torment them for five months. The agony they suffered was like that of the sting of a scorpion when it strikes a man.

²⁰During those days men will seek death but not find it, they shall long to die, but death will elude them.

The stinging creatures described

²¹The locusts looked like horses arrayed for battle. On their heads were what looked like crowns of gold and their faces resembled human faces. ²²Their hair looked like that of women and their teeth like those of a lion.

²³They had scales like breastplates of iron, and the sound of their wings was like the roar of many horses and chariots rushing into battle.^{F*} ²⁴They had tails with stings like scorpions and in their tails they had power to torment people for five months. ²⁵The angel of the Pit whose name is Destroyer ruled over them.

²⁶The first woe is past, two other woes are yet to come.

THE SIXTH TRUMPET

**A third of mankind killed by an
army of 200,000,000**

²⁷The sixth angel sounded his trumpet and I heard a voice coming from the horns of the golden altar that is before God saying, "Release the four angels^{F*} who are bound at the great river Euphrates."^{F*} ²⁸And the four angels who had been prepared for this very hour were loosed to kill a third of mankind.

²⁹The number of their mounted armies was 200 million. I heard their number. ³⁰I saw the riders, they wore breastplates of fiery red, dark blue, and yellow like sulphur. ³¹The heads of their horses resembled the heads of lions and out of their mouths came fire, smoke and sulphur.

³²A third of mankind was killed by the three plagues of fire, smoke and sulphur, that came out of their mouths. ³³The power of the horses was in their mouths and in their tails, for their tails are like snakes, having heads with which they inflict injury.

Survivors still do not repent of their idolatry, murders, sorcery, sexual immorality and thefts

³⁴The rest of mankind that were not killed by these plagues still did not repent of the work of their hands. They did not give up worshipping demons and idols of gold, silver, bronze, stone

*23 A similar description of these latter day war machines or creatures is found in Joel 1:12-16. Some scholars speculate that they may be tanks and helicopter gunships of modern warfare.

*27 According to Jewish belief every nation is assigned a controlling angel. See also Daniel 10:9.

*27 The Euphrates river flows through or along the border of the Islamic nations of Iraq, Syria, and Turkey.

REVELATION 7

and wood that neither see or hear or walk.^{F*}
³⁵Nor did they repent of their murders, their sorceries, their sexual immorality or their thefts.

7

A mighty angel descends from heaven holding a little scroll

¹Then I saw another mighty angel descending from heaven. He was robed in a cloud with a rainbow above his head. His face was like the sun and his legs were like pillars of fire.

²He was holding a little scroll which lay open in his hand. He planted his right foot on the sea and his left foot on the land and cried out with a loud voice like the roar of a lion.

Seven thunders prophesy but John not permitted to write the prophesy

³When he cried out, the voices of the seven thunders spoke. ⁴I was about to write what the seven thunders spoke but I heard a voice from heaven say, “**Seal up what the seven thunders have said. Write it not.**”

No more delay

⁵Then the angel standing on the sea and on the land raised his right hand to heaven and swore by him who lives for ever and ever, who created the heavens and the earth and all that is in them and said, “**There shall be no more delay. ⁶In the days when the seventh angel is about to sound his trumpet, the mystery of God shall be accomplished, just as he announced to his servants the prophets.**”

John told to eat the scroll

⁷Then the voice that I had first heard from heaven spoke to me once more saying, “**Take the scroll that lies open in the hand of the angel who is standing on the sea and on the land.**”

The prophecies of the scroll bitter to John's stomach

⁸I went to the angel and asked him for the little scroll. He said to me, “**Take it and eat it. It will be sweet as honey in your mouth but bitter to your stomach.**”

⁹I took the scroll from the angel's hand and ate it. It tasted sweet as honey in my mouth but when I had eaten it my stomach turned bitter.

¹⁰Then I was told, “**You must again prophesy concerning many nations and kings.**”

Jerusalem to be trampled three and a half years

¹¹I was given a reed, like a measuring rod and was told, “**Rise and measure the Temple of God^{F*} and the altar and count the worshipers there. ¹²But do not measure the outer**

courtyard for it has been given over to the Gentiles. They will trample over the Holy City^{F*} for three and a half years.”

Two prophets to witness from Jerusalem for three and a half years

¹³“**And there, I will give power to my two witnesses to prophesy for three and a half years clothed in sackcloth.**”

The two prophets given great power to strike earth with plagues

¹⁴They are the two olive trees and the two lampstands that stand before the Lord of the earth. If anyone tries to harm them, fire comes from their mouths and consumes them.

¹⁵These men have power to shut up the sky so that no rain will fall during the days of their prophesying. And they have power to turn the waters into blood and to strike the earth with every kind of plague as often as they desire.

The Beast to eventually kill the two prophets

¹⁶When they have finished their testimony, the Beast^{F*} that comes up from the Pit will attack them and kill them.

All nations will gaze on their dead bodies and rejoice

¹⁷Their bodies will lie in the street of the great city, which is figuratively called Sodom and Egypt where their Lord was crucified.^{F*}

¹⁸For three and a half days people from all nations will gaze upon their bodies and refuse them burial. ¹⁹The people of the earth will rejoice and celebrate by sending each other gifts, for these two prophets had tormented them.

After three and a half days they will return to life and ascend into heaven

²⁰But after the three and a half days a spirit of life from God entered them and they stood upon their feet. Terror struck those who saw them.

²¹Then the two prophets heard a loud voice from heaven saying, “**Come up here!**” And they ascended to heaven in a cloud while their enemies looked on.

A severe earthquake afflicts Jerusalem

²²At that very hour there was a severe earthquake^{F*} and a tenth of the city collapsed, 7000 were killed in the earthquake. The survivors were terrified and gave glory to the God of heaven.

²³The second woe has passed. The third woe is coming soon.

8

THE SEVENTH TRUMPET (THE FINAL THREE AND A HALF YEARS)

World to become kingdom of God and his Christ

¹The seventh angel sounded his trumpet and

*34 Idolatry is still practiced by millions today in eastern nations, especially India.

*11 The following verses indicate that a yet to be built earthly temple located in Jerusalem is referred to here. The old temple in Jerusalem was totally destroyed by the Romans about 25 years before John's vision and has not yet been rebuilt, despite strong desires by many Jews today and over past centuries to do so.

*12 Jerusalem.

*16 The Antichrist (see Revelation chapter 9 and note on Revelation 9:5).

*17 Jerusalem. Although sometimes called the Holy City it has more often been filled with wickedness.

*22 There is yet a more severe worldwide earthquake to come (Revelation 12:26-28).

there were loud voices in heaven saying, “The kingdom of the world has become the Kingdom of our God and of his Christ, and he will reign for ever and ever.”

The time has come to reward the saints and destroy the corrupters of the earth

²The twenty-four elders who were seated on their thrones before God fell on their faces and worshipped God saying, “We give thanks to you O Lord God Almighty, the One who is and who was. For you have taken your great power and have begun to reign. ³The nations raged but your wrath has come, and the time to judge the dead and reward your servants the prophets and your saints. ⁴And all who reverence your name both small and great, and to destroy the corrupters of the earth.”

The Ark seen in the heavenly temple and on earth another earthquake and great hail

⁵Then God’s temple in heaven was opened and within his temple was seen the Ark of his covenant. ⁶There occurred on earth flashes of lightning, rumblings, peals of thunder and an earthquake and a great hail.

A sign of a woman about to give birth to a male child

⁷And a great and wondrous sign appeared in the heavens; a woman clothed with the sun, with the moon under her feet and a crown of twelve stars on her head. ⁸She was with child and cried out in pain as she was about to give birth.^{F*}

Satan depicted as a great red dragon

⁹Then another sign appeared in the heavens, a great red dragon with seven heads and ten horns and a crown on each head. ¹⁰His tail swept a third of the stars out of the sky and flung them to the earth.^{F*}

The male child caught up to God

¹¹The Dragon stood in front of the woman who was about to give birth that he might devour her child the moment it was born. ¹²She gave birth to a son, a male child who will rule all nations with an iron sceptre,^{F*} and he was caught up to God and to his throne.

The church to be protected during the final three and a half years

¹³The woman fled into the wilderness to a place prepared for her by God, where she will be taken care of for three and a half years.

*8 The women is thought to represent the church of God. In the first instance the pre-Jesus Christ believers among the twelve tribes of Israel and following the birth of her son those that believe in and follow Jesus Christ. The child is believed to be the Christ and/or the kingdom of God. This sign and that of the dragon that follows do not fit into the chronological flow of the narrative up to this point, and are probably a pageant of past events provided to lay the foundation for depicting the future.

*10 Satan and his angels (see verse 14 of this chapter). The stars represent the spirits who follow Satan, traditionally a third of the hosts of heaven. The seven crowned heads and ten horns pertain to his control of the Beast (or Antichrist), see Revelation chapter 9, also Revelation 13:11-20 and Daniel 5:5-9.

*12 Jesus Christ and/or the kingdom of God. Both Jesus and the faithful saints are to ‘rule all nations with an iron sceptre’ (Revelation 2:29 and 15:16).

Michael and his angels hurl Satan from the heavens

¹⁴Now war arose in heaven. Michael and his angels fought against the dragon, and the Dragon and his angels fought back, but they were defeated and there was no longer any place for them in heaven.

¹⁵The great Dragon was hurled down, that ancient serpent called the devil or Satan who leads the whole world astray. He was hurled to the earth and his angels with him.^{F*}

Satan defeated in the heavens of the earth by blood of the Lamb and martyrdom of the saints

¹⁶Then I heard a loud voice in heaven say, “Now has come the salvation, the power, and the kingdom of our God and the authority of his Christ. ¹⁷For the accuser^{F*} of our brethren who accused them day and night before our God has been hurled down.”

¹⁸“They overcame him by the blood of the Lamb and by the word of their testimony, for they did not cling to life, even in the face of death.”

But woe to the earth for Satan is filled with fury for his time is short

¹⁹“Therefore rejoice you heavens and you who dwell in them. But woe to the earth and the sea, for the devil has been driven down to you, filled with fury for he knows that his time is short.”

The church on earth escapes into the wilderness

²⁰When the Dragon had been driven to the earth, he pursued the woman who had given birth to the male child. ²¹But the woman was given wings like a great eagle so that she might fly to the place prepared for her in the wilderness where she is to be taken care of for three and a half years. ^{F*}

Satan tries to prevent church’s escape by a flood

²²From his mouth the serpent^{F*} poured water like a flood to overtake the woman and sweep her away with the torrent. ²³But the earth helped the woman by opening its mouth and swallowing the flood that the Dragon had poured from his mouth.^{F*}

*15 This confining of Satan to the face of the earth from the earthly heavens (or realm of the righteous spirits known as Paradise) should not be confused with his original banishment to earth from the higher or third heaven (2 Corinthians 3:45) where God himself dwells which occurred before the creation of Adam and Eve (Matt-Mark-Luke 19:32). In this second banishment referred to here, Michael with the help of the righteous saints who have given their lives for the truth (see verses 17-18 of this chapter) will force Satan from the spirit heaven surrounding the earth to which he formally had access (see Job 1:5, Elijah 7:21-25 and Revelation 8:17) and confine him to the face of the earth. This explains why he will be ‘filled with fury.’ It is also the time when the reign of the Beast (or Antichrist) will begin (see note on Revelation 9:5).

*17 The word *Satan* means ‘accuser.’

*21 It appears that faithful followers of Jesus Christ (represented by the woman) are to be provided with a place of refuge during the horrific 3½ year reign of the Beast (or Antichrist).

*22 Satan is also called ‘the serpent’ (see Revelation 15:28).

*23 Jesus prophesied that nations would be “in great distress at the roaring and great waves of the sea” during the final years (Matt-Mark-Luke 28:32, see also Revelation 6:9-10)



Satan is depicted as a great red dragon in the visions of the book of revelation and the church of Jesus Christ as a woman.

Satan wages war against all who obey God's commandments

²⁴Then the Dragon was enraged at the woman and went off to wage war against the remnant of her offspring, those who obey the commandments of God and hold to the testimony of Jesus.

9

The Beast (the Antichrist) arises from the sea

¹The Dragon stood on the shore of the sea and I saw a beast rising out of the sea. He had ten horns and seven heads with ten crowns on his horns, and on each head a blasphemous name.

²The Beast resembled a leopard but had feet like those of a bear and a mouth like that of a lion.^{F*} ³The Dragon gave the Beast his power and his throne and great authority.

An apparently fatal head wound healed

⁴One of the heads of the Beast appeared to have had a fatal wound, but the wound had been healed.^{F*}

The whole world worships Satan by following the Beast

⁵The whole world followed the Beast with

*2 This beast combines the characteristics of the first three beasts that Daniel saw; the lion, the bear, and the leopard (Daniel chapter 5).

*4 See Revelation 10:5 and note on 10:9.

wonder. Men worshipped the Dragon because he had given authority to the Beast.^{F*} ⁶They also worshipped the Beast saying, "Who is like the Beast? Who can make war against him?"

The Beast to exercise authority for three and a half years

⁷The Beast was given a mouth to utter proud words and blasphemies and to exercise his authority for three and a half years.

The Beast blasphemes God, is given authority over every nation

⁸He blasphemed God and slandered his name and his dwelling place and those who dwell in heaven, and he was given power over the nations.

All whose names are not written in the Book of Life will worship the Beast

⁹All the people of the earth whose names are not written in the Book of Life of the Lamb, that was slain from the creation of the world will worship the Beast.

Many saints destined to be captured or killed

¹⁰He who has an ear let him hear. If anyone is to go into captivity, into captivity he will go. If anyone is to be killed with the sword, with the sword he shall be killed.

¹¹This calls for patient endurance and faithfulness of the saints.

10

A second beast (the False Prophet) rises up out of the earth

¹Then I saw another beast, arising out of the earth. He had two horns like a lamb but he spoke like the Dragon.

²He exercised all the authority of the first beast in his presence, and made the earth and its inhabitants worship the first beast.^{F*}

The False Prophet performs great miracles in the presence of the first beast

³He performed great miracles, even causing fire to come down from heaven to earth in full view of men.

⁴He deceived the inhabitants of the earth because of the signs he was given power to do in the presence of the first beast.

An image set up in honour of the Beast

⁵He commanded the people of the earth to set up an image in honour of the Beast who was wounded by the sword and yet lived.

The image is given power of speech and all who refuse to worship it are put to death

⁶He was given power to put life into the image

*5 The Beast, elsewhere referred to as the Antichrist (1 John 1:19, 2 Thessalonians 1:11-13, also see Daniel chapter 11) represents a future great evil world leader operating under Satan's control, along with seven other leaders who support him. He is to come to power in the final 3½ years before the coming of Christ and will dominate all nations that survive the calamities of the first 3½ years (Revelation 9:8) with perhaps the exception of the bulk of faithful church members who apparently are to flee and be protected in a prepared place in the "wilderness" see Revelation 8:21.

*2 John later refers to this second beast as the False Prophet, see Revelation 16:12.

of the Beast so that the image uttered speech, and he caused all who refused to worship the image to be put to death.

No one able to buy or sell without the Beast's name or number in their hand or forehead

⁷He also caused all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and slave to have a mark^{F*} in the right hand or in the forehead.

⁸No one could buy or sell unless they had the mark, that is the name of the Beast or the number of his name.

The name of the Beast adds up to 666

⁹This calls for wisdom, if anyone has insight let him calculate the number of the Beast for it is a man's name. His number is 666.^{F*}



The evil Roman emperor Nero whose spirit is traditionally believed to be going to possess the Beast or Antichrist of the last days (Revelation 10:9 and 13:9-14).

11

The 144,000 sing a new song before the throne

¹Then I saw before me the Lamb, standing on heavenly Mount Zion,^{F*} and with him the

*7 Traditionally translated 'mark.' The original Greek word '*charagma*' means an etching or a solid sculptured figure.

*9 Letters of the Greek and Hebrew alphabets have number values. However no plausible name has been found to correspond to this number except that of the evil fifth Roman emperor, Nero Caesar (when written in Hebrew). Nero had committed suicide by a knife wound to his throat as he was about to be arrested some years earlier in 68 AD. Prior to his death he had severely persecuted the saints and put many to death including the apostles Peter and Paul. He also killed his evil mother after a brief incestuous relationship. A tradition has persisted for centuries that he will rise again, or be reincarnated as the Beast, perhaps by spirit possession of a modern man (see Revelation 13:9-13). John's mention of a miraculous recovery of the Beast from a fatal head wound (Revelation 9:4) lends some credence to this theory.

*1 Zion normally refers to the central hill in Jerusalem on which the temple and royal palace were built, but in this instance it

144,000 who had his name and the name of his Father written on their foreheads. ²And I heard loud music from heaven, that of harpists playing their harps and the 144,000 sang a new song before the throne and before the four living creatures and the elders.

³No one could learn the song except the 144,000 who had been redeemed from the earth.

The 144,000 chaste men, first fruits to God

⁴These are they who did not defile themselves with women, for they kept themselves chaste. ⁵They follow the Lamb wherever he goes.

⁶They were redeemed from among men and offered as first fruits to God and the Lamb. ⁷No lie was found in their mouths. They are blameless.

The hour of God's judgement has come

⁸Then I saw another angel flying in midst of the heavens with the everlasting good news to proclaim to every people and nation on earth. ⁹He cried out in a loud voice, "Revere God and give him glory, for the hour of his judgement has come. ¹⁰Worship him who made the heavens, the earth, the sea, and the springs of water."

The great Babylon is fallen

¹¹A second angel followed and cried out, "The great Babylon^{F*} is fallen. She is fallen which made all nations drink the maddening wine of her adulteries."

Whoever worships the Beast or receives its mark will drink the wine of God's fury

¹²A third angel followed and cried out in a loud voice, "Whoever worships the Beast and his image, and receives his mark in their forehead or hand, they too will drink of the wine of God's fury poured full strength into the cup of his wrath."

They will have no peace day or night

¹³"Their torment will be as burning sulphur in the presence of the holy angels and the Lamb. The smoke of their torment will rise for ever and ever."

¹⁴"There is no peace, day or night for those who worship the Beast and his image or receive the mark of his name."

The saints must endure and obey commandments

¹⁵This calls for patient endurance on the part of the saints, to obey God's commandments and remain faithful to Jesus.

Blessed are the dead who die in the Lord

¹⁶I heard a voice from heaven say, "Write

becomes a symbolic name for the throne and temple of God in heaven (see following verse 2). Jesus (the Lamb) and the 144,000 who are to accompany him at his second coming have not yet come to earth as the final plagues are still to afflict the wicked (see next chapter).

*11 Identified as Rome in Revelation 13:20 but may possibly be symbolic of a modern equivalent city (see note on Revelation 12:29). Rome was the seat of the Roman empire and the greatest city of the day. Even in John's era it is believed to have had a population in excess of one million people.

REVELATION 12

this, 'Blessed are the dead who die in the Lord from now on.'

¹⁷The Spirit said, "Yes, they will rest from their labours for their deeds will follow them."

The time to reap the harvest of the earth has come

¹⁸Then I saw before me seated on a white cloud an angel with a crown of gold on his head and a sharp sickle in his hand.

¹⁹Another angel came out of the temple in heaven and cried out in a loud voice to him who was sitting on the cloud, "Take your sickle and reap, for the time to reap has come. The harvest of the earth is ripe."

²⁰He who was seated on the cloud swung his sickle upon the earth and reaped the earth.

The grapes of God's wrath are gathered to be trampled in the winepress

²¹Another angel came out of the temple in heaven and he too had a sharp sickle.

²²Still another angel who had charge of the fire came from the altar and called to him in a loud voice saying, "Take your sharp sickle and gather the clusters of grapes from the earth's vine, for the grapes are ripe."

Blood flows high as a horse's bridle

²³The angel swung his sickle upon the earth and gathered its grapes and threw them into the great winepress of God's wrath. ²⁴They were trampled in the winepress outside the city and blood flowed out of the press, rising as high as a horse's bridle for a distance of 1,600 stadia.^{F*}

12

The seven last plagues

¹I saw in heaven another great and marvellous sign; seven angels with the seven last plagues. Last because with them God's wrath is completed.

John sees those who had overcome the Beast, standing on a sea of fiery glass

²And I saw what looked like a sea of glass, mingled with fire, and standing on the sea of glass were those who had been victorious over the Beast and his image and the number of his name.

They held harps and sang the song of Moses

³They held harps given them by God and sang the song of Moses the servant of God and the song of the Lamb saying, "Great and marvellous are your deeds Lord God Almighty. Just and true are your ways King of the Ages. ⁴Who will not revere you O Lord and bring glory to your name? For you alone are holy."

⁵"All peoples and nations will come and worship before you for your righteous acts have been revealed."

Seven angels with seven plagues come out of the heavenly temple

⁶After this the temple in heaven was opened and out of the temple came the seven angels with the seven plagues. ⁷They were dressed in pure shining linen and wore golden girdles around their chests.

⁸One of the four living creatures gave to the angels seven gold bowls filled with the wrath of God. The temple was filled with smoke from the glory of God and from his power. ⁹No one could enter the temple until the seven plagues were completed.

¹⁰Then I heard a loud voice from the temple say to the seven angels, "Go pour out the seven bowls of God's wrath upon the earth."

THE FIRST PLAGUE

Ugly and painful sores break out on those who have the mark of the Beast

¹¹The first angel went and poured out his bowl on the land of the earth and ugly painful sores broke out on the people who had the mark of the Beast and worshipped his image.

THE SECOND PLAGUE

The sea becomes like blood and everything living in the sea dies

¹²The second angel poured out his bowl upon the sea and it became like the blood of a dead man. Every living thing in the sea died.

THE THIRD PLAGUE

The rivers and springs of water become blood

¹³The third angel poured out his bowl upon the rivers and springs of water and they became blood.

¹⁴Then I heard the angel in charge of the waters say, "You are just in these judgements O Holy One, you who are and who were, for they have shed the blood of your saints and prophets and you have given them blood to drink, as they deserve."

¹⁵I heard the altar respond, "Yes Lord God Almighty, true and just are your judgements."

THE FOURTH PLAGUE

The sun becomes scorching hot

¹⁶The fourth angel poured out his bowl upon the sun and the sun was given power to scorch people with burning heat. ¹⁷They were seared by the intense heat and cursed the name of God who had control over these plagues, but they refused to repent and glorify him.

THE FIFTH PLAGUE

The kingdom of the Beast plunged into darkness

¹⁸The fifth angel poured out his bowl upon the throne of the Beast and his kingdom was plunged into darkness.

¹⁹Men gnawed their tongues in anguish and cursed the God of heaven because of their pains and their sores, but they refused to repent of what they had done.

*24 About 300 km (the approx length of Israel).

THE SIXTH PLAGUE

The spirits of demons go out to gather the kings of the earth for the great battle at Armageddon

²⁰The sixth angel poured out his bowl upon the great river Euphrates and its water was dried up to prepare a path for the kings of the east.

²¹Then I saw three unclean spirits in appearance like frogs come from the mouths of the Dragon, the Beast, and the False Prophet. ²²These are demon spirits who perform miraculous signs and go out to the kings of the earth, to gather them for battle on the great day of God Almighty.

²³**“Behold I come like a thief. Blessed is he who keeps watch and keeps his clothes with him, that he may not go naked and be shamefully exposed.”**^{F*}

²⁴Then the unclean spirits gathered the kings together, to the place called Armageddon.^{F*}



The plain of Megiddo below Armageddon (Hebrew *Har-Magedon*, Mount Megiddo) reputed to be the site of more bloody battles than any other place on earth.

THE SEVENTH PLAGUE

A tremendous earthquake collapses the cities of the world

²⁵The seventh angel poured out his bowl into the air and out of the temple came a loud voice from the throne crying, **“It is done!”**

²⁶Then came flashes of lightning, rumblings, peals of thunder and a tremendous earthquake.

²⁷No earthquake like it has ever occurred since man has been on earth. ²⁸A third of the great city^{F*} fell and the other cities of the world collapsed. ²⁹God remembered great Babylon^{F*}

*23 The speaker of these words is not identified, but the words bear the stamp of the angel (speaking on behalf of Jesus) that first visited John and who speaks again to him at the end of the book, see Revelation 18:3-19.

*24 Armageddon, (more correctly *Har-Magedon* meaning Mountains of Megiddo) are mountains that overlook the valley of Megiddo, 90 kms north of Jerusalem. This valley has been the site of many decisive battles in Israel's history and perhaps more blood has been shed in this valley than any other spot on earth. The use of the name Armageddon may therefore in this instance be symbolic, like Babylon in Revelation 11:14 and following verses, for all other Bible prophecies place the scene of the great battle of the last days around Jerusalem itself, more especially in the valley of Jehoshaphat which is believed to be the Kidron valley on the east boundary of Jerusalem (Isaiah chapter 7 and Zechariah.5:1-4).

*28 The 'Babylon' of the following verse, is Rome or its modern equivalent, see Revelation 13:20 and 14:10.

*29 Babylon (or the Harlot, see Revelation 13:1-6) is believed to specifically refer to the Rome of John's day (Revelation 13:20), and probably also to a resurgent Rome or comparable city of

and gave her the winecup of the fury of his wrath.

The whole face of the earth changes

³⁰Every island fled away and the mountains could not be found.

Giant hailstones fall

³¹Great hailstones of about a talent^{F*} each, fell upon men from the sky and they cursed God on account of the plague of hail, for the plague was terrible.

13

John carried away and shown the Great Harlot

¹One of the seven angels who had the seven bowls came and said to me, **“Come, I will show you the punishment of the Great Harlot who sits on many waters. ²With her the rulers of the earth committed adultery and the inhabitants of the earth were intoxicated with the wine of her fornication.”**

John sees a richly dressed woman sitting on a scarlet beast

³Then the angel carried me away in the spirit into a wilderness. There I saw a woman sitting upon a scarlet beast that was covered with blasphemous names and had seven heads and ten horns.

⁴The woman was dressed in purple and scarlet and was glittering with gold, precious stones and pearls. ⁵She held a golden cup in her hand filled with abominable things and the filth of her fornication.

⁶This mysterious name was written upon her forehead: **“Babylon the Great, mother of harlots and the abominations of the earth.”**

The woman drunk with the blood of the martyred saints

⁷I saw that the woman was drunk with the blood of the saints who were martyred for their testimony of Jesus.

The mystery of the woman and of the Beast explained

⁸When I saw her I was greatly astonished. The angel said to me, **“Why do you marvel? I will explain to you the mystery of the woman and of the Beast she rides which has seven heads and ten horns.”**

The Beast once lived and now is dead but he will come up again out of the Pit

⁹**“The Beast which you saw, once lived, yet now is dead. But he will again come up out of the Pit, and eventually go to his destruction.”**

¹⁰**“The inhabitants of the earth whose names have not been written in the Book of Life from the creation of the world will be astonished when they see the Beast, for he**

the latter days. The term Babylon symbolises worldly pride, power, wealth and sin wherever it is found.

*31 A talent weighed about 34kg (75lbs).

REVELATION 14

once lived yet now is dead, but will rise again.^{F*}

The seven heads of the Beast represent seven hills and seven kings

¹¹“This calls for a mind with wisdom. The seven heads represent seven hills upon which the woman sits.^{F*} They also represent seven kings. ¹²Five have fallen, one is, the other has not yet arisen.^{F*} but when he does come he must remain for a little while.”^{F*}

¹³“The Beast who once lived and now is dead, is an eighth king. He belonged to the seven^{F*} and is going to perdition.”^{F*}

The ten horns of the Beast are ten future kings who will give their power to the Beast

¹⁴“The ten horns you saw are ten kings who have not yet received a kingdom, but who for one hour will together receive authority as kings along with the Beast. ¹⁵They will have but one purpose and that is to give their power and authority to the Beast.”

The Beast and ten kings will wage war against the Lamb

¹⁶“They will wage war against the Lamb but the Lamb shall overcome them, for he is Lord of lords and King of kings. With him will be his called, chosen and faithful followers.”

The waters represent many nations

¹⁷Then the angel said to me, “The waters you saw where the Harlot sits, represent many peoples and nations.”

The ten kings and the Beast will bring the Harlot to ruin

¹⁸“The ten horns you saw, and the Beast, will hate the Harlot. They shall bring her to ruin and leave her naked. They will eat her flesh and burn her with fire. ¹⁹For God will put into their hearts to hand over their ruling power to the Beast, that God’s plan be accomplished and his word be fulfilled.”

The Harlot is the great city that rules over the kings of the earth

²⁰“The woman you saw is the great city that rules over the kings of the earth.”^{F*}

*10 See note on Revelation 10:9.

*11 Rome was originally built upon seven hills and was referred to as the city of seven hills by Roman writers.

*12 If the popular dating of Revelation at 95 AD is correct, ten Roman emperors (or kings) have fallen since Augustus first founded the empire rather than five. However five of these ten emperors did have short reigns, some of them merely a matter of months. All of the other five reigned nine years or longer.

*12 According to the popular dating of Revelation this would be Nerva, a Roman senator who ruled as an interim ruler from 96 to 98 AD.

*13 Believed by many to be the spirit of Nero who reigned as Roman emperor 54-68 AD (see note on Revelation 10:3). The angel does not say when the eighth king the Beast would reign. The next Roman emperor turned out to be Trajan, a popular and competent king who ruled from 98 to 117 AD and extended the Roman empire to its greatest extent. His reign in no way resembled the harsh world rule of the Beast.

*13 Perdition means everlasting spiritual ruin.

*20 The city of Rome.

14

The great Babylon has fallen

¹After this I saw another angel coming down from heaven. He had great authority and the earth was illuminated by his splendour.

²With a mighty voice he cried, “Fallen, fallen is the great Babylon. She has become a home for demons and a haunt for every unclean spirit and for every unclean and detestable bird. ³For all the nations have drunk the maddening wine of her fornication. The rulers of the earth committed adultery with her and the merchants of the earth grew rich from her excessive luxuries.”

Come out of her my people for her sins are piled up to heaven

⁴Then I heard another voice from heaven say, “Come out of her my people lest you share in her sins or any of her plagues. For her sins are heaped high as the heavens and God has remembered them.”

⁵“Pay her back two-fold for what she has done. Mix her a double portion from her own cup. ⁶Give her as much torture and grief, as the glory and luxury she gave herself.”

Babylon to be destroyed by plagues, famine and fire

⁷“In her heart she boasts, ‘I rule as a queen. I am not a widow and will never mourn.’ Therefore in one day her plagues will overtake her; death, mourning, and famine. ⁸She will be consumed by fire for mighty is the Lord God who judges her.”

The rulers of the earth will weep and mourn

⁹“When the rulers of the earth who committed adultery with her and shared her luxury see the smoke of her burning, they shall weep and mourn over her.”

¹⁰“They will stand afar off terrified at her torment and cry out, ‘Woe! Woe! O great city, O Babylon city of power. In one hour your doom has come.’”

The merchants of the earth shall weep and mourn

¹¹“The merchants of the earth shall weep and mourn over her, for no one buys their cargoes any more. ¹²Cargoes of gold, silver, precious stones and pearls, fine linen, purple, silk, and scarlet cloth. ¹³Every sort of rare timber and articles of ivory, fine wood, bronze, iron and marble. Cargoes of cinnamon, spice, incense, myrrh and frankincense. ¹⁴Wine, olive oil, fine flour and wheat. Cattle, sheep, horses and carriages, and slaves; human lives.”

¹⁵“They will say, ‘The fruit for which you longed for is gone from you. All your riches and splendour have vanished never to be recovered.’”

¹⁶“The merchants who sold these things

and gained their wealth from her will stand afar off, terrified at her torment and will weep and mourn and cry out, 'Woe! Woe! O great city, dressed in fine linen, purple and scarlet, glittering with gold, precious stones and pearls. In one hour your great wealth has been brought to ruin.'

Seamen will weep and mourn

17"Also every sea captain and all who travel by ship, the sailors and all who earn their living from the sea shall stand afar off.

18"When they see the smoke of her burning they will exclaim, 'Was there ever a city like this great city?'

19"They will throw dust on their heads and with weeping and mourning cry out, 'Woe! Woe! O great city, where all who had ships on the sea became rich through your wealth. In one hour you have been brought to ruin.'

The saints, apostles and prophets will rejoice

20"Rejoice over her O heaven. Rejoice saints and apostles and prophets. God has judged her for the way she treated you."

The great Babylon to be thrown down with violence

21"Then a mighty angel picked up a rock the size of a large millstone and threw it into the sea saying, "So shall the great city of Babylon be thrown down with violence never to be found again."

No more will be heard the sound of music, or workman or bride and groom

22"The music of harpists and musicians, flute players and trumpeters will never be heard in you again."

23"No workman of any trade shall ever be found in you again, nor will be heard the sound of a millstone, nor the voice of bridegroom and bride. 24The light of a lamp will never shine in you again."

The great Babylon led astray the nations and shed the blood of the saints and prophets

25"For your merchants were the lords of the earth, and by your sorcery all nations were led astray."

26"And in her was found the blood of prophets and of the saints and of all who have been slain on the earth."

15

Hallelujah sounded in heaven by a great multitude

1"After this I heard what sounded like the roar of a great multitude in heaven proclaiming, 'Hallelujah!F* Salvation and glory and power belong to our God, for true and just are his judgements.'

*1 Hallelujah is a Hebrew word meaning 'Glory to Yah.' Yah is a shortened version of the name or title of God, Yahweh, usually anglicised to Jehovah. It means 'Eternal.'

2"He has condemned the Great Harlot who corrupted the earth by her fornication. He has avenged on her the blood of his servants."

3"Again they proclaimed, "Hallelujah! The smoke from her goes up for ever and ever."

4"And the twenty-four elders and the four living creatures fell down and worshipped God who was seated on the throne. And they cried out, "Amen.F* Hallelujah!"



Rome, a traditional symbol of wealth, power and worldliness.

The wedding of the Lamb has come and the Bride is ready

5"Then came a voice from the throne saying, "Praise our God all you his servants and all who revere him, both small and great."

6"And I heard what sounded like the voice of a great multitude, like the roar of rushing waters and loud peals of thunder. The voices cried out, "Hallelujah! For our Lord God Almighty reigns. 7Let us rejoice and be glad and give him glory. For the wedding of the Lamb has come and his BrideF* has made herself ready, clothed in fine linen, bright and pure."

8The fine linen represents the righteous works of the saints.

Blessed are those who are invited to the wedding supper of the Lamb

9The angel said to me, "Write this, 'Blessed are those who are invited to the wedding supper of the Lamb.' Then he said, "These are the true words of God."

John forbidden to worship the angel of the Lord

10At this I fell at the angel's feet to worship him, but he said to me, "You must not do that. I am a fellow servant with you and with your brethren who hold to the testimony of Jesus. Worship God. 11For the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy."

Jesus returns to earth riding a white horse and clothed in a blood red robe

12Then I saw heaven standing open and a

*4 Amen is here used as a name (see note on Revelation 2:49).

*7 The city of New Jerusalem (Revelation 17:10).

REVELATION 16

white horse. He who sat upon it is called Faithful and True. ¹³With justice he judges and wages war. His eyes are like blazing fire and on his head are many crowns. ¹⁴A name is written on his forehead that no one knows but himself. ¹⁵He is clothed in a robe, dipped in blood^{F*} and his name is the Word of God.

¹⁶From his mouth comes a sharp sword with which to strike down the nations. He will rule them with an iron sceptre.

¹⁷He treads the winepress of the fury of the wrath of God Almighty. ¹⁸On his robe and on his thigh is written this name, King of kings and Lord of lords.

The armies of heaven follow Jesus, also riding white horses

¹⁹The armies of heaven followed him, riding on white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and pure.

The birds called to the great supper to eat the flesh of those who will fall at Armageddon

²⁰I saw an angel standing in the sun. He cried out in a loud voice to all the birds flying in mid-air saying, "Come gather together for the great supper of God, that you may eat the flesh of kings, captains and mighty men, of horses and their riders. ²¹And the flesh of all people, free and slave, small and great."

The kings of the earth gather their armies to wage war

²²Then I saw the Beast and the kings of the earth and their armies gathered together to wage war against the rider on the horse and his army.

The Beast and False Prophet captured and cast alive into the Lake of Fire

²³But the Beast was captured and with him the False Prophet who performed miracles in his presence. ²⁴With these miracles he had deceived those who had received the mark of the Beast and worshipped his image.

²⁵The two of them were cast alive into the fiery lake of burning sulphur.

The kings and their armies slain and the birds gorge on their flesh

²⁶The rest were slain by the sword that came out of the mouth of the rider on the horse, and all the birds gorged themselves on their flesh.^{F*}

Satan bound in the Pit for a thousand years

²⁷Then I saw an angel coming down out of heaven having the key to the Pit and holding in his hand a great chain. ²⁸He seized the Dragon, that ancient serpent who is the devil or Satan, and bound him for a thousand years.

²⁹He threw him into the Pit and locked and sealed it over him to keep him from deceiving the nations any more, until the thousand years are ended.^{F*}

*15 Isaiah also prophesied that the Lord would come clothed in red, blood-stained garments (Isaiah 11:3-4).

*26 For more details of this battle see Isaiah chapters 7-8, Daniel chapter 11 and Ezekiel chapter 13.

*29 This 1000 year period when Jesus Christ is to reign on earth (Isaiah 16:14-17, 22-23) is known as the Millennium.

³⁰After that he is to be set free for a short time.

16

The faithful spirits are resurrected and judged and reign with Christ on earth a thousand years

¹Then I saw thrones, on which were seated those who had been given authority to judge.^{F*}

²And I saw the spirits of those who had been beheaded because of their testimony of Jesus and of the word of God.

³They had not worshipped the Beast nor his image, and had not received his mark in their foreheads or their hands.

⁴They were resurrected^{F*} and reigned with Christ a thousand years.

⁵Blessed and holy are they who have part in the first resurrection. The Second Death^{F*} has no power over them. ⁶They shall be priests of God and of Christ and will reign with Christ for a thousand years.

The rest of the dead not resurrected until the thousand years are ended

⁷This is the first resurrection. The rest of the dead were not resurrected until the thousand years were ended.^{F*}

Satan will be released to again deceive the nations when the thousand years are over

⁸When the thousand years are over, Satan will be released from his prison and will again go out to deceive the nations in the four corners of the earth. ⁹As did Gog^{F*} of Magog, to gather them for battle.

The nations again gather to attack the Holy City

¹⁰I saw them, in number like the sand on the seashore. They marched across the breadth of the earth and surrounded the city of God's people, the city he loves.^{F*}

Fire comes down from heaven and devours them

¹¹But fire came down from heaven and devoured them. ¹²And the devil who deceived them was cast into the lake of burning sulphur where the Beast and the False Prophet were, and they will be in torment day and night for ever and ever.

*1 Jesus told his twelve apostles that when he returns they would sit on twelve thrones and judge the twelve tribes of Israel. This earlier judgement of the faithful is not the great day of judgement when the rest of mankind after being resurrected will stand before God (see verses 14-19 of this chapter).

*4 To be resurrected means that a person's spirit is reunited with the elements of their former decayed, physical body which has been raised back to life on earth as a new spiritual, but nevertheless tangible resurrected body, as was Jesus. (See also Isaiah 11:32, Ezekiel 12:1-10, Matt-Mark-Luke 35:40-49.)

*5 The Second Death is a symbolic term and means to be cut off forever from the presence of God (see Revelation 16:19 and note).

*7 ie The unrighteous, however all these dead will eventually be resurrected and judged in the final judgement (Acts 22:12, Revelation 16:14).

*9 Gog is the leader of the combined armies who will gather to attack Jerusalem prior to the coming of Christ (Ezekiel chapter 13, Revelation 15:22). He may also be the Beast spoken of in Revelation.

*10 The Millennial Jerusalem, probably the one described by the prophet Ezekiel (Ezekiel 17:20-25).

The final resurrection and day of judgement

¹³Then I saw a great white throne and he who sat upon it, from whose face earth and its heavens fled away, and there was no place found for them.

¹⁴The sea gave up the dead that were in it and the grave and Hades gave up their dead that were in them, and each person was judged according to what they had done. ¹⁵I saw the dead, great and small standing before the throne and books were opened.

The Book of Life

¹⁶And another book was opened which is the Book of Life.^{F*} ¹⁷The dead were judged according to what they had done as recorded in the books.

The Second Death

¹⁸Then death and Hades were cast into the Lake of Fire, which represents the Second Death.

¹⁹Anyone whose name was not found written in the Book of Life was cast into the Lake of Fire.^{F*}

17

New heavens and a new earth

¹Then I saw new heavens and a new earth, for the first heavens and the first earth had passed away, and there was no longer any sea.

God to dwell on earth among men

²And I heard a loud voice from the throne saying, “**Now the dwelling of God is among men and he will live with them. They shall be his people and he will be their God.**”

Every tear to be wiped from their eyes

³“**He will wipe away every tear from their eyes. And there shall be no more death, or mourning or weeping or pain. For the former things have passed away.**”

All things to be made new

⁴He who was seated on the throne said, “**Behold, I am making all things new.**” Also he said, “**Write this, for these words are trustworthy and true.**”

⁵Then he said, “**It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the Beginning and the End. ⁶To him who thirsts I will give to drink without cost from the fountain of the Water of Life.**”

⁷“**He who overcomes will inherit all and I will be his God and he will be my son.**”

Those who will inherit the Second Death

⁸“**But as for the cowardly, the unbelieving, the self-defiled, the murderers, the sexually**

immoral, the sorcerers, the idolaters and all liars, their place shall be in the fiery lake of burning sulphur. This is the Second Death.”^{F*}

New Jerusalem descends from heaven

⁹Then one of the seven angels, who had the seven bowls of last plagues said to me, “**Come, I will show you the Bride, the wife of the Lamb.**”

¹⁰And he carried me away in the spirit to a mountain great and high and showed me the Holy City, New Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God, prepared as a beautifully adorned bride for her husband.

Like a brilliant jewel clear as golden crystal

¹¹It shone with the glory of God and its brilliance was like that of a very precious jewel, clear as golden crystal.^{F*}

High crystalline walls with twelve gates, each a whole pearl

¹²It had a great high wall, with twelve gates and with twelve angels at the gates. ¹³On the gates were written the names of the twelve tribes of Israel.^{F*} There were three gates on each side; east, north, south and west.

¹⁴The wall of the city had twelve foundations and on them were written the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb.

¹⁵He measured the height of its wall. It was 144 cubits high^{F*} by man’s measure which the angel was using. ¹⁶The wall was made of golden crystal and the foundations were decorated with every kind of precious stone.

¹⁷The first foundation was golden crystal, the second sapphire, the third chalcedony, the fourth emerald, the fifth sardonyx, the sixth carnelian, the seventh chrysolite, the eighth beryl, the ninth topaz, the tenth chrysoprase, the eleventh jacinth and the twelfth amethyst.

¹⁸The twelve gates were twelve pearls, each gate a single pearl.

Both the length and breadth of the city 12,000 stadia

¹⁹The angel who spoke with me had a measuring rod of gold to measure the city and its gates and walls. ²⁰The city was laid out like a square, as long as it was wide.

²¹He measured the city with the rod. It was 12,000 stadia in length and width^{F*} and of uniform height.^{F*}

*8 Second Death, see note on Revelation 16:19.

*11 ‘Golden crystal,’ literally ‘jasper,’ an obscure Greek word, traditionally translated as ‘jasper,’ (also verse 16 of this chapter), however jasper is a type of crystal quartz that is opaque, whereas John appears to have seen a transparent, golden-hued substance, for he describes the city in verse 22 of this chapter as being made of ‘pure gold, like transparent glass.’

*13 Israelites will not be the only people to enter the city, Paul speaks of the Gentiles being grafted into the mother tree of Israel, see Romans 5:17.

*15 About 65 metres.

*21 About 2200 kms long and wide and over 4,800,000 square kilometres, or approx 2/3rds the size of the United States of America excluding Alaska.

*21 Because John describes the city as being of uniform, or equal height some Bible interpreters have imagined the city to be a cube, ie 2200 kms high. However this would appear to be extremely unlikely as the walls are only 65metres in height and

*16 More correctly, the Book of Eternal Life.

*19 The Lake of Fire symbolises the torment of the Second Death (Revelation 17:8), which is to be cut off forever from the presence of God as we now are temporarily. This should not be interpreted as literal fire. God is loving and just, not a sadist. Jesus used *Gehenna* (or Hell) the ever burning rubbish dump of Jerusalem as a similar symbol. Sinners and unbelievers who suffer the Second Death will be resurrected and live on the new earth (Revelation 17:27, 18:11) but they will be forever denied Eternal Life which means entry into and living within the beautiful and holy city of New Jerusalem (see following chapters 17 and 18) where God the Father and Jesus Christ and the righteous dwell in shining glory (Daniel 11:12-13, Matt-Mark-Luke 14:39,17:24, John 15:29). They will however enjoy varying, lesser degrees of glory (1 Corinthians 8:24, Hebrews 4:27).



An artist's impression of the New Jerusalem.

City and streets like transparent gold

²²The city and streets are pure gold, like transparent glass.^{F*}

The glory of God and the Lamb its light

²³I saw no temple in the city, for the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are its temple. ²⁴Nor does the city need the sun or the moon to shine on it, for the glory of God gives it light and the Lamb is its lamp.

²⁵The gates will never be shut by day, and there shall be no night there.

Only those whose names are written in the Book of Life will enter the city

²⁶The nations will walk by its light and the kings of the earth shall bring their splendour into it; the glory and honour of the nations.

²⁷But nothing unclean will ever enter the city, nor will anyone who does what is shameful or deceitful. Only those whose names are written in the Lamb's Book of Life shall enter.

The river of the Water of Life

²⁸Then the angel showed me the river of the Water of Life, bright as crystal flowing from the throne of God and of the Lamb down the centre of the great main street of the city.

The Tree of Life

²⁹Along both sides of the river grew the Tree of Life, bearing twelve kinds of fruit, yielding fruit every month.^{F*} And the leaves are for the healing of the nations.

All in the city will see the face of God

³⁰Nothing accursed will be found there. The throne of God and of the Lamb will be in the city and God's servants shall worship him.

³¹They shall see his face and his name will be on their foreheads.

John describes them as 'great and high.' Also John saw a main street in which water flowed and trees grew (verses 28-29 of this chapter). Uniform or equal height in the context used would more likely mean the buildings were all of a similar height.

*²² The Lord also spoke of this beautiful city through the prophet Isaiah (Isaiah 16:22).

*²⁹ The rebuilt Jerusalem of the Millennium, although tiny by comparison has similarities to the New Jerusalem such as trees which bear fruit monthly growing either side of a river flowing out from under the temple (see Ezekiel chapter 17).

³²And there will be no more night, they shall not need the light of a lamp nor of the sun for the Lord God will give them light. And God and the Lamb shall reign for ever and ever.

18

These words are trustworthy and true

¹The angel said to me, "These words are trustworthy and true. The Lord who is the God of the spirits of the prophets sent his angel to show his servants the things that must soon take place."

²"He says, 'Behold, I am coming soon. Blessed is he who believes in the words of prophecy in this book.'"

John forbidden to worship the angel

³John am the one who heard and saw these things. ⁴After I had seen and heard them I fell down to worship at the feet of the angel who had been showing them to me.

⁵But he said to me, "You must not do that. I am a fellow servant with you and with your brethren the prophets and of all who keep the words of this book. Worship God."

The time draws near

⁶Then he said to me, "Do not seal up the words of the prophecy of this book for the time draws near. ⁷Let him who does evil and is filthy, continue to do evil and be filthy. Let him who does right and is holy, continue to be righteous and holy."

Jesus is coming soon and shall repay everyone according to their works

⁸"Behold, I am coming soon.^{F*} My reward comes with me and I shall repay everyone according to their works. ⁹I am Alpha and Omega, the First and the Last, the Beginning and the End."

*⁸ The angel is again speaking on behalf of Jesus Christ, as he did when he first appeared to John (Revelation 1:16).

**They who keep the commandments
will enter the New Jerusalem**

¹⁰“Blessed are they who keep the commandments, that they may partake of the Tree of Life and enter through the gates into the city.”

Those who now sin to live outside the city

¹¹“Outside are the dogs;^{F*} sorcerers,^{F*} fornicators, murderers, idolaters and everyone who loves and practices falsehood.”

Jesus the bright Morning Star

¹²“I Jesus have sent my angel to give you this testimony for the churches. ¹³I am the Root and the offspring of David and the bright Morning Star.”

**Come and take the free gift
of the Water of Life**

¹⁴The Spirit and the Bride say, “Come.” And let him who hears say, “Come.” ¹⁵Whoever is

thirsty let him come and take the free gift of the Water of Life.

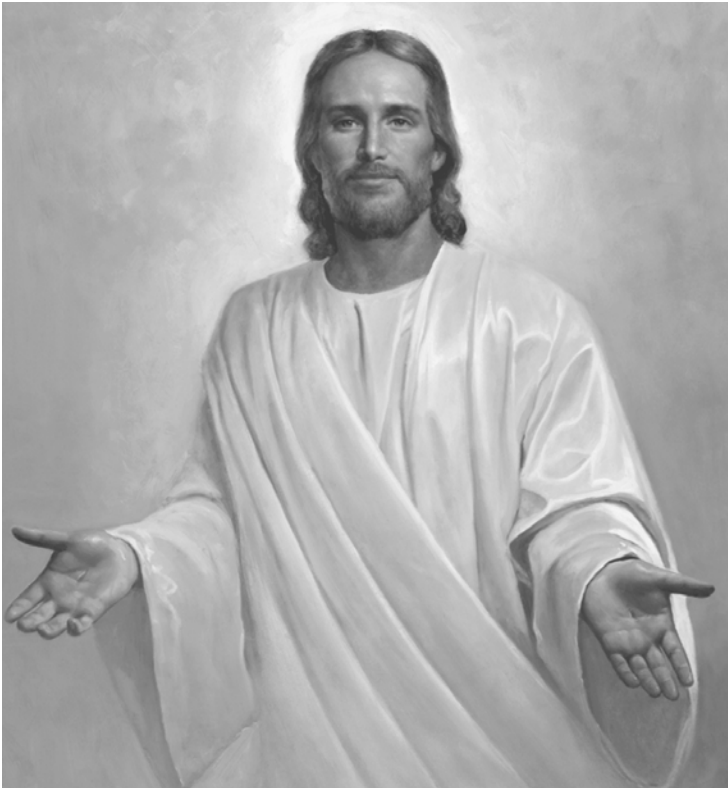
**Do not add or take away from this
book of Revelation**

¹⁶I warn everyone who hears the words of the prophecy of this book. If anyone adds to them, God will add to him the plagues described in this book. ¹⁷And if anyone takes away from them, God will take away from him his share in the Tree of Life and in the Holy City which are described in this book.^{F*}

Jesus to come soon

¹⁸He who testifies to these things says, “Yes, I am coming soon.”

¹⁹Amen! Come Lord Jesus and the grace of the Lord Jesus be with God’s people. Amen.



Jesus welcoming the faithful. Painting by Del Parson.

*11 A dog is an Old Testament term for a male prostitute, however in this instance it appears to mean all those who practice the evils listed in the rest of this verse.

*11 Sorcerers are those who obtain power from evil occult forces.

*17 John’s warning applies to this book of Revelation, not to the whole Bible, which was not finally compiled into one book until 397 AD, over 400 years after the book of Revelation was written. Moses wrote a similar warning in the book of Deuteronomy (Deuteronomy.6:13) The book of Revelation has not been condensed for it is already a highly condensed account of what John saw and heard.